

*Also by Variorum:*

**CHRISTOPHER WALTER**  
Art and Ritual of the Byzantine Church

*In the Collected Studies Series:*

**CYRIL MANGO**  
Studies on Constantinople

**CYRIL MANGO**  
Byzantium and Its Image

**ANTHONY CUTLER**  
Imagery and Ideology in Byzantine Art

**JULIAN GARDNER**  
Patrons, Painters and Saints in Medieval Italian Painting

**ALEXANDER KAZHDAN**  
Authors and Texts in Byzantium

**ROBIN CORMACK**  
The Byzantine Eye: Studies in Art and Patronage

**CLIVE FOSS**

History and Archaeology of Byzantine Asia Minor

**JOSEPH GUTTMANN**

Sacred Images: Studies in Jewish Art from Antiquity to the Middle Ages

**MACHIEL KIEL**

Studies on the Ottoman Architecture of the Balkans

**NICOLAS OIKONOMIDES**

Byzantium from the Ninth Century to the Fourth Crusade

**ANGELIKE LAIOU**

Gender, Society and Economic Life in Byzantium

**PAUL MAGDALINO**

Tradition and Transformation in Medieval Byzantium

**ROBERT S. LOPEZ**

Byzantium and the World Around It

**ROBERT BROWNING**

History, Language and Literacy in the Byzantine World

Prayer and Power  
in Byzantine and Papal Imagery

Christopher Walter

---

Prayer and Power  
in Byzantine and Papal Imagery

---



Dr Christopher Walter



VARIORUM

This edition copyright © 1993 by Christopher Walter.

Published by VARIORUM

Asgate Publishing Limited

i

Gower House, Croft Road,

ii

Aldershot, Hampshire GU11 3HR

iii

Great Britain

Asgate Publishing Company  
Old Post Road,  
Brookfield, Vermont 05036  
USA

## CONTENTS

### Preface

vii-xi

- I Expressionism and Hellenism. A note on stylistic tendencies in Byzantine figurative art from *Späaniike* to the Macedonian "Renaissance"  
*Revue des Etudes byzantines* 42. Paris, 1984

265-287

- II Portraits of local bishops: a note on their significance  
*Zbornik radova Vizantološkog instituta* 21. Belgrade, 1982

1-17

- III Three notes on the iconography of Dionysius the Areopagite  
*Revue des Études byzantines* 48. Paris, 1990

255-274

- IV The iconographical sources for the coronation of Milutin and Simonaia at Gračanica  
*L'art byzantin au début du XIV<sup>e</sup> siècle*. Belgrade, 1978

183-200

- V The *Dextrarum junctio* of Lepcis Magna in relation to the iconography of marriage  
*Hommages à Jean Lassus, Antiquités africaines* 14. Aix-en-Provence, 1979

271-283

- VI Marriage crowns in Byzantine iconography  
*Zograf, Spomenica Svetozara Radičevića* 10. (pp. 83-91) Belgrade, 1979

1-17

- VIIa Papal political imagery in the medieval Lateran palace  
*Cahiers archéologiques* 20. Paris, 1970

155-176

- VIIb Papal political imagery in the medieval Lateran palace  
*Cahiers archéologiques* 21. Paris, 1971

109-136

- VIII Le souvenir du II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée dans l'iconographie byzantine  
*Nicée II 787-1987, Douze siècles d'images religieuses*. Paris, 1987

167-182

### COLLECTED STUDIES SERIES CS396

British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data  
Walter, Christopher  
Prayer and Power in Byzantine and Papal Imagery.  
— (Variorun Collected Studies Series; CS 396)  
I. Title II. Series  
949.5

This Variorun edition is printed on acid-free paper.

Printed by Galliard (Printers) Ltd  
Great Yarmouth, Norfolk  
Great Britain

- IX Christological themes in the Byzantine marginal Psalters from the ninth to the eleventh century  
*Revue des Études byzantines* 44. Paris, 1986  
269–287
- X “Latter-day” saints and the image of Christ in ninth-century marginal Psalters  
*Revue des Études byzantines* 45. Paris, 1987  
205–222
- XI “Latter-day” saints in the model for the London and Barberini Psalters  
*Revue des Études byzantines* 46. Paris, 1988  
211–228
- XII The aristocratic Psalters and their illustration in Byzantium  
*Byzantinoslavica* 51. Prague, 1990  
43–52
- Index of Manuscripts  
1–2
- General Index  
3–5

This volume contains xii + 307 pages

## PREFACE

In 1977, Variorum paid me the compliment of publishing my *Studies in Byzantine Iconography* in their Collected Studies series. This volume has long been out of print. The articles collected here cover a longer period, from 1970 to 1990. They are not presented chronologically but in relation to the research projects which were the occasion of writing them. Although there is inevitably some overlap, they can be divided roughly into three groups.

The first three articles are excursions connected with my book *Art and Ritual of the Byzantine Church* (Variorum 1982). This study received a warm welcome in Eastern Europe. It has been republished in a Polish translation, and I am told that a translation into another Slav language circulates as a *samizdat!* Reactions in the West were more reticent. For example Thomas Mathews reviewed it very unfavourably in *The Art Bulletin* (March 1984).

The first article on ‘Expressionism and Hellenism’ develops a theme which could be mentioned only briefly in the book: that traditional methods used in the study of art history – assuming the validity of a stylistic continuum as well as the transcendental value of Hellenism – distort our appreciation of Byzantine art. Development can be traced more plausibly in terms of the function of the artefacts and the message which they were destined to communicate.

In the second article I was concerned with the function of portraits of local bishops. In spite of the frequent disputes over authority in the Early Church, pictures were not used at first to propagate local claims to autonomy. Local bishops were represented in sanctuaries rather than in cathedrals. The situation changed in the ninth century. There is a striking difference between pope Leo III’s presentation of the Petrine claim to universal jurisdiction in the *triclinia* which he built at St John Lateran and the implicit notion of collegiality in the echelon of bishops in St Sophia, Constantinople. In later Byzantine tradition, the claims of local bishops were promulgated by integrating their portraits into programmes in which the established Fathers of the Church already had a place. In passing, I should mention that Robert Markus pointed out to me in a private letter that I was wrong to claim St Vitalis as a local martyr of Ravenna. It must be said that his early history is somewhat confused (G. Lucchesi, ‘Vitale, Valeria ed Ursicino’, *Bibliotheca sanctorum* 12, 1229–1231).

Biographical scenes of Dionysius the Areopagite, the subject of the third article, were somehow omitted from *Art and Ritual of the Byzantine Church*. I attempt here to explain the enigmatic miniature of Dionysius observing the Crucifixion in the Chludov Psalter, to identify from their portrait types the bishops reputed to have been present with Dionysius at the demise of the Virgin Mary, and to trace the passage of the *kephalophoros* saint from West to East. The prodigy of Dionysius walking two *milia*, carrying his severed head, originated in the West but

was first represented in Byzantine art. *Céphalophoros* would receive quite different connotations in East and West, a subject which I am investigating further.

The next five articles form part of series of studies of imperial or official iconography which I have never attempted to put together to form a book. Some such articles were republished in my earlier volume of collected studies (see the list in a note at the beginning of article VI of this volume). Since the appearance of article IV in 1978, a number of pictures of coronation have been published in more detail: Milutin and Simona themselves at Gračanica by B. Todić, *Gračanica slikarstvo* (Belgrade no date); the despot Stefan at Ljubostinja, S. Djuric, *Ljubostinja* (Belgrade 1985), and the frontispiece to the Barberini Psalter (see below). To these should be added the recently discovered fresco of Stefan Dušan at Pološka, Macedonia, C. Grozdanov & D. Čornakov, 'Istoriski portret u Poloskom', *Zograf* 14 (1981), 60–67; 15 (1984), 85–93.

In connection with the articles on the iconography of marriage, Gary Vikan's 'Art, Medicine and Magic in Early Byzantium', *Dumbarton Oaks Papers* 38 (1984), 65–86; 'Art and Marriage in Early Byzantium', *Ibidem* 44 (1990), 145–163.

My study of papal political imagery (VIIa,b) was undertaken on the suggestion of the late Andrej Grabar. Recently Vojislav Đurić has republished, with Pavle Ivić and Sina Čirković, the Ephigmenou charter of the Despot Djuradi, *Efigmena pobjeda despota Djurdia* (Belgrade 1989). I have also fulfilled a promise to consider in more detail the lost picture of the coronation of Lotharius III at St John Lateran in a paper given at the symposium, *Byzantium and Its Neighbours* from the Mid-9th till the 12th Centuries, held at Bechyně, Czechoslovakia, in September 1990 (printing).

Other recent studies of this subject are an article by Ingo Herklotz, 'Die Betrachtungsreihe Calixtus' II. im Lateranpalast und ihre Fresken, *Kunst und Propaganda am Ende des Investiturstreits*, *Ztschrift für Kunstgeschichte* 52 (1989, P. 145–214, and a book by Mary Stroll, *Symbols as Power. The Papacy following the Investiture Contest* (Leiden 1991).

The remaining articles are connected, directly or indirectly, with the preparation of an edition of the Barberini Psalter, the last of the great Byzantine marginal psalters to have remained unpublished. The project upon which I began work in 1983 was finally brought to fruition, with the help of P. Canart and J. Anderson, in 1989, *The Barberini Psalter, Codex vaticanus barberiniensis græcus 372* (Belsiger Verlag Zürich). Articles IX, X and XI are primarily concerned with Christological and hagiographical themes in the marginal psalters. In attempting to identify their literary counterparts, I had inevitably to consider the question of development. This development is fairly clear for the Christological themes, whose literary counterparts range from the New Testament through the Patristic commentators up to eighth-century writers. However I also detected changes in the conception of the Psalter, notably that from being regarded primarily as a compendium of prophecies it was considered in the eleventh century rather as the just man's book of prayer.

I also succumbed to the temptation – despite Anthony Cutler's warning in a memorable phrase that, in so doing, I would be "attempting to resolve insoluble

questions with unverifiable answers" – of speculating about lost models. I was already toying with the hypothesis that the ninth-century marginal psalters derive from an eighth-century model executed in Palestine, when F. Boeselburg invited me to contribute a paper to a volume commemorating the twelfth centenary of the second council of Nicaea (article VIII). I argue here that there is little evidence for the second council of Nicaea exercising a direct impact on image-making at the time – and probably none on the ninth-century marginal psalters. I also availed myself of the opportunity of updating what I had written earlier on the iconography of councils: *Iconographie des conciles dans la tradition byzantine* (Paris 1970) and 'Konzilien', *Reallexikon zur byzantinischen Kunst* (Stuttgart 1990 but actually written in 1978). A further article on post-Byzantine icons of councils is due to appear in the *Deltion ius christianikis archaiologikis etarneias*, volume 16.

Finally article XII, written at the request of V. Vavřínek, attempts to make some sense of Ode illustration which is, with rare exceptions, at once so heterogeneous and so banal. The general rule was to choose either an author portrait or an iconographical theme deeply rooted in Early Christian art. Some of the more intriguing miniatures, concerned with the prophet Habakkuk, are treated in my article 'The Iconography of the Prophet Habakkuk', *Revue des études byzantines* 47 (1989), 251–260. Since a number of the Odes are attributed to prophets, John Lowden's *The Illuminated Prophet Books* (Pennsylvania State University 1968) is relevant to the subject, notably for what he has to say about Ulpius the Roman, Habakkuk and Isaiah.

I should like to finish this preface with some remarks about approach and methodology. Scholars began to study Byzantine art scientifically in the nineteenth century. To my mind the soundest approach was that of the Russians. It has been recently contrasted lucidly by J.-M. Spieser with Western approaches in a paper entitled 'Hellénisme et connaissance de l'art byzantin au XIX<sup>e</sup> siècle', *ΕΛΛΗΝΙΣΜΟΣ. Quelques jalons pour une histoire de l'identité grecque*, edited S. Said (Strasbourg 1989), p. 337–362. I quote from his article a passage which he himself quotes (p. 360) from a translation from the Russian which was published in the *Revue archéologique* in 1850:

Dans l'iconographie byzantine, l'art ne sert pas de but, mais de moyen: il est soumis à la vérité et à la tradition, de même que l'idée artistique est soumise à l'idée religieuse... Si les images saintes, quant à leur valeur esthétique, ne correspondent pas toujours aux règles de l'art, c'est que leur but unique est de rendre fidèlement l'idée religieuse...

This approach, shared by later Russian scholars such as D.V. Anan'ev and rendered familiar in the West by A. Grabar, has not always been understood by those art historians who accept the transcendental value of Hellenism. Spieser quotes another nineteenth-century scholar, L. Vitet, to the effect that "des nations de rythme, de mesure, d'équilibre, d'intelligente imitation, qui sont l'essence même de l'art grec" were maintained in the Athonite monasteries "comme (dans) une autre arche de Noé" (p. 353). However, even in our time, some art historians are satisfied with an approach which looks on Byzantine art as a subspecies of that of the Renaissance.

Others, who have escaped from the ivory tower but who are not particularly sympathetic towards the Russian approach, seek inspiration in sociology, a procedure which offers interesting insights but which runs the risk of ceasing to be art history at all.

There are no doubt connections between approaches and methodology in the study of Byzantine art. However it is not my intention to explore them here, only to note that Byzantine art historians often show remarkable versatility in their search for methodologies. I suspect that they are motivated, at least in part, by the disproportion between the relatively small quantity of artefacts which have survived and the vast number which are lost for ever. In consequence they are haunted – not to say obsessed – by the following dilemma: to attempt to reconstruct what is lost and so risk producing unverifiable answers to insoluble questions or to ignore entirely what is lost and so risk falsifying their presentation of what does still exist.

The elaboration of methodologies is based on analogy. There is nothing spectacular about this, for the same procedure is used in theology, philosophy, physics and, no doubt, other sciences. However it is necessary to be circumspect and to recognize that, at a certain point, all analogies break down.

One methodology which has proved fruitful is to apply to the transmission of subjects in manuscript illumination the principles of textual criticism. Some years ago, I attempted a critique of this method, 'Liturgy and the Illustration of Gregory of Nazianus's Homilies', *Revue des études byzantines* 29 (1971), pp. 183–212 (reprinted in *Studies in Byzantine Iconography*). The analogy broke down, I argued, because, unlike texts, series of miniatures are rarely, if ever, transmitted *en bloc* from a primordial archetype. Furthermore the use of this method may lead to greater importance being given to what no longer exists – if it ever did – than to those manuscripts which do exist and are available to us.

It has been hinted to me that, in my articles on the marginal psalters (IX, X, XI), I have come back on my earlier position by paying too much attention to lost models. I have, in fact, postulated two lost models, one an eighth-century marginal psalter illuminated in Palestine and the other an eleventh-century marginal psalter which would have been available in the monastery of Saint John Studius for the illuminators of the London and the Barberini Psalters.

The two cases are rather different, even if my motivation in postulating the two models is the same: to explain how the miniature cycles developed in the extant illuminated psalters.

The three surviving ninth-century psalters are related but not interdependent. It is obviously most implausible to treat them as autochthonous productions of their century for several strata can be discerned in the choice of their miniature subjects. One of these is the subjacent Iconophile theology which has its counterpart in the writings of eighth-century Palestinians. Other earlier strata correspond to Psalm interpretation by earlier writers. Consequently, by analogy with developments in Psalm commentary, a hypothesis of development in the illustrative programme may be formulated. This would have occurred by accretion, as in the Psalm commentaries. I do not postulate a pre-Iconoclast archetype. On the other hand I would suggest that in the late eighth century, the illustrative programme was recast, in

order to give it an explicitly Iconophile slant. This marginal psalter would have been the model for the three extant ninth-century psalters.

As for the lost eleventh-century illuminated psalter which I postulate – and not I alone – everything depends on the dating of the Barberini Psalter. Most of those who have studied it have placed it later than the London Psalter. Nothing certain can be deduced from the portraits in the frontispiece. Consequently the psalter's miniatures have to be dated by their style. J. Anderson sets out the arguments lucidly in our joint edition of the *Psalter* (see above). If his arguments in favour of a late eleventh-century date are probative, then a lost psalter, painted before the London Psalter, has to be postulated, in order to explain the relationship between the ninth- and the eleventh-century illuminated psalters. If it could be proved that the Barberini Psalter was painted earlier than the London Psalter, then, of course, the whole situation would change: the model would disappear and be replaced by the Barberini Psalter! In practice the psalter which I describe in article XI is the Barberini Psalter, for it would in any case have been a faithful copy of the lost model.

It remains to thank Variorium for accepting this volume in their series of Collected Studies, and more particularly John Smedley for the diligent work that he has put into its production.

CHRISTOPHER WALTER

Athens  
*Ascension Day, 1992*

## PUBLISHER'S NOTE

The articles in this volume, as in all others in the Collected Studies Series, have not been given a new, continuous pagination. In order to avoid confusion, and to facilitate their use where these same studies have been referred to elsewhere, the original pagination has been maintained wherever possible.

Each article has been given a Roman number in order of appearance, as listed in the Contents. This number is repeated on each page and quoted in the index entries.

## EXPRESSIONISM AND HELLENISM

A Note on Stylistic Tendencies in Byzantine Figurative Art from Spätantike to the Macedonian "Renaissance"

The specific qualities of Byzantine art are described by scholars in widely differing, even contradictory, terms. For some it is 'the last of the great hieratic arts of Antiquity' in which 'the immobility is more apparent than changes and developments'<sup>1</sup>. It is restrained by an 'ever-present law', which 'forbids rhetoric and lends to the artistic language the stately grandeur of a liturgy'<sup>2</sup>. For others, its 'life-giving activating force is its Greek heritage'<sup>3</sup>. Although it deviates from the ideals of classical art, it forever returns to them, such that it is possible to 'speak of a perpetual renaissance or of perennial Hellenism'. Some of those who are impressed by the stately grandeur of Byzantine art maintain that it belongs to the aesthetic category of the sublime, inspiring awe and wonder<sup>5</sup>. Most of those who stress the importance of its Greek heritage

1. June & D. WINFIELD, *Proportion and Structure of the Human Figure in Byzantine Wall-Painting and Mosaic*, Oxford 1982, p. 1.
2. O. M. DALTON, *Byzantine Art and Archaeology*, London 1911, p. 33-35.
3. O. DEMUS, *Byzantine Art and the West*, London 1970, p. 7-9.
4. *Ibid.*, p. 3; E. KITZINGER, The Hellenistic Heritage in Byzantine Art, *DOP* 17, 1963, p. 95-115; *Idem*, The Hellenistic Heritage in Byzantine Art Reconsidered, *XVI. Internationaler Byzantinistenkongress, Aken* II/2 (= *JOB* 31/2, 1981), p. 657-675. In his earlier article, Kitzinger is more *naïf*: Byzantium's own aesthetic ideal was polarized by two powerful magnets, the medieval and the essentially classical (p. 115).
5. P. A. MICHELIS, *Αλογηνη Ορθόδοξη τῆς Βυζαντίνης τέχνης*, second edition, Athens 1974.

maintain, at least implicitly, that when it remains faithful to classical ideals, it belongs to the category of the beautiful, inspiring delight. Advocates of these two contrasted approaches may exemplify their appreciation from the same monument. Thus Micheliis, for whom all Byzantine art was sublime, chose the Pantocrator at Daphni to typify this aesthetic category<sup>6</sup>, while, for Demus, the Christ of the Transfiguration in the same church is particularly redolent of Hellenism.<sup>7</sup>

These differing approaches continue to inform art historians in their interpretation of their subject, as may be seen in two recently published studies reviewed in these pages. Maguire, far from supposing that Byzantine artists eschewed rhetoric, maintains that they were consciously or unconsciously influenced by it, assimilating its techniques from the literary texts, composed according to its rules, which were the iconographical source of their compositions.<sup>8</sup> He attributes particular importance to *eçphrasis*, which 'can truly be described as a hidden long-lasting spring of Hellenism in Byzantine art'. Winfield, on the other hand, bases his study of human proportion on the 'immobility' and 'ever-present law', which are for him characteristic of Byzantine art.<sup>9</sup>

Such differing assessments are obviously, to some extent, tributary of the aesthetic taste and sensibility of those who make them. However, the discipline of art history is necessarily based upon aesthetic principles, which serve, often, as criteria in deciding what works are worthy of serious study. It is not so long since Byzantine art was considered by some to be barbarous or decadent.<sup>10</sup> While recognition that much Byzantine art may be considered to belong to an 'alternative convention' has helped to promote its study, it seems more fashionable to-day to concentrate rather on the survival and renewal of its Hellenic qualities. The former view may claim some support in literary texts which describe the φόνος experienced by the beholder of some works of art: the Last Judgment and scenes of martyrdom.<sup>11</sup> However the vast majority of Byzantine descriptions of works of art insist on their conformity to the classical canon: imitation

of nature, liveliness, beauty.<sup>12</sup> Yet it may be objected that these descriptions are conventional literary exercises, couched in language destined to conceal rather than manifest the writer's sentiments.

The present article is inspired by the conviction that neither way of describing the specific qualities of Byzantine art is satisfactory. A serious obstacle to a proper appreciation of them has always been the practice of applying to Byzantine art notions and conceptions taken from the study of art of other periods. Thus the notion of an 'alternative convention' is taken from the study of art produced at a time of rupture with the classical canon: *Spätsantike*, Mannerism, Baroque or even latter-day Expressionism.<sup>14</sup> Indeed, some art historians consider Byzantine art in the period before Iconoclasm to be a continuation of *Spätsantike*.<sup>15</sup> On the other hand, those who are sensitive to the Hellenic qualities of Byzantine art concentrate upon periods where classical revival is more evident, notably upon the ninth and tenth centuries. If this period is conceived as a renaissance, then it is difficult to avoid interpreting its art in terms which have proved fruitful in studying the art of the Italian Renaissance.

In the course of this article, an attempt will be made to re-assess the debt of early Byzantine art to *Spätsantike*, followed by a re-examination of the specific qualities of the classical revival after the Triumph of Orthodoxy. However, since its primary aim is to provide a critique of the conceptual framework and theoretical approaches currently used in Byzantine art history, it is necessary to begin by making some observations about the language and methodology associated with them. In the conclusion, another version will be proposed of the specific qualities of Byzantine art. It needs, of course, to be controlled and verified, with particular reference to the art produced from the eleventh century onwards. This control and verification lie outside the scope of the present article.

## 1. CONCEPTUAL FRAMEWORK AND THEORETICAL APPROACH

The following observations are concerned with *figurative* works of art. Such works are ambivalent. Since they have a subject, they are significant. The Dormition is readily distinguishable from the Rescue of Andromeda, although

attributed to Longinus, G. FAGGIN, Sublime, *Encyclopédia philosophica* IV, 1031-1034. With the possible exception of ξερῆταις, see below p. 287, note 113, it is unlikely that these words, any more than φόνος or φόβος, were used by the Byzantines in an aesthetic sense.

13. MANGO, *op. cit.* (note 12), XV-XV.

14. R. BIANCHI BANDINELLI, Expressionismo, *Encyclopédia dell'arte antica* III, 460-461. The term is a neologism used by a group of late nineteenth-century German artists to characterize their rupture with conventional academic art.

15. R. BIANCHI BANDINELLI, Spätsantike, *ibid.* VII, 428.

6. P. A. MICHELIIS, *Esthétique de l'art byzantin*, Paris 1959, p. 11.
7. DEMUS, *op. cit.* (note 3), p. 7-9; see also KIRZINGER, *art. cit.* (note 4), p. 661.
8. H. MAGUIRE, *Art and Eloquence in Byzantium*, Princeton 1981; see below, p. 344.
9. *Ibid.*, p. 52.
10. WINFIELD, *op. cit.* (note 1); see below, p. 350.
11. MICHELIIS, *op. cit.* (note 5), p. 19.
12. DOROTHEE DE GAZA, *Vie de Dostosée*, edited L. RÉGNAULT & J. DE PRÉVILLE (Sources chrétiennes 92), Paris 1963, p. 126, ἐκτριγράψευσ (amazed, astonished) by a picture of hell; Wanda Wolska-Contyns, Un programme iconographique du patriarche Tarasios 2, *REB* 38, 1980, p. 247-254, for a plethora of emotions experienced in beholding pictures of martyrdom (which may be summed up as compunction); THEOPHANES CONTINUATUS IV, 15, Bonn, p. 164 (= C. MANGO, *The Art of the Byzantine Empire 312-1453*, Englewood Cliffs, N.J., 1972, p. 190-191), φόβος, ἐκτριγέζεις (fear, amazement) inspired by a picture of the Last Judgment. In passing it should be noted that the modern use of the term *sublime* derives from eighteenth-century interpretations of the treatise

sometimes a title may be necessary to confirm an identification. Figurative works of art also re-create the physical world, and it is this aspect which has generally interested art historians. It is also the aspect which tends to dominate in works produced according to the classical canon. Re-creation of the physical world in a work of art has two aspects. Firstly, there is the aspect of scientific exploration of physical space, which has no necessary connection with artistic production: optics, the analysis of light and colour, anatomy. Secondly, there is the aspect of technical exploration, which is specific to artistic production: perspective, composition, the plastic rendering of the human figure. Sometimes these two kinds of exploration are undertaken concurrently, such that the scientific influences the technical. For example, investigation of optics and anatomy in the Quattrocento and the Cinquecento influenced the technical development of linear and tonal perspective as well as of plastic rendering of the human body. At other times, technical exploration is undertaken independently of scientific exploration. Such art tends to be 'academic'. Its practitioners may continue to observe the physical world, or they may concentrate on imitating renderings of it in works produced by their predecessors. Either way they are resistant to developments in technique deriving from advances in scientific exploration. For example, Impressionist works exploiting new analyses of light and colour were rejected by nineteenth-century academic artists.

The various technical means used by artists to re-create the physical world — light, colours, perspective, plasticity, composition — predominate in descriptions of their individual style. Art historians who study figurative works as re-creations of the physical world focus upon the concept of style. They may consider style to be *autonomous*, such that the history of art may be plotted in terms of influences, developments and reactions. This approach is fruitful in periods when artists were directly interested in scientific or technical exploration. However, it encounters difficulties when artistic production consists mainly in copying or adapting existing works.

The vast majority of figurative works of art, even of those produced in periods when the classical canon prevailed, were not intended primarily to be re-creations of the physical world but to be significant. In many such works — most obviously representations on coins or medals — re-creation of the physical world is reduced to the minimum necessary to make them significative. Such works tend — or tended — to be excluded from the repertoire of the art historian, because they do not enter into the category of the 'fine arts'. When art history became a serious discipline, the repertoire of the fine arts was somewhat restricted, for Winckelmann's view was still dominant that the art of fifth- and fourth-century Greece was the paragon of absolute beauty, and that all subsequent art was decadent<sup>16</sup>. The repertory has been widened, not only by art historians

who were tolerant of alternative conventions but also by those who have been influenced by subversive forces operating outside the strict discipline of art history: Marxists, focussing attention on the social and economic factors which determine art production; Freudians, disciples of de Saussure and ultimately semiologists focussing attention on significance. Nevertheless, in spite of the amount of studies devoted to iconography, it seems that in the field of Byzantine art history the focal point is still style. The traditional conceptual framework and theoretical approach are maintained.

Style, of course, may itself be significative. Works respecting the classical canon may presuppose a Humanist ideology, according to which man is at the centre of the universe and potentially capable of mastering it. However, its significative value may become formal when artists challenge the classical canon. This point will require further development when the debt of early Byzantine art to *Spätantike* is discussed. Provisionally it may be illustrated by reference to Mannerist and Baroque art. Its creators used the results of scientific exploration undertaken during the Renaissance, but technically they exploited them in order to signify the existence of a non-spatial mode of being. They abandoned the harmony and proportion of perfectly formed self-sufficient human beings in favour of others, strained and contorted, striving towards this non-spatial existence. They moved the vanishing point outside the perspectives of man's physical surroundings, so that, for example, in Pozzi's ceiling in the church of Sant'Ignazio, Rome, an illusion is created of the building being open to the heavens above.

These brief observations may be helpful in the discussion which is to follow. If art history is to be focussed upon the concept of style, it is necessary to ask, nevertheless, how its constituent elements were assembled. Did the artist use the results of scientific as well as technical exploration of space? Did he look at nature or work from models? Was style for him formally significative? What balance did he attempt to strike in his work between a re-creation of physical space and the transmission of a message?

## 2. THE ART OF *Spätantike* AND OF THE EARLY BYZANTINE PERIOD

In the third century, there was a stylistic upheaval, particularly in Roman art. The classical canon disintegrated and there emerged radically conceptual forms, either abstracted from the canon or imposed on it<sup>17</sup>. Artists ceased to be interested in reproducing athletes with perfectly proportioned figures<sup>18</sup>. They no longer set their figures in a harmoniously structured space, nor were their figures set in relation to each other with proper respect for perspective. The pioneers of art history were inclined to interpret these departures from the

16. R. BIANCHI BANDINELLI, *La crisi artistica della fine del mondo antico*, *Archeologia e cultura*, Milan/Naples 1961, p. 189.

17. E. KITZINGER, *Byzantine Art in the Making*, London 1977, p. 7-21.

18. BIANCHI BANDINELLI, *art. cit.* (note 16), p. 204.

classical canon in terms of decadence: third-century artists lacked the competence and their patrons lacked the taste of their predecessors. However, a different interpretation was proposed in the early years of this century, notably by Riegl<sup>19</sup>, who introduced the concept of *Spätantike*, and by Rodenwaldt, who introduced that of Expressionism<sup>20</sup>. They argued that these departures, far from being symptomatic of incompetence, were motivated by and corresponded to changes in contemporary taste. Subsequent scholars, notably Bianchi Bandinelli, in whose studies of art history the subversive influence of Marxism is particularly evident, liberated themselves entirely from the aesthetic *a priori*s of Winckelmann's disciples. They have vastly enlarged the repertoire of Roman art, and from these previously unconsidered works they have been able to show that the antecedents of the art of *Spätantike* are to be sought in works destined for more modest patrons during the centuries when commissions for imperial or aristocratic patrons were executed in accordance with the classical canon.

The stylistic developments in the art of *Spätantike* may be described in terms of technical exploration. Narrative works, such as the reliefs on the columns of Marcus Aurelius and of Trajan, called for different techniques from those used in a free-standing composition. Once a work of art is being used to 'tell a story', lucidity in the narrative becomes more important than the re-creation of the physical world. Consequently the chief person in a scene may be made to stand out by representing him as larger than the other figures, so violating the laws of perspective. Since the face is the most expressive part of the human figure, it may be executed in detail, while the body is rendered without particular attention to its plasticity. This lack of consideration in the art of *Spätantike* for perspective and anatomy has been described as a passage from the plastic to the pictorial<sup>21</sup>. Notably, bas-relief, instead of being associated with sculpture in the round, is now assimilated rather to painting, such that contrasts of light and shade replace the natural contours suggested by moulding. The contrast between a plastic and a pictorial rendering of the same subject may be exemplified by two representations of a lionhunt. In one, on a sarcophagus in the Palazzo Giustiniani, the lion's mane has been rendered plastically by moulding. In the other, on a sarcophagus in the Catacombs of Saint Sebastian, the lion's mane has been rendered by drilling, so as to give a pictorial illusion of light and shade<sup>22</sup>.

This abandonment of the classical canon has been explained as symptomatic of the intellectual climate of *Spätantike*<sup>23</sup>. Confidence had been lost in the

power of the human reason to create the conditions of a perfect life in the context of the physical world. From the third century, it has been noted, both religious practice and philosophical teaching are marked by a common tendency to mysticism. The human mind may attain 'reality', but this reality lies outside the physical world observable by the senses. What is given in sensation — and, *a fortiori*, artistic representations of it — have no autonomous existence. They serve only as an intermediary, a vehicle for ideas. It is by means of ideas that the human spirit enters into contact with eternal Being and essential Truth. The possible influence of the most eminent third-century exponent of such notions, not only upon contemporary artistic production but also on early Byzantine and Medieval art, has frequently been examined<sup>24</sup>. Plotinus (205-270) certainly reflected profoundly both on the nature of art and on the concomitant conditions, intellectual and social, of its production. Given the influential position held by Plotinus at the court of Gallienus, it seems reasonable to take note of the ways in which his ideas may have been reflected in the artistic production of the third century. However, before pronouncing on his influence upon early Byzantine or Medieval art, it is necessary to establish how this influence would have been transmitted.

The observations which Plotinus makes about art, except as a means of contact with eternal Being, are not presented systematically. They are rather *obiter dicta*, which can easily be over-interpreted. His basic anthropology is pessimistic: man diminishes; his body weakens; he will not escape the consequences of disease<sup>25</sup>. Man's fulfilment consists in liberating himself from the prison of his body by entering into contact with eternal Being, the universal soul<sup>26</sup>. One means of establishing this contact, wellknown to the oldtime sages, was to make statues of the gods, because the representation, in the form of an image, of something undergoes the influence of its prototype, whose appearance may be grasped in the image as in a mirror<sup>27</sup>. Such a process implies that the artist himself has contemplated eternal Being, that he has entered into the rhythm of eternal life, ascending towards pure vision and descending to give it sensible expression<sup>28</sup>. Thus the artist acts as mediator between the sensible and the

24. *Ibid.*, p. 204; S. FERRI, Plotino e l'arte del III secolo, *La critica d'arte* I, 1936, p. 166-171; *Ibid.*, Plotino, *Encyclopédie dell'arte antica* VI, 250-252; M. CAGLIOLO DE AZZEREDO, Il colore nella Antichità, *Aenam* 28, 1954, p. 160-161; A. GRABAR, Plotin et les origines de l'esthétique médiévale, *L'art de la fin de l'Antiquité et du Moyen Age* I, Paris 1968, p. 15-29.

25. G. FRIGEN, Plotino, *Encyclopédia philosophica* III, 1458-1459; F. BOURBON DI PETRELLA, *Il problema dell'arte e della bellezza in Plotino*, Florence 1956; *Enneads* I. iv 14, *Plotini opera*, edited P. HENRY & H.-R. SCHWYZER, Paris/Brussels 1951-1959 (cited hereinafter HENRY/SCHWYZER), I, p. 95-96.

26. FRIGEN, *art. cit.* (note 25), 1455.

27. *Enneads* IV iii 11, HENRY/SCHWYZER II, p. 28-29.

28. FRIGEN, *art. cit.* (note 25), 1458.

19. R. BIANCHI BANDINELLI, Riegl, *Encyclopédia dell'arte antica* VI, 683-686.  
20. V. HAASSMANN, Rodenwaldt, *Ibid.*, 740-742; G. RODENWALDT, The Transition to Late Classical Art, *Cambridge Ancient History* XII, edited S. A. COOK, Cambridge 1939, p. 544-570.

21. BIANCHI BANDINELLI, *art. cit.* (note 16), p. 190.

22. *Ibid.*, plate 22 a, b.

23. *Ibid.*, p. 198.

intelligible. The image which he makes is not a personal creation, the product of his imagination; rather it is an objective revelation, incapsulating his intuition of eternal Being. His production (*ποίησις*) is contemplation (*θεοποίησις*).<sup>29</sup> In modern terms, it may not distort the thought of Plotinus too gravely to suggest that for him the value of a work of art consists in its capacity to signify; it enables the observer to possess the object signified (eternal Being), and to identify himself with it. In this context one might adduce his fascination for Egyptian hieroglyphs, each one of which was a 'science'.<sup>30</sup>

Such notions are far removed from Plato's theory of art as imitation (*μίμησις*) of nature.<sup>31</sup> They also limit strictly the autonomy of the artist, who is not required to be original, since his function is purely instrumental. Yet Plotinus was not indifferent to sensible appearances, although he described them from the point of view of someone who considered the material to be an obstacle to the attainment of the intelligible. Thus for Plotinus profundity is an aspect of the material and consequently obscure.<sup>32</sup> The intellect is directed rather towards colour and light, a notion which may be reflected in the contemporary passage from a 'plastic' to a 'pictorial' style in bas-relief.<sup>33</sup> Sensible impressions occur at the place where the object is situated: the closer the eye to the object, the more exactly the eye grasps it.<sup>34</sup>

This notion may be compared with the common practice in third-century art of grouping figures in the foreground in the same plane. It may also be compared with the less common practice known by art historians, but not by Plotinus, as presenting a scene in inverse perspective.<sup>35</sup> When the more important figures, although larger in size, are not represented in the foreground, it is as if the artist had envisaged the scene from the point of view of these persons. The rest of the scene, smaller in scale but placed in the foreground, is in false perspective for the beholder. In consequence he cannot maintain a distance between himself and the scene. In order to grasp it correctly, he has to identify himself with the more important persons, who, for the artist, are the real beholders.

In sum, Plotinus spoke of art in terms which are opposed to the principles of the classical canon. He situated 'reality' outside the physical world; he regarded a work of art as a means of attaining this non-physical reality; his exploration of the sensible world is in terms of light and colour rather than of depth, painterly rather than plastic. However, these notions, even if they derive

from his search for non-physical 'reality', do not constitute a structured whole, such that if one is rejected the others fall with it. Art may be considered as primarily significative (the production of hieroglyphs), without necessarily being exploited as a means of attaining non-physical 'reality'. It is also possible to produce a significative work of art independently of Plotinian notions of sense perception as well as of the technical means proper to the third century. These considerations must be borne in mind when attempting to assess the influence of Plotinus on early — and *a fortiori* later — Byzantine art. The following paragraphs offer only the *stans questionis* of a problem which merits full investigation in all its complexity.

If Plotinus exercised an influence on Byzantine art, it could have been directly by his writings or indirectly by the intermediary of third-century works of art. So far as direct influence is concerned, there are, of course, no surviving manuscripts of the *Enneads* earlier than the twelfth century.<sup>36</sup> There is no evidence of copies having been made during the period of the first Byzantine humanism, although Photius refers twice to Plotinus in his *Bibliotheca*, coupling his name with that of Origen as disciples of Ammianus.<sup>37</sup> On the other hand a number of fourth- and fifth-century Church Fathers, as well as philosophers, copied extracts from his teaching. Further extracts are preserved in the tenth-century compilation known as the *Souza* and again in the writings of Nicephorus Gregoras (ca 1295-1359/60).<sup>38</sup> Other Church Fathers, notably Gregory of Nyssa and Dionysius the Areopagite, betray a familiarity with the *Enneads*, extending to quotation, although they do not actually mention his name.<sup>39</sup>

The interest of the Fathers was above all in Plotinian epistemology. His terms could be used in order to explain how man, by contemplation, may attain the Godhead.<sup>40</sup> However, whereas Plotinus considered that man was ultimately absorbed into eternal Being, Gregory of Nyssa insisted upon a necessary and radical separation between man and God. An exegesis of the term 'image' was necessary in order to explain both the relationship of the Son to the Father, and the way in which the pure in heart 'see' God, reflected in the soul as in an unattested mirror.<sup>41</sup> For this exegesis Plotinus was a more reliable master

36. P. HENRY, *Les manuscrits des Ennéades*, second edition, Brussels 1948.

37. Phorbus, *Bibliotheca*, PG 103, 705; 104, 77; P. LEMERLE, *Le premier humanisme byzantin*, Paris 1971, makes no reference to manuscripts of the *Enneads* being copied during the period treated in his study.

38. P. HENRY, *Les états du texte de Plotin*, Brussels 1937; for the *Souza*, see LEMERLE, op. cit. (note 37), p. 297-299.

39. J. DANIELOU, *Platonisme et théologie mystique*, Paris 1944, p. 211-217; R. ROQUES, *L'univers d'Orphée*, Paris 1954, *passim*.

40. DANIELOU, op. cit. (note 39), p. 212-213.

41. Ibid., p. 215-216; see also J. KRECHMAYER, *Grecque (Égipci)*, *Dictionnaire de spiritualité VI*, 812-822, with ample bibliography but no reference to the influence of Plotinus.

29. *Ibid.* 1459.

30. *Enneads* V viii 6, HENRY/SCHWYZER II, p. 390.

31. L. STREANINI, *Il problema estetico in Platone*, Turin 1926; P.M. SCHUHL, *Platon et l'art de son temps*, Paris 1933.

32. *Enneads* II iv 5, HENRY/SCHWYZER I, p. 186-188.

33. BRANCHI-BANDINELLI, *art. cit.* (note 16), p. 190; CAGIANO DE AZEVEDO, *art. cit.* (note 24), p. 160-161.

34. *Enneads* II viii 1, HENRY/SCHWYZER I, p. 220-222.

35. GRABAR, *art. cit.* (note 24).

than Plato, for whom the notion of image, as that of mimesis, had pejorative connotations, the representation, as the imitation, being an inferior, adulterated or deceptive version of the original.

However, the Cappadocian Fathers did not exploit their exegesis of the term image when describing works of art. The good work of art, *pace* Plato, was an exact mimesis of nature, although, by this very fact, it could be a more effective means of telling a story or conveying a message than language itself. In other words, it may well be that the writings of Plotinus continued to exercise an influence on art production, but above all, because he considered art to be a means of communication. When the qualities of the work of art were assessed, the Greek Fathers remained faithful to the criteria of the classical ecphrasis, particularly to that of exact imitation of nature.<sup>42</sup>

Patristic exegesis of the notion of image was later exploited by the Iconophiles to explain how Christ was present in his image on an icon. However, again, their preoccupation was epistemological and not aesthetic. Although the contrary is often maintained, it does not seem that the Iconophiles were at all concerned to assess the quality of specific icons or representations of Christ.<sup>43</sup> Fidelity to the prototype imposed constraints and probably favoured the practice of copying, but it was not a criterion of aesthetic quality. This separation between the epistemological and the qualitative assessment of figurative art may be exemplified by Photius' ecphrasis of the image of the Virgin in Saint Sophia: 'Sight... having somehow... touched and encompassed the object..., sends the essence of the thing seen to the mind'. Yet the picture itself is a 'lifelike imitation... You might think (the Virgin) not incapable of speaking'. There is no doubt that Plotinian influence could have been mediated by third-century works of art, which served as models for early Byzantine artists. Stylistic resemblance can be detected in works like reliefs conceived pictorially rather than plastically with the figures all in one plane, in statues whose faces are executed in great detail while the body has been executed summarily, and in scenes presented in inverse perspective. However, such resemblance by no means extends to all the artistic production of the early Byzantine period. Stylistically speaking early Byzantine art, far from being uniform, is remarkably eclectic.

42. MANGO, *op. cit.* (note 12), p. 34, 36-37.

43. For the exploitation by the Iconophiles of Patristic exegesis of the notion of image, see C. VON SCHÄDENHORN, *L'icône du Christ. Fondements théologiques élaborés entre le I<sup>e</sup> et le II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée* (323-787), second edition, Fribourg 1976. For the development of an aesthetic from exegesis of the notion of image, see L. OUSPENSKY, *Essai sur la théologie de l'icône dans l'Eglise orthodoxe*, Paris 1960; P. EVDOKIMOV, *L'art de l'icône. Théologie de la beauté*, Paris 1970. See also the pertinent remarks by Suzy DUFRENNE, *L'icône dans la pensée et la piété orthodoxe d'après le témoignage du monde byzantin*, in *Aspects de l'orthodoxie*, edited M. SIMON, Paris 1981, p. 31-41.

44. PHOTIUS, *Homily XVIII* 2, 5, MANGO, *op. cit.* (note 12), p. 187, 190.

Artists copied models which respect the classical canon as readily as ones which flout it. This eclecticism requires some explanation. Further, with the advent of Constantine, a radical change took place in the social climate of the Roman Empire. Men no longer despaired at the possibility of finding their fulfilment in their terrestrial life. On the contrary, it seemed that, with the official recognition of the Christian Church, an ordered, stable society could be restored. Since Christians were no longer a persecuted sect, they no longer felt obliged to focus the message of their art on the theme of the afterlife.<sup>44</sup> Celestial life was, indeed, a continuing and dominant theme of Christian art, but it was not contrasted with terrestrial existence as an opposition between the intelligible and the sensible. Early Byzantine art stresses the analogies between celestial and terrestrial life rather than the differences. The mediating theme was that, thanks to Constantine, the reign of Christ had been established on earth. Further, to represent Christ in heaven, Christian artists adapted models which to contemporaries would have vividly recalled the fact that they lived in the terrestrial, physical world, pictures taken from imperial imagery, proclaiming the reality of imperial power.<sup>45</sup>

Probably few art historians to-day would maintain that there is any correlation between the stylistic upheaval of *Späianite* and the artistic patronage of the Christian Church.<sup>46</sup> On the other hand official recognition by Constantine of the Christian Church, since the emperor was the principal patron of the arts, must have progressively encouraged an enormous increase of artistic production, consisting of works intended to be a vehicle of religious and political propaganda.<sup>47</sup> In such works significance was more important than the re-creation of the physical world. Already in the third century Christians, like other sects, were using figurative art as a means of propagating their doctrines. Some such works are assimilable to hieroglyphs. For example, in the catacombs of Priscilla, the dove with an olive branch from Noah's ark is juxtaposed, as a sign of liberation, to the Three Youths in the fiery furnace. Although such composite 'messages' are exceptional, the practice persisted. In the Rossano Gospels, in illustration to the parable of the Wise and Foolish Virgins, four rivers, the sign of Paradise, are represented inside the bridegroom's dwelling.<sup>48</sup>

If a case is to be made for the influence of Plotinus on early Byzantine art, the most convincing argument would be that he formulated most clearly the notion

45. CH. WALTER, *Art and Ritual of the Byzantine Church*, London 1982, p. 24.

46. A. GRABAR, *L'empereur dans l'art byzantin*, Paris 1936, p. 196-243.

47. See above, note 17.

48. R. KRAUTHMER, The Constantinian Basilica, *DOP* 21, 1967, p. 115-140.

49. CH. WALTER, Liturgy and the Illustration of Gregory of Nazianzen's Homilies, *Studies in Byzantine Iconography*, London 1977, p. 193-195. This point is developed with regard to narrative and interpretative pictures in my paper delivered at the IV<sup>e</sup> Symposium International sur l'Art Géorgien, Tbilissi 1983, *Le culte, les légendes et l'iconographie de saint Georges* (printing).

that the essential value of a work of art is its capacity to signify. On the other hand, the systematic use of art for propaganda purposes would seem to be a Constantinian innovation, bringing about a rupture between the art of *Spatiunrike* and that of the early Byzantine period. Henceforward, throughout the Byzantine period, the figurative arts would be 'conceptualist', giving primacy to significance. Early Christian artists did not invent new signs to propagate their doctrines. They borrowed and adapted them from existing works. It is likely that a model for every theme of early Byzantine iconography may be identified in pre-Christian works.<sup>50</sup> This helps to explain why early Byzantine art is eclectic. Artists consulted the repertory of available models as a lexicon rather than as a pattern book. However, in transposing the 'sign', they also copied its style.

This explanation does not, of course, purport to be complete. Individual taste may well have sometimes determined the choice of a model. Moreover, it is evident that a choice of style could be in itself significant, as, for example, in the case of the late fourth-century neo-pagan ivories.<sup>51</sup> However, it would be difficult in the early Byzantine period to relate stylistic trends to the results of scientific or technical exploration. The artist's function had been established as that of a copyist or adaptor, whose field of vision was virtually limited to such works of art as might prove to be useful models. Whether the model or the resulting work was classical or expressionist in style probably mattered less to contemporaries than to modern art historians. Our aesthetic sensibility is offended by the violent contrast of style between the second- and fourth-century reliefs on the Arch of Constantine.<sup>52</sup> If the fourth-century beholder was primarily concerned to read the message of the reliefs, he may have barely noticed the difference.

### 3. THE MACEDONIAN 'RENAISSANCE'

There is a consensus among art historians that there was a revival of Byzantine art after the Triumph of Orthodoxy. However, there is not a consensus as to how this revival should be defined and described. For example, Loumyer wrote of a Second Golden Age, beginning in the reign of Basil I (867-886) and lasting for three centuries.<sup>53</sup> Frolov wrote of a renaissance beginning at the end of

the ninth century, continuing to the end of the eleventh century and extending into the more troubled epoch of the Comneni; it was remarkable for the quality and quantity of the works of art produced.<sup>54</sup> Generally art historians attribute a shorter duration to this renaissance. Weitzmann, for example, dates its beginning to the late ninth or tenth century but does not allow it to continue into the eleventh century.<sup>55</sup>

So far as the quantity of artistic production is concerned, it seems that there was a large increase in the ninth century, motivated in part at least by the need to restore damage and destruction during the period of Iconoclasm, followed by a recession in the tenth century and a new increase of production in the eleventh. However, those who attribute a shorter duration to this renaissance connect it with the style of the works produced. From the late ninth to the end of the tenth century there was a marked preference for a style which resembles that of works produced in Antiquity in accordance with the classical canon, implying an intensified study of the classical repertory of forms.

In this sense, the word is also applied to the art of other periods. Scholars

have discerned a Gaullicene Renaissance in the third century.<sup>56</sup> Another short renaissance, associated with the production of neo-pagan ivories and the patronage of the court of Theodosius I (379-395), occurred in the late fourth century.<sup>57</sup> Yet another occurred in the reign of Justinian II (695-695; 705-711).<sup>58</sup> A further 'Late Byzantine Renaissance' took place under the Palaeologan dynasty.<sup>59</sup>

Probably this list is not exhaustive.

The hazards of using the term renaissance, introduced into art history to denote the fifteenth-century cultural renewal in the West, in other contexts but with the same connotations, are now generally recognized. Many scholars now place the word renaissance between inverted commas, to signify that it must be interpreted with circumspection. Mango has even proposed that a term used by Panofsky for Western art history should also be used by Byzantinists: other classical revivals should be distinguished from the fifteenth-century Western

54. A. FROLOV, La renaissance de l'art byzantin au 9<sup>e</sup> siècle et son origine, *Corsi di cultura sull'arte ravennate e bizantina* 9, 1962, p. 269.

55. K. WEITZMANN, The Classical in Byzantine Art as a Mode of Individual Expression, *Studies in Classical and Byzantine Manuscript Illumination*, Chicago/London 1971, p. 151-75; The Character and Intellectual Origins of Byzantine Art, *ibid.*, p. 176-223; *The Classical Mode in the Period of the Macedonian Emperors: Continuity or Revival?*, *The Classical Heritage in Byzantine and Near Eastern Art*, London 1981.

56. BIANCHI BANDINELLI, *art. cit.* (note 16), p. 200.

57. See above, note 51.

58. D. WRIGG, The Classical Revival in Art at the Court of Justinian II, *Résumés der Kunzeiträte*, XVI, *Internationaler Byzantinistenkongress*, Vienna 1981, 10.1 : 'A truly Justinianic Renaissance'.

59. For some references : *Art et société sous les Paleologues*, Venice 1971; KITZINGER, *art. cit.* (note 4), p. 659-672.

50. A. GRABAR, *Christian Iconography. A Study of Its Origins*, London 1969.  
 51. Ch. WALTER, Marriage Crowns in Byzantine Iconography, *Zograf* 10, 1979, p. 84-85; KITZINGER, *op. cit.* (note 47), p. 34-38.  
 52. KITZINGER, *ibid.*, p. 7. It may be observed that in modern advertising, in many respects the heir of conceptualist traditions in art, juxtapositions of this kind frequently occur without apparently offending the potential client.  
 53. G. LOUMYER, *Les traditions techniques de la peinture médiévale*, Brussels/Paris 1920, p. 59.

*Rinascimento dell' Anticità* by the use of the term *renaissance*<sup>60</sup>. His example has not been generally followed, perhaps because the danger still remains of attributing some of the connotations of the word renaissance to the word *renaissance*. The following connotations need particularly to be scrutinized: a *renaissance* (or *renascence*) is inspired by a direct study of the art of Antiquity; a *renaissance* is a period of progress and creativity; a *renaissance* is a 'heyday' in the history of art.

Art historians do not have a monopoly of the term *renaissance*. Historians of Byzantine literature also use it, notably to designate the Humanist revival in letters in the ninth and tenth centuries<sup>61</sup>. Fortunately, this revival has been studied in depth. In spite of Lemerle's modest disclaimers, it is unlikely that the conclusions to his 'notes et remarques' on this Humanist revival will need to be modified substantially<sup>62</sup>. It is useful to recapitulate his conclusions briefly, for, although there are analogies between the literary and the artistic classical revival in the ninth and tenth centuries, there are also points of difference. Lemerle notes that, in the period preceding the ninth century, there was, if not a rupture, at least a suspension of study of classical letters<sup>63</sup>. From the fifth or sixth century to the ninth, very few Greek manuscripts were copied and possibly no literary texts<sup>64</sup>. Public instruction ceased to exist in Constantinople<sup>65</sup>. Leo the Mathematician, the first authentic 'homme de la Renaissance', had to seek out a teacher on the isle of Andros and to continue his instruction alone by reading such ancient texts as he could find<sup>66</sup>. The decisive date in the re-establishment of public teaching was his appointment by Bardas shortly after 855 as director of the school founded in the Magnaura palace<sup>67</sup>. Photius was the real founder of Byzantine classicism, which was not genuinely Hellenic, since Photius frequented mainly Greek writers of the Christian era<sup>68</sup>. He was more interested in classical rhetoric than in the sciences. His successors did not modify greatly his approach. Lemerle suggests that one consequence of the condemnation of Iconoclasm was the suppression of an 'esprit scientifique' and of any 'originalité créatrice'. No progress was made in the different branches

60. C. MANGO, *Antique Statuary and the Byzantine Beholder*, *DOP* 17, 1963, p. 53-75; E. PANOSKY, *Renaissance and Renascences in Western Art*, second edition, Uppsala 1965.

61. For the most recent *status quaestionis*, see *Byzantium and the Classical Tradition*, edited Margaret MULLETT & R. SCOTT, Birmingham 1981.

62. LEMERLE, *op. cit.* (note 37), p. 301-307.

63. *Ibid.*, p. 303.

64. *Ibid.*, p. 8.

65. *Ibid.*, p. 303.

66. *Ibid.*, p. 148-176.

67. *Ibid.*, p. 303.

68. *Ibid.*, p. 304.

of knowledge, nor in the *humaniores litterae*<sup>69</sup>. The encyclopedic movement of the tenth century completed the dossier of relevant classical texts<sup>70</sup>. Interest in them was motivated by a spirit of conservation rather than creative development. They were points of reference, to be commented and controlled by reference to Christian dogma.

Several differences between this 'first Byzantine humanism' and that of the Western Renaissance are immediately evident. Western humanism was genuinely anthropocentric, inspired by a renewed confidence in man's ability to explore and master his environment, and accompanied by a critical attitude to the theocentric culture of the Middle Ages. Scholars exploited Antique culture selectively, in order to develop lines of research which existed independently of it. The style of their literary composition was intimately connected with their research. By contrast, Byzantine humanism during the Macedonian 'Renaissance' in no way challenged the prevailing theocentric culture. On the contrary its adepts sought rather to conserve and reinforce the corpus of dogmatic certainties which were the fruit of the decisions of the seven oecumenical councils. They were not interested in exploring and mastering their environment. There was no intimate connection between their theological lucubrations and their assiduous practice of rhetoric. Moreover their frequentation of classical texts which could serve as models for their own literary composition may often be more correctly designated as *mimesis* rather than as *rhetoric*<sup>71</sup>. This distinction between rhetoric and mimesis is no doubt important in the study of the Byzantine attitude to its Hellenic literary heritage. It is capital in the study of its attitude to its Hellenic artistic heritage. If the aspect of Hellenic culture which was particularly valued during the Macedonian 'Renaissance' may be generically designated as style, it is necessary to use the term with considerable circumspection.

The ensuing paragraphs are intended only to raise a number of issues relevant to the study of style during the Macedonian 'Renaissance'. Some questions cannot yet be definitively answered, because the source material has yet to be published; others, probably, can never be definitively answered, because the source material either does not or never did exist. Nevertheless, these questions should be asked. The points at issue are: conditions of artistic production; scientific and technical exploration; the status of the artist and his capacity for individual expression.

Artistic production during the Western Renaissance is sufficiently well documented for it to be possible to reconstruct its organisation independently of the

69. *Ibid.*, p. 302, 305. This arrest of speculative thinking extended to theology, notably as to the possibility of establishing an analogy between the Eucharistic species and a figurative representation as 'icons' of Christ, WALTER, *op. cit.* (note 45), p. 186-189.

70. LEMERLE, *ibid.*, p. 304-305.

71. H. HUNGER, *On the Imitation MINHEZ of Antiquity in Byzantine Literature*, *DOP* 23-24, 1969-1970, p. 17-38. He recalls that Greek Antiquity and the Byzantine Middle Ages cared very little for « original genius ».

internal evidence provided by the paintings themselves. Schools, workshops, individual artists may be identified, making possible the reconstitution of objective structures, which may serve as a basis for the study of stylistic relationships: influences, original developments and so on. Such documentation is virtually non-existent for the Macedonian 'Renaissance'. The art historian may be tempted to assume that the structures of art production in Constantinople were similar to those in the West. If, however, he is prudent, he will exploit the model cautiously. For example, the well-known accounts by Theophanes Continuatus and Luprand of Cremona of the artistic patronage of Constantine VII (913-959) make no reference to manuscript illumination.<sup>72</sup> Yet it is largely on the evidence of miniature painting that the notion of a Macedonian 'Renaissance' is based. It is hardly likely that Constantine VII did not maintain a permanent scriptorium under his patronage. However, even for the eleventh and twelfth centuries, from which a far greater number of illuminated manuscripts have survived, scholars are now less willing to suppose that the miniatures were executed in a workshop attached to the scriptorium.<sup>73</sup> Even when illuminated manuscripts may be grouped together by reason of stylistic resemblances, the inference that they were produced in the same workshop is not certain. With regard to the Palaeologan group of illuminated manuscripts which are associated with Theodora Raoulina, the scholars who have studied them so assiduously have not been able to relate them either to an earlier or to a later group, although their dependence on tenth-century models can be demonstrated.<sup>74</sup> Other art historians, emulating their assiduity, will no doubt establish similar groups for the tenth century. Yet it may still remain impossible to establish that workshops for manuscript illumination formed part of the structure of Constantinopolitan art production during the Macedonian 'Renaissance'. It may prove difficult to refute the hypothesis that artists were assembled to execute specific commissions, and that such production was contingent and occasional.

The point was made earlier that, during the Western Renaissance, stylistic development was closely related to scientific and technical exploration. The first Byzantine humanists, however, studied rhetoric in abstraction from the sciences. What can we know about the way in which their contemporaries conceived the technical problems of art production? The term *prospettiva* is an invention of the Florentine Quattrocento, used to distinguish the rules for representing recession in a picture from the laws governing recession in optics.<sup>75</sup>

72. THEOPHANES CONTINUATUS VI, 18-28, Bonn, p. 449-452; MANGO, *op. cit.* (note 12), p. 207-210.  
 73. Suzy DURENNE, Problèmes des ateliers de miniaturistes byzantins, XVI. *Internationaler Byzantinistenkongress, Aken* II/2 (= JÖB 31/2, 1981), p. 445-470.  
 74. Such is the conclusion of H. BROTHMAN & H. DELTING, *Patronage in Thirteenth Century Constantinople*, Washington 1978, for the group of Palaeologan manuscripts analysed in this study.  
 75. D. GIOSEPPI, Perspective, *Encyclopedia of World Art* XI, 184.

If, therefore, it is an anachronism to use the term perspective when describing Byzantine painting, nevertheless there can be no doubt that Byzantine artists, like their Antiquity predecessors, were versé with perspective *avant la lettre*. Moreover treatises concerning arithmetic, geometry and astronomy were copied in the ninth and tenth centuries. Arethas had a manuscript of Euclid copied, *Bodleian d'Orville*, 301, which was finished in 887<sup>76</sup>. School manuals which treat these subjects are unfortunately for the most part unpublished.<sup>77</sup> However, the use made by Byzantine artists of the Macedonian 'Renaissance', both to set their compositions in perspective and to compensate, in monumental painting, for distortion due to the angle of vision of the beholder, has to be established on internal evidence. Some scholars have attempted to reconstruct the lines of recession in Byzantine paintings but so far on too limited a scale.<sup>78</sup> In general, classicizing works, particularly miniatures, of this period are not composed with a single vanishing point. They are constructed piecemeal from details taken from models, whose perspective is retained but not unified in the new composition. This is particularly evident in portraits of Evangelists set against a classical architecture.<sup>79</sup> The effects of recession are derivative and not the result of deliberate technical exploration on the part of the artist.

The plastic rendering of the human figure in Western Renaissance art derived in part from the study of anatomy and in part from the imitation and adaptation of classical statuary. The extent to which anatomy was studied during the Macedonian 'Renaissance' requires investigation.<sup>80</sup> For practical purposes, Byzantine artists needed some working rules for representing the human figure.<sup>81</sup> The unique surviving text, the treatise composed by Ulpianus the Roman in the

76. LEMERLE, *op. cit.* (note 37), p. 170-171, 224-225. G. MATTHEW, *Byzantine Aesthetics*, London 1963, p. 23-27, discusses the use of mathematics by Byzantine artists, and maintains that Euclid's *Optics* was available to them, thanks to Pappus Alexandrinus (fl. late third century). Pappus commented the *Optics* in *Suvarxayoi VI*, but this treatise does not figure in the *Bibliotheca* of Photius, nor is it mentioned by Lemere as having been copied by the first Byzantine Humanists. MATTHEW, *ibid.*, p. 31, writes: 'If a Byzantine artist is primarily concerned with height and width, it is because his primary task to provide surface decoration'. Would this explanation extend to miniature painting?  
 77. LEMERLE, *op. cit.* (note 37), p. 133.  
 78. E. PANOFSKY, Die Perspektive als symbolische Form, *Vorträge der Bibliothek Warburg*, 1921-1925; MICHELS, *op. cit.* (note 5), p. 174-195.  
 79. For example, the portraits in the Gospel Book *Athos Staronikita* 43, illustrated by WEITZMANN, Character and Intellectual Origins, *art. cit.* (note 55), figs. 180, 203.  
 80. LEMERLE, *op. cit.* (note 37), gives no reference to copies of classical treatises on anatomy.  
 81. E. PANOFSKY, The History of the Theory of Human Proportions as a Reflection of the History of Styles, *Meaning in the Visual Arts*, New York 1955, p. 55-107; WINFIELD, *op. cit.* (note 1), who suggests that nose-length provided the basic unit for human proportion in Byzantine art.

ninth or tenth century, is unfortunately laconic<sup>82</sup>. His directions for rendering most figures is limited to the observation that they were tall, of middle stature or short. Exceptionally, he gives precise measurements for Adam, 'the first man created by God', which, if they could be convincingly interpreted, might provide information as to the ideal proportions of the human figure during the Macedonian 'Renaissance'.

To supplement this meagre information on Byzantine notions of human proportion, scholars have sometimes worked on the assumption that the treatises of Denys of Fournas and Manuel Panselinus incorporate traditions dating back to the Byzantine epoch<sup>83</sup>. However, the remarks of Denys of Fournas on human proportions are difficult to interpret. Hetherington has suggested that they were originally formulated by 'piecemeal observation of existing painted figures rather than on a mathematical basis'<sup>84</sup>. If so, it seems that, in this respect at least, he was indeed following an ancient tradition. Again the hypothesis remains open that the plasticity of the human figure in 'Macedonian Renaissance' painting is derivative. Moreover, it does not derive from the abundant examples of classical statuary available in tenth-century Constantinople. As Mango has shown, the Byzantine attitude to these statues was ambivalent<sup>85</sup>. Yet in no case did they stimulate the same interest as classical literature. Nor did artists resort to them as models, even when their composition required the presence of a classical statue<sup>86</sup>. The plastic human figures of Macedonian painting derive from earlier copies in manuscript illumination or the minor arts.

82. M. CHATZIDAKIS, 'Ex τῶν Ἐπιτομῶν τοῦ Πολυκράτους', *Studies in Byzantine Art and Archaeology*, London 1972, p. 409; MANGO, *op. cit.* (note 12), p. 214-215; WALTER, *op. cit.* (note 45), p. 106-107.

83. The confidence placed by art historians in the *Hermeneia* is surprising. E. BERGER, *Beiträge zur Entwicklungsgeschichte der Maltechnik III*, Munich 1897, p. 65-92, attributes the text of Panselinus, 'Εγγενεῖα τῆς Ἑρμηνείας τέρψις', edited A. PARADOPoulos-KERAMEUS, Saint Petersburg 1909, p. 237-253, following M. DIDROU, *Manuel de l'iconographie chrétienne*, Paris 1845, p. 7, to the twelfth century. LOUVET, *op. cit.* (note 53), p. 59, recognizes that there are two 'l'ond médiéval'; he maintains that they can be easily separated but he does not explain how. PANOSKIS, *art. cit.* (note 78), also considers that the *Hermeneia* embodies authentic Medieval traditions. However, the *Hermeneia* is poor evidence for Byzantine Medieval traditions. However, edition is available. Meanwhile, the annotations of P. HERRINGTON, *The Painter's Manual of Dionysius of Fournas*, London 1974, are shrewd and penetrating. For Manuel Panselinus there is now a considerable bibliography: HERRINGTON, *op. cit.* p. 91; M. RESTLE, *Athos, Reallexikon zur byzantinischen Kunst I*, 411-412. See especially A. XYGOGOULOS, *Thessalonique et la peinture macédonienne*, Athens 1955; IDEM, *Manuel Panselinios*, Athens 1956. There is no reference to Panselinus in the sources earlier than 1744, when the tradition is first attested that he was the artist from Thessaloniki who painted frescoes in the Protaton, Karyes.

84. HETHERINGTON, *op. cit.* (note 83), p. 95.

85. MANGO, *art. cit.* (note 60).

86. *Ibid.*, p. 73-75.

During the Western Renaissance, the social status of artists steadily improved. An activity which had been artisanal became the occupation of men of wide culture with distinctive personalities, on a par with men of letters. It seems that over the centuries a similar improvement occurred in the social status of Byzantine artists. Whereas an imperial decree, issued in 337, ranked artists with stone-masons and blacksmiths<sup>87</sup>, the *auree* of the twelfth-century Eulalius inspired epigrams and learned puns<sup>88</sup>. Yet references to painters by their names are infrequent in the literary sources, particularly before the twelfth century. If Lazarus the icon-painter is remembered, it is less because his painting was of outstanding quality than because he refused to be suborned by the Iconoclasts<sup>89</sup>.

However, the personality of one artist of the Macedonian 'Renaissance' can be tentatively reconstructed. In the *Life* of Athanasius the Athonite, it is told how a certain Pantoleon was commissioned to copy an icon<sup>90</sup>. One of the illuminators of the *Menologium of Basil II* is also called Pantoleon<sup>91</sup>. An idiosyncracy has been detected in his miniatures. He had a *penchant* for introducing classical statues (idols) into his miniatures quite gratuitously. Yet he did not copy them from extant classical statues but rather from representations of them, whether in other miniatures or in the minor arts<sup>92</sup>. It cannot be proved that the name Pantoleon refers to the same artist. Yet it is significant that in each case the artist was commissioned to copy another work rather than to produce an original one, and that in the latter case he was free to follow in a limited degree the dictates of his personal taste.

Nevertheless, in contrast to the Western Renaissance and contemporary humanist letters, ninth- and tenth century artistic production remained artisanal. Works were produced, in which mosaic tesserae were set or colours layered with consummate skill. Yet the more plausible hypothesis is that the subjects as well as the stylistic models were chosen by patrons rather than the artists themselves. It is unlikely that the way in which models were transmitted can ever be exactly established. The rare surviving *hōzze* are palimpsests, which were readily expandable<sup>93</sup>. However, comparisons with earlier works suggest that, in monumental painting however the model was transmitted, artists turned to early Byzantine art rather than directly to whatever remained of Antique

87. *Cod. Theod. XIII* iv 2, MANGO, *op. cit.* (note 12), p. 15.

88. *Ibid.*, p. 229-232.

89. THIOPHANES CONTINUTUS, Bonn, p. 102-103 (= MANGO, *ibid.*, p. 159); Ch. WALTER, *Saints of Second Iconoclasm in the Madrid Scylitzes*, REB 39, 1981, p. 310-311.

90. MANGO, *ibid.*, p. 213-214.

91. I. ŠEVČENKO, The Illuminators of the Menologium of Basil II, DOP 16, 1962, p. 243-276; IDEM, On Pantoleon the Painter, JÖB 21, 1972, p. 241-249.

92. MANGO, *art. cit.* (note 60), p. 73-74.

93. H. BUCHTHAL, *The 'Masterbuch' of Wolfenbüttel and Its Position in the Art of the 13th Century*, Vienna 1979. In the Kekelidze Institute of Manuscripts, Tbilissi, there are three large folios with uncial script, which have served as palimpsests for sketches of an angel and two saints.

monumental painting and mosaic<sup>94</sup>. Here again the preference of Photius for literature of the Christian era should be recalled<sup>95</sup>.

In answer to one of the questions which were raised, it may, then, be said that the artists of the Macedonian 'Renaissance' did not, unlike those of the Western Renaissance, study directly the art of Antiquity. To another of the questions raised, whether this was a period of progress and creativity, it is more difficult to give a straight answer, because the criteria used for the Western Renaissance hardly apply. In Western art stylistic development can be measured in terms of scientific and technical exploration, but, since, apparently, there was no such exploration during the Macedonian 'Renaissance', strictly speaking there was no development, any more than in the preceding centuries. Art historians register and designate changes in style; they even plot them out, but the pattern which emerges is often abstruse and convoluted: 'spirals and not regular spirals at that'<sup>96</sup>. These changes reflect usually fashion in the choice of models. In their exploitation the artist, lacking the culture of his literary contemporaries, practised 'immissus' rather than 'rhetoric'. Yet although it is authorized by no literary text, it is certainly useful to explore the analogies between literary and artistic composition<sup>97</sup>. An artist could exercise a measure of independence in embellishing his composition, rather than leave it in the rudimentary state of those widely scattered works painted in what is called, unjustifiably it would seem, the 'monastic' style<sup>98</sup>. He might even resort to antithesis. Rarely indeed, during the Macedonian 'Renaissance' does the embellishment of his composition reveal direct familiarity with literary use of rhetoric. Whatever may be the case during the 'Late Palaeologian Renaissance', during the ninth and tenth centuries inspiration hardly gushed from this 'hidden spring of Hellenism'<sup>99</sup>. In sum, progress and creativity are not useful concepts for describing the fashions of ninth- and tenth-century Byzantine art.

#### 4. CONCLUSION

The principal aim of this article has been to describe and explain the difficulties which arise when an attempt is made to present a coherent interpretation of

94. The dependence of ninth-century art on surviving works from the sixth and seventh centuries rather than from Antiquity is argued by R. CORMACK, Painting after Iconoclasm, Ikonoclasm, edited A. BAYER & Judith HERRIN, Birmingham 1977, p. 147-163; see also KITZINGER, *art. cit.* (note 4), p. 661-663.

95. LEMERLE, *op. cit.* (note 37), p. 304.

96. DEMOS, *op. cit.* (note 3), p. 3.

97. KITZINGER, *art. cit.* (note 4), p. 674, with references, advocates the use of the term rhetoric understood analogically, in describing original stylistic elements in Byzantine works of art.

98. C. MANCO, Lo stile cosiddetto 'monastico' della pittura bizantina, *Habita Strutture Territorio*, Galatina 1978, p. 45-63.

99. MAGURE, *op. cit.* (note 8), p. 52.

Byzantine figurative art up to the 11th century in terms of style as this word is normally understood in art history. For the early period, the principal reason for the extreme diversity of style is probably to be sought in the dominant motivation for art production: the need to create a coherent system of signs in order to communicate the 'messages' of Christianity. This system was built up from the iconography of earlier figurative art. The style of the works from which this iconography was borrowed was of secondary consideration; the artist's function, which did not change in succeeding centuries, was primarily that of a copyist or adaptor.

Focus on the 'message' of figurative works of art is undoubtedly in large part responsible for what one might call the introverted character of Byzantine art<sup>100</sup>. It is almost entirely divorced from the world of nature. If artists looked beyond existing works for inspiration, it was usually to another form of communication: ritual and ceremony<sup>101</sup>. Consequently, in order to seek an explanation of the style of a work of art, it is necessary first to identify the model and account for its choice; after this, there may be still the possibility of demonstrating on occasions that the artist elaborated his own 'personal' rhetoric<sup>102</sup>.

These observations may also apply to the art of the Macedonian 'Renaissance'. However, during this period, new factors come into play, which are possibly more easier to identify in the contemporary revival of interest in classical literature: an arrest of speculative enquiry; the establishment of a corpus of authoritative texts; the assiduous study of rhetoric. These factors have their correlatives in artistic production: conservative iconographical programmes; a preference, at least at first, for models taken from the centuries immediately preceding Iconoclasm; a continuous preference, in spite of variations in fashion, for a 'Hellenic' style recalling works executed in conformity with the classical canon.

However, this 'Hellenic' style was abandoned, almost abruptly, in the eleventh century. There was a return to a style recalling rather models which flout the classical canon; one might call it 'expressionist'. This change of style coincides with a widening of the iconographical repertory, in which the innovations may

100. Compare Lemire's expression, *op. cit.* (note 37), p. 306: 'connaissance du dedans'. He continues: 'Elle s'est... enfermée dans le monde sans communication, dans le cercle clos du discours théologique.'

101. O. TRÖBRINGER, *Die oströmische Kaiser- und Reichsidee*, second edition, Darmstadt 1956. Performance of ceremony, in order to maintain an eschatological mode of existence, no doubt reinforced the boundaries of the 'cercle clos' (see preceding note). However ceremony, particularly ecclesiastical ceremony, was developed and modified. I have argued that liturgical development was one of the contributing causes of iconographical renewal in the eleventh century, WALTER, *op. cit.* (note 45), p. 189-192. This renewal was accompanied by a raising of the embargo on speculation about the Eucharist, see above, note 69. Consequently, it is not quite exact to write of a 'discours théologique inlassablement, indéfiniment répétitif', LEMERLE, *op. cit.* (note 37), p. 306.

102. K. WEITZMANN, *Illustrations in Roll and Codex*, second printing, Princeton 1970, p. 205.

in large part be traced back to ecclesiastical and, in some cases, imperial ritual and ceremony. This coincidence of a return in the eleventh century to an 'expressionist' style and an iconographical renewal was the starting point of the present enquiry.<sup>103</sup> Once again, it marks a difference between the specificity of Byzantine art and that of the Western Renaissance, when iconographical renewal coincided with a return to the classical canon.

In an art which is primarily conceptualist, it is not surprising that the stimulus to creative renewal should derive from the need to construct new 'messages'. Moreover a coherent interpretation of development in Byzantine art in terms of iconographical programmes presents far fewer difficulties than an interpretation of development in terms of style. For this reason, it may be correct to describe style in Byzantine art as epiphenomenal.

At this point, an answer may be attempted to a question which had been left in suspense: was the Macedonian 'Renaissance' a heyday in the history of Byzantine art? For those who concentrate their attention on the survival of Hellenism, the answer is clear. The Macedonian 'Renaissance' was a 'peak', while the eleventh century was a 'valley', a 'period of estrangement from the classical tradition'. Yet such a proposition is reversible. In terms of iconographical development, the eleventh century was a 'peak' and the Macedonian 'Renaissance' a 'valley'.

Even if Byzantine art was introverted and its style epiphenomenal to its iconographical content, it may still be possible to establish and explain the relationship in different periods between content and style. In the early Byzantine period, in spite of its stylistic eclecticism, which has been explained in terms of the relative indifference of artists to the style of their models, provided that they could be adapted to the communication of the Christian message, the late fourth-century 'renaissance' stands out as a period when the choice of style was ideologically motivated. In different contexts a classical style could 'communicate', because it was associated with nostalgia for a past epoch.<sup>104</sup> Ninth-century copying of the style of monuments surviving from the pre-iconoclast period was also ideologically motivated. However, it is possible that in the later decades of the Macedonian 'Renaissance' the relative stability of iconographical programmes encouraged artists to exercise a limited measure of initiative in adapting their Hellenic models. On the other hand, when eleventh-century artists were required to construct new 'messages', they were too preoccupied by the need to select or improvise appropriate signs to give much

attention to producing an illusion of physical reality. Thus it may be argued that in the history of Byzantine art what is determinant is the need to communicate. On the other hand it cannot be argued that iconographical renewal was invariably associated with an expressionist style. To plot the history of stylistic development in terms of perpetual expressionism does not make better sense than to plot it in terms of perpetual Hellenism.

Associated with the expressionist style of the eleventh century is an increase of versatility in decorative motifs particularly in manuscript illustration. This tendency is even more marked in the twelfth century. It is necessary only to cite the Homilies of Gregory of Nazianzus, *Sinait. 339*, and the manuscripts associated with it.<sup>105</sup> The miniatures are virtually swamped by the richly decorated borders surrounding them. This may serve as a reminder that a proper appreciation of style in Byzantine figurative art cannot be dissociated from a consideration of its setting. An emphasis of a church usually describes the figurative paintings summarily: their subject and their lifelikeness.<sup>106</sup> There may also be some observations on their function, which was, from Nilus of Sinai<sup>107</sup> to Symeon of Thessaloniki<sup>108</sup>, invariably to communicate: to instruct the illiterate and to impress all who beheld them.<sup>109</sup> However, when the writer describes the setting, he has difficulty in restraining his admiration and raptures. The point hardly requires to be laboured. Byzantine taste found its delight in gleam and glitter: shining marble, dazzling gold tesserae, silk and pearls.<sup>110</sup> The luxurious surviving monuments, from the churches of Justinian to the Kariye Cami, confirm that this is not mere verbiage. In church decoration at least what counted was the overall effect. The writer of the *Life of Basil I* was struck time after time by the 'beauties' of the New Church.<sup>111</sup> When he moved on to the Kainourion he succumbed to another emotion, stupor or amazement (*ἔκπληξις*).<sup>112</sup> Or did he? Perhaps for the Byzantine beholder the sublime and the beautiful were not mutually exclusive.<sup>113</sup>

<sup>103</sup> WALTER, *op. cit.* (note 45), p. 5-6; IDEM, *Résumé des Kurzbeiträge, XVI. Internationaler Byzantinistentagress*, Vienna 1981, 101.; IDEM, Style an Epiphénomènon of Ideological Development in Byzantine Art, *ibid.*, *Athen II/5* (= *JOB* 32/5, 1982), p. 3-6. See also my review of KIRZINGER, *op. cit.* (note 17). *REB* 37, 1979, p. 291-293.

<sup>104</sup> KIRZINGER, *art. cit.* (note 4), p. 660-661.

<sup>105</sup> See above, note 51.

<sup>106</sup> J. C. ANDERSON, The Illustration of Cod. Sinai. Gr. 339, *The Art Bulletin* 61, 1979, p. 167-185.

<sup>107</sup> MANGO, *op. cit.* (note 12), p. 60-72, 80-91, 107-108, 184-190, 192-205, etc.

<sup>108</sup> PG 79, 577-580 (= MANGO, *ibid.*, p. 32-33).

<sup>109</sup> *Dialogus contra heres* 23, PG 155, 112 (= MANGO, *ibid.*, p. 253): '(Icons) instruct us pictorially by means of colour and other materials'.

<sup>110</sup> WOŁSKA-COWS, *art. cit.* (note 12), p. 248: 'l'image qui serait mise sous les yeux de tous comme un livre'.

<sup>111</sup> MANGO, *op. cit.* (note 12), p. 3.

<sup>112</sup> Vita Basili, 83-85; THEOPHANES CONTINUATUS V, Bonn, p. 325-327 (= MANGO, *ibid.*, p. 194-195).

<sup>113</sup> Vita Basili, 89, *ibid.*, p. 332, line 5 (= MANGO, *ibid.*, p. 197).

<sup>114</sup> FAGEN, *art. cit.* (note 12), 1032. In the Περὶ φύσεως, 'Il concetto di sublime non sembra implicare nessuna distinzione di valore fra καλός e οὐκανός'.

PORTRAITS OF LOCAL BISHOPS:  
A NOTE ON THEIR SIGNIFICANCE

Early Christian and Byzantine art was, for the most part, inspired by the needs of religious cult. This could be the cult of the triumphant Christ, of the saints or of the dead. No attempt was made to devise in the early centuries a sign language which could set forth in pictorial form the rights and status of the universal or local Church. This is surprising considering the frequency and acerbity of disputes whether about doctrine or about jurisdiction. So far as Christendom had its 'official imagery' in these early centuries, it was that of the *oikoumene*, in which the principal rôle in the divine providential plan was attributed to the emperor.<sup>1</sup>

Nevertheless circumstances did arise in which a local Church chose to call attention to its special claims. Whether such claims were limited to prestige or extended to jurisdiction over other episcopal sees, they had to be expressed within the limits of available imagery, that of Christian cult or of the imperial court. An appreciation of these special uses of imagery is best focussed upon the representation of local bishops, the more so that their portraits have been assiduously studied<sup>2</sup> in recent years.<sup>3</sup> The present article does not present any new material. It is intended rather to be interpretative. After a consideration of pictures from the early centuries, which are found in shrines when they proclaim the status of the local Church, it passes to changes in the 9th century, when new iconographical themes are found in cathedrals. Since these themes were concerned with the universal status of the Church, it now became necessary to devise new ways of expressing local claims in imagery.

The most usual way in Early Christian art of introducing a local bishop into an iconographical programme was to represent him as a donor. Examples of such pictures have survived at Rome, Porec and Ravenna.<sup>3</sup> In this last centre may be cited, besides the surviving portrait of bishop Ecclesius (522—

<sup>1</sup> Ch. Walter, *Art and Ritual of the Byzantine Church* (London, 1982), 179 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Svetlana Tomicicov, 'Les évêques locaux dans la composition absidiale des saints officiant', *Byzantinisch-Neugriechische Jahrbücher* 23 (1981), 65—88.

<sup>3</sup> Walter, *Art and Ritual*, 179—180; W. Oakeshott, *The Mosaics of Rome* (London, 1967), *passim*; Jovanka Maksimovic, 'Ikongrafija i program mozaika u Poreču', *ZRVI* 82 (1964), 247—262; F. W. Dethmann, *Ravenna Hauptstadt des spätantiken Abendlandes* (Wiesbaden, 1969—1974), *passim*.

—532) in San Vitale, a lost portrait of him presenting the church in Sair Mary Major, and of Maximian (546—556) in Saint Stephen.<sup>4</sup> In other case the bishop's munificence was commemorated by a simple portrait: John Angelopoulos (477—494) in the cathedral Ursiana and in Saint Agatha; Peter II (494—519) in the archiepiscopal chapel;<sup>5</sup> Agnelli (557—570) in Saint Apollinare Nuovo.<sup>6</sup> Sometimes, it seems, the commemorative portrait was put up by the bishop's successor. In one case, that of the 'Domus Qua vocatur Tricoli', the bishop who terminated the work had portraits set up of five earlier bishops who had contributed to it.<sup>8</sup>

Some scholars have attempted to read into such series of portraits an affirmation of the apostolicity of the see and hence of its privileged status. This hypothesis is implausible. Such series witness only to a well-established cult of the local bishops. An analogy is supplied by the effigies made when the remains of dead bishops were deposited in the Stephania in Naples.<sup>9</sup> Similarly effigies of past popes were execrated in Rome in the restored tomb of pope Cornelius and in the church of Saint Chrysogonus.<sup>10</sup>

Rather than to his successors, it was to the founder-bishop or protector himself that the status and claims of a local Church were related. This practice may well have been widespread. It is known that both Epiphanius and Spyridon were represented in their respective shrines in Cyprus, and that Cyprus claimed to be an autocephalous Church.<sup>11</sup> However no connection can be established between the descriptions of these lost pictures and the local Church's claims. The case is otherwise for three Western sees: Milan, Ravenna and Rome.

From the 5th century Saint Ambrose was regarded as the protector of the see of Milan. It is therefore not surprising that in the chapel of Saint Victor at his shrine, he is represented between the martyrs Nabor and Felix.<sup>12</sup> Another bishop, Maternus (ca. 316—ca. 328), figures between the martyrs Gervase and Protus. It was during the episcopate of Maternus that Milan, as an imperial residence and administrative centre, became the capital of the diocese of Italia Annoveria.<sup>13</sup> The bishop acquired jurisdiction over

<sup>4</sup> Deichmann, *op. cit.*, I, 234—248; II ii, 343; II ii, 372—374.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, II i, 9—11; II ii, 292—294.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, II i, 198.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, II i, 127.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, II i, 197—198; Aurelianus (519—521); Ecclesiis (522/3—532/3); Ursicus (534/5—536/7); Victor (536/7—544/5); Maximian (546—556). These are Deichmann's dates. The latest list is that of G. Orioli, 'I vescovi di Ravenna. Note di cronologia e di storia' *Bullettino della Badia Greca di Grottaferrata* 32 (1978), 45—75, but this may not be definitive. See Ch. Walter, 'Was Ravenna an Imperial or a Papal See? The Evidence of the Mosaics', *Bulletin de l'Association Internationale pour l'Etude de la Mosaique Antique* 8 (1980), 93 note 2.

<sup>9</sup> John the Deacon, *Chronicon episcoporum sanctae neapolitanae ecclesiae, Rerum italicarum scriptores*, ed. L. A. Muratori (Milan, 1725), II ii, 315. F. Ladner, *Itinarii dei papi nell'antichità e nel medioevo I* (Vatican, 1941), 38—59; Walter, *Art and Ritual* (note 1), 168—169.

<sup>10</sup> Nancy Patterson-Sevcenko, *The Life of Saint Nicholas in Byzantine Art (Bari, saint Spyridon, évêque de Trimitone)* (Louvain, 1953), 88—91. Margaret Van Berchem & E. Clouzot, *Mosaïques chrétiennes du 4<sup>e</sup> au 10<sup>e</sup> siècle* (Geneva, 1924), 111—112, figs. 125—126.

<sup>11</sup> F. Dvornik, *The Idea of Apostolicity in Byzantium and the Legend of the Apostle Andrew* (Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1958), 24—25.

ecclesiastical dioceses which had previously been subject to Rome. The new status of the Church of Milan was confirmed by the emperor Constantine in 323. It was therefore appropriate that the bishop then reigning should be represented along with the more renowned Ambrose.

Yet more significant is the lost programme of the central apse of Saint Ambrose.<sup>14</sup> According to 17th-century engravings, there were originally two scenes in the conch associating the cult of Ambrose with that of Martin of Tours.<sup>15</sup> Below the two scenes was a series of pictures of enthroned bishops representing the sees which fell under the jurisdiction of Milan. One of the sees represented was that of Genoa which later became independent. However, unfortunately the separation cannot be used to establish a *terminus ante quem* for the execution of the mosaics. The Italian scholar F. Reggiori was able to examine the remaining mosaics minutely during their restoration after damage incurred in the Second World War. He proposed a 9th-century date with 11th-century restorations, although he did not preclude the possibility that some fragments had been transposed from the apse of the earlier basilica to the present one.<sup>16</sup> The lost series of portraits of suffragan bishops, possibly copying an earlier one, would have been more appropriate to our minds, as A. Grabau remarked, in the decorative programme of a cathedral rather than of a shrine.<sup>17</sup> Nevertheless, as the next examples show, pictures setting forth the claims of a local Church were regularly placed in a shrine.

A consciousness of its local status seems to have developed only slowly in the Church of Ravenna. Its bishops did not seek to become independent of Roman jurisdiction. In fact Ravenna was cited by pope Gelasius in his letter to the bishops of Dardania (495) as one of the cities whose priests did not usurp, on its becoming an imperial residence, anything besides the honours received in ancient times.<sup>18</sup> Although Peter Chrysologus (432—450) has been likened to Ambrose of Milan, there is no evidence that he was particularly venerated.<sup>19</sup> Apparently he discovered the founder-bishop's tomb at Classe and initiated his cult.<sup>20</sup> Yet the portrait of Peter Chrysologus does not figure among the bishops of Ravenna in the later mosaic in Sant' Apollinare in Classe.<sup>21</sup>

In fact it was at about the time that pope Gelasius was congratulating the clergy of Ravenna on the modesty of their ambitions that local tradition began to acquire more importance. The cult of the Ravenna martyrs Viralis and Ursicus began at the end of the 5th century.<sup>22</sup> During the episcopate

<sup>14</sup> P. Tosca, *Pittura e minatura nella Lombardia* (Milan, 1912), 128—129; new edition (Turin, 1966), 68—71, figs. 91—93.

<sup>15</sup> G. F. Paricelli, *Sancti Satyri Confessoris et Sanctorum Ambrosii et Marcellinae fratris Tumulus* (Milan, 1664); engraving reproduced, *ZRVII* 8, (1964), after 168.

<sup>16</sup> F. Reggiori, 'Il mosaico della grande abside di Sant' Ambrogio alla luce di recentissime osservazioni', *Studi in onore di A. Calderini e R. Paribeni*, III (Milan, 1956), 815—817.

<sup>17</sup> A. Grabau, 'Deux témoignages archéologiques sur l'autocéphalie d'une Eglise: Prespa et Ochrid', *ZRVII* 8, (1964), 166.

<sup>18</sup> PL 59, 71—72; Dvornik, *Idea of Apostolicity* (note 13), 112.

<sup>19</sup> Eva Teá, 'I committenti d'arte a Ravenna nel V e VI secolo', *Studi Calderini* (note 16), 747.

<sup>20</sup> Deichmann, *Ravenna Hauptstadt* (note 3), I, 21.

<sup>21</sup> *Ibid.*, I, 25.

<sup>22</sup> *Ibid.*

of Ursicinus (533—536) the construction began of a shrine for Apollinaris.<sup>23</sup> After the conquest of Ravenna by Belisarius in 540, the cult of saints popular in Constantinople was introduced, notably of John the Baptist, Stephen and Euphemia.<sup>24</sup> Nevertheless the two churches whose programmes are ecclesiologically significant were dedicated to local saints: Vitalis and Apolinarius.

A comparison might be attempted between the lost church of Saint John the Evangelist, commissioned by the empress Galla Placidia, and that of San Vitale. In the former, the patron saint was represented receiving a book from Christ, a variant of the *Traditio Legis*.<sup>25</sup> Below were portraits of members of the imperial family, presumably as donors, while a votive picture of Peter Chrysologus recalled his vision of an angel. In San Vitale, the programme is built up around the central theme of offering.<sup>26</sup> Typological scenes of the Eucharist, taken from the Old Testament, provide the link between Justinian and Theodora presenting their gifts, accompanied by bishop Maximian and the celestial scene above. Here the local bishop, Ecclesius, presents the church to Christ, who himself crowns the local martyr Vitalis. The theme of offering thus provides the imagery with which to present the integration of the local Church both into the celestial Church through the mediation of Ecclesius and Vitalis and into the *oikoumenē* through the mediation of Maximian. This well-structured programme contrasts with the piecemeal disposition of subjects in Galla Placidia's church.

If the programme of San Vitale proclaims the integration of the local Church of Ravenna into the *oikoumenē* after Justinian's reconquest, that of 'Sant' Apollinare in Classe suggests that the local Church nevertheless maintained a certain independence. If so, it was probably due to Maximian (546—556), who consecrated the church in 549.<sup>27</sup> The importance of having a shrine of the founder-bishop was evident. The choice of the four local bishops who also figure in the apse must be significant. Severus (*f.l.* 342) was the first 'historical' bishop of Ravenna, whose name figures among those present at the council of Sardica;<sup>28</sup> Ursus (399—426) moved the episcopal see from Classe to Ravenna;<sup>29</sup> Ecclesius (521/2—532/4) initiated the cult of the local martyr Vitalis;<sup>30</sup> Ursicinus (533—536) began the construction of the church.<sup>31</sup> If Peter Chrysologus was not included, it may be because he failed to manifest a spirit of independence.

Yet this programme does no more than reflect the prestige of the local Church. Maximian had received the pallium on his consecration by pope

Vigilius in 546.<sup>32</sup> He was later to receive from Justinian the title of archbishop, such that Ravenna passed 'from anomalous not quite metropolitan to anomalous super-metropolitan status'.<sup>33</sup> The title is first recorded in a papyrus of 553, but in the consecration inscription Maximian is called *beatus Apolinarius*, an adjective normally applied only to patriarchs, archbishops and metropolitans.<sup>34</sup> Maximian was in Constantinople in 548, the previous year, the most likely date for the conferment of the title.<sup>35</sup> Although the title was not recognized nor used in correspondence with the bishops of Ravenna by Rome, nevertheless Pelagius I (556—561) called Ravenna an 'apostolic' see.<sup>36</sup> Yet this, again, would seem to be an honorific title, admitting by implication that Apollinaris had genuinely been a Syrian disciple of Saint Peter who consecrated him first bishop of Ravenna.<sup>37</sup> It is, indeed, unlikely that either the emperor Justinian or pope Vigilius would have favoured any claim at that time for Ravenna to be freed from Roman jurisdiction. Its bishops were their instruments in their common policy of fighting schism in the dioceses of Milan and Aquileia.<sup>38</sup>

Over a century later a mosaic was added to the shrine of 'Sant' Apollinarius in Classe, which clearly records the see of Ravenna's claim to a privileged status, even if the precise nature of the privilege is not specified.<sup>39</sup> Relations between Rome and Ravenna had become strained in the time of pope Gregory I. Two bishops appointed by him to Ravenna, John and Marcellinus, Roman by origin and the pope's own protégés, continued to use the title of archbishop and wore the pallium abusively.<sup>40</sup> However, rupture only occurred in 666, when Reparatus sought and received the privilege of autocephaly from Constans II for bishop Maurus (648—671).<sup>41</sup> Maurus was buried in 'Sant' Apollinare in Classe, where his epitaph, due to his successor Reparatus (671—677), recorded that *Maurus archiepiscopus... liberavit ecclesiam suam de iugo Romanorum servitus*.<sup>42</sup>

Obviously, the mosaic gains in interest if it does indeed record the conferment of autocephaly, such that the imperial figures would be Constantine IV, Heraclius and Tiburtius, while the bishop in the background, extending his arms in a gesture of protection, would be Apollinaris II,

<sup>32</sup> R. A. Markus, 'Carthage — Prima Justiniana — Ravenna: an Aspect of Justinian's Kirchenpolitik', *Byzantion* 49 (1979), 567.

<sup>33</sup> *Ibid.*, 293.

<sup>34</sup> *Ibid.*, 298.

<sup>35</sup> *Ibid.*, 298.

<sup>36</sup> R. A. Markus, 'Ravenna and Rome 554—604', *Byzantion* 51 (1981), 567.

<sup>37</sup> The earliest documentary evidence for the existence of Apollinaris seems to date from the 5th century, G. Lucchesi, 'Apollinare', *Biblioteca Sonoriun* 2, 239—246. This was probably known to and developed by Agnellus in the 9th century, PL 106, 475—477; Gonin, *Excerpta Agnelliana* (note 28), 59. Agnellus also maintained that, up till the 5th century, 'bishops of Ravenna Justiniana — Ravenna' (note 32), 208.

<sup>38</sup> Deichmann, *Ravenna Haupstadt* (note 3), II ii, 273—279, argues the case closely

<sup>39</sup> in favour of the mosaic commemorating the conferment of autocephaly in 666. <sup>40</sup> Markus, 'Ravenna and Rome' (note 36), 575—578. Just as Maximian, a native of Istria and a protégé of Justinian, these two bishops acquired a sense of local patriotism. <sup>41</sup> F. Dölger, *Register der Kaiserkunden des östlichen Reiches*, I (Münch/Berlin, 1924), no. 232. The 'scandal' of autocephaly ended in the pontificate of Leo II (682—683), when the newly elected bishop of Ravenna went to Rome to be consecrated, *Le Liber pontificalis*, I (2nd edition, Paris, 1955), 360.

<sup>42</sup> Deichmann, *Ravenna Haupstadt* (note 3), II ii, 278.

a saint (for example Probus, Eleudius and Calogerus) figures in the church apart from the founder.

himself. This interpretation has, however, been disputed.<sup>43</sup> Less open to dispute is the view that the mosaic of Old Testament sacrifices was added at the same time as that commemorating the conferment of a privilege.<sup>44</sup> The model was most likely to have been the lower part of the programme of San Vitale. Thus the privilege mosaic is associated with another whose theme is oblation, namely in Saint' Apollinare in Classe, for Apollinaris himself is not represented as a donor nor as the recipient of a martyr's crown but as a 'visionary', contemplating Christ and associated with the Transfiguration.

The third example of imagery being related to the founder-bishop in order to set forth the claims and status of a local Church is provided by the lost programmes of the Roman shrines of Saint Peter and Saint Paul.<sup>45</sup> In both the original basilicas dedicated to these saints, there was a series of clipeate portraits of popes. However, whereas other series of local bishops' portraits were not complete, those in Rome go back to the origins of the see. The model for such series was provided by antique series of clipeate portraits set up in a temple.<sup>46</sup> Pliny the Elder describes the series of his ancestors' portraits set up by Appius Claudius in the temple of Bellona.<sup>47</sup> Some idea of their presentation may be formed from the picture of the Bassilica Etritana on coins.<sup>48</sup> The distribution of shields along the architrave above the column was the same as that of the clipeate portraits of popes in the basilicas of Saint Peter and Saint Paul. Thus preceding popes were presented as ancestors, stretching back in an unbroken line to Saint Peter, founder of the see.

Once initiated, the practice continued of adding successive clipeate portraits of popes to those of their predecessors. The question arises when the practice began. Wilpert attributed it to pope Liberius, no doubt because the Liberian catalogue, dated 354, is one of the earliest lists to place Saint Peter at the head of the bishops of Rome.<sup>49</sup> However, Ladner rather favoured Leo I (440—461).<sup>50</sup> Not only did the original series of portraits on the south wall of Saint Paul outside the Walls end with Leo I, but also there are references to work undertaken by him in the two basilicas in the *Liber pontificalis*.<sup>51</sup> The ecclesiastical climate of Leo I's pontificate seems parti-

<sup>43</sup> See especially S. Mazzarino, 'Da Lollanus ed Arbetio al mosaico storico di S. Apollinare in Classe', *Rivista di studi bizantini e neozelantici* 2—3 (1965—1966), 111—114.

<sup>44</sup> Deichmann, loc. cit., 273.

<sup>45</sup> Ladner, *Ritratti* (note 10), 38ff., 52ff.; L. De Bruyne, *L'antica serie di ritratti papali della Basilica di S. Paolo fuori le Mura* (Rome, 1934). For the series at Saint Peter, see the facsimile edition of Giacomo Grimaldi's sketchbook, *Descrizione della basilica antica di S. Pietro in Vaticano, codice barbarini latino 2733*, ed. R. Niggl (Vatican 1972), especially figs. 51, 52, 57, 58. Tomeković, 'Eveques locaux' (note 2), refers to a gallery of portraits of popes at San Crisogono, 67 note 2. But this is an exaggeration. See M. Mesnard, *La basilique de Sainte-Chrysogone à Rome* (Vatican, 1935) 110.

<sup>46</sup> Ladner, loc. cit. (note 45).

<sup>47</sup> Pliny, *Histoire naturelle*, translated M. E. Littré, II (Paris, 1883), 463—464.

<sup>48</sup> G. Fuchs, 'Zur Baugeschichte der Basilika Aemilia in republikanischer Zeit', *Mitteilungen des Deutschen Archäologischen Instituts, römische Abteilung* 63 (1956), 19—20, pl. 8.

<sup>49</sup> Dvornik, 'Idea of Apostolicity' (note 13), 42; J. Wilpert, *Die römischen Mosaiken und Malereien* (Freiburg im Breisgau, 1917) III, 560 ff.

<sup>50</sup> Ladner, *Ritratti* (note 10), 54—55.

<sup>51</sup> *Liber pontificalis* (note 39), I, 239, 240.

cularly suited to the decoration of these basilicas with pictures setting forth the claim of Rome to be *the* apostolic see. At the council of Chalcedon, with its 28th canon, the rivalry of Constantinople and Rome was expressed in the two opposing theories of the way in which the prestige of a local Church was determined. Constantinople based its claims on the fact that it was the imperial capital and the New Rome. Old Rome, in the person of Leo I, for the first time invoked the Petrine claims to justify its superiority as a see to Constantinople.<sup>52</sup>

The evidence, sparse though it is, favours the view that the pretensions of a local Church were, when expressed in imagery, directly attached in the early Christian period to the cult of the founder-bishop or protector of the see. There may have been a break with this tradition in the 9th century, both in the West and in the East. Pope Leo III (795—816) marked his rupture with the Byzantine imperial court and his quest for a new relationship with Charlemagne and his successors by building two *triclinia* at Saint John Lateran.<sup>53</sup> Both were decorated with mosaics. In one there were scenes of the apostles preaching to the Gentiles. In the other, known in part from later copies, there was an apse scene of the Mission of the Apostles, while, to one side on the triumphal arch, Saint Peter was represented investing Charlemagne with the vexillum and Leo III with the pallium.<sup>54</sup> What should be particularly noted is that Saint Peter himself is also wearing the pallium. Thus Leo III is confirmed as the successor of Saint Peter, while Charlemagne receives the office of protector of the Universal Church, particularly the Roman Church.<sup>55</sup> Essentially the imagery is traditional. What is new is that it has been transferred from a shrine to a seat of government, that is to say to the papal palace and cathedral. The decoration of these two *triclinia* was the starting point for a whole series of Roman programmes, in which the central theme is no longer the cult of Saint Peter but rather the authority of the current occupant of the see of Rome.<sup>56</sup>

The echelon of bishops in Saint Sophia, Constantinople, dates from later in the 9th century, probably from the years after the earthquake of

<sup>52</sup> Dvornik, *op. cit.* 98.

<sup>53</sup> Ch. Walter, 'Papal Political Imagery in the Medieval Lateran Palace', *Cahiers archéologiques* 20 (1970), 157—160, 170—176.

<sup>54</sup> *Ibid.*, 158, fig. 1. No certainty can be given as to the subject of mosaic on the other side of the triumphal arch, although Grimaldi reported a tradition that it had been Saint Paul. This is plausible, the more so that in the nearby church of San Clemente, consecrated in 1128, when, presumably, the *triclinium* mosaic was still extant, Saint Peter and Paul figure to either side of the triumphal arch. G. Matthiae, *Mosaici medioevali delle chiese di Roma* (Rome, 1967), I, 279—304, II, pl. 228. The authenticity of the drawing upon which the later restoration was based, was already doubted by contemporaries, E. Mintz, 'Notes sur les mosaïques chrétiennes de l'Italie 8. Le triclinium du Latran et Léon III', *Revue archéologique* (1884), 9—12. H. Belting makes no reference to this article, nor to mine, in his paper, 'I mosaici dell'anfa leonina come testimonianza della prima "renovatio" nell'arte medievale di Roma', *Roma e l'Età Carolingia* (Rome, 1976), 169—182. Moreover, he accepts apparently without question the authenticity of the later restoration.

<sup>55</sup> G. B. Ladner, 'Aspects of Medieval Thought on Church and State', *Review of Politics* 9 (1947), 406.

<sup>56</sup> Walter, 'Papal Political Imagery' (note 53), continued in *Cahiers archéologiques de l'Institut des Hautes Études de Rome* 21 (1971), 109—136. It may be noted that a series of portraits of popes was later represented in Saint John Lateran under pope Nicolas III (1277—1280). Ladner, *Ritratti* (note 10), 20, 21 (1971), 109—136. Meanwhile a series of portraits of bishops of Ravenna had been represented in the Cathedral Ursiana, dated 1112, Deichmann, *Ravenna Hauptstadt* (note 3), II, 1, 9.

869.<sup>57</sup> Without being the formal answer of the Constantinopolitan Church to the Roman claim to primacy as expressed in Leo III's mosaics, it nevertheless well exemplifies the very different way in which Eastern ecclesiology was developing. Whereas the programme of Leo III's mosaics gives universal force to the claims of a local Church, the programme in Saint Sophia gives universal force to the claims of the whole communion of bishops. In the *triclinium* the pope alone figures as the successor to Saint Peter. In Saint Sophia, the whole college of bishops figures as succeeding to the college of apostles.

The constitution of an echelon of bishops can be traced in the preceding dialectics in the form of imagery.<sup>58</sup> It was, it seems, during the reign of Justinian (527–565) that the practice began of displaying publicly pictures of orthodox bishops and destroying pictures of those who were considered to be heterodox. The latest testimony to this practice dates from the reign of Theodosius III (715–717), who replaced a picture at the Mlion of the third council of Constantinople destroyed by Philippicus (711–713).<sup>59</sup> The absence of further testimonies may suggest that, with the triumph of Orthodoxy, a synthesis had been achieved. The echelon of saintly bishops began to figure regularly in Eastern church decorative programmes below the angels, prophets and apostles. It may be suggested tentatively that, although this practice became general, it was likely to have been originally conceived for the decoration of cathedrals.

Once the echelon of saintly bishops had become a regular theme of Byzantine apse decoration, new ways had to be invented of setting forth the status and claims of a local Church. The most common practice was to introduce saintly bishops who received a local cult among those who were universally venerated in the Byzantine Church.<sup>60</sup> Usually they were ancient

<sup>57</sup> C. Mango & E. J. W. Hawkins, 'The Mosaics of Saint Sophia at Istanbul. The Church Fathers in the North Tympanum', *Dumbarton Oaks Papers* 28 (1972), 1–41. Ch. Delvoye, 'La signification des monarques posticonclastes de Sainte-Sophie de Constantinople', *Problèmes d'histoire du christianisme* 9 (1980), *Hommages à Jean Haude*, 45–55 (presented briefly at the Byzantine Congress in Vienna, 1981), gives a further explanation (presented briefly at the Byzantine Congress in Vienna, 1981), gives a further explanation of the reasons for choosing individual bishops, but has little new to add with regard to the over-riding criteria.

<sup>58</sup> Walter, *Art and Ritual* (note 1), 169–170, where all the literary references known to me are given. The reference in the *Panareteis* to the Arians destroying images of Metrophanes, Alexander and Paul in the Forum of Constantinople, together with an icon of the Virgin and Child, dates from after 741, and is probably anachronistic. C. Mango, *The Art of the Byzantine Empire*, 312–1452 (Englewood Cliffs, N.J., 1972), 16.

<sup>59</sup> Ch. Walter, *L'ionographie des conciles dans la tradition byzantine* (Paris, 1970), 20–21. R. Cormack has suggested that there may, in fact, have been inscriptions at the Milton, like those in the church of the Nativity, Bethlehem, rather than pictures, 'The Arts during the Age of Iconoclasm', *Iconologia*, edited A. Bryer & Judith Herrin (Birmingham, 1977), 42. Further evidence of the 'dialectic' use of imagery may be available at Faras, Nubia, where the local Church was Monophysite until ca. 1000. Bishop John then introduced the Melkite rite. In their portraits, bishops Cyrus (866–902) and Peter (973–999) are wearing the *samia*. Marian (1005–1037) is represented without the *samia*.

<sup>60</sup> See T. Gogolowski, 'Z problematyki ikonografii biskupów Pachoras', *Rocznik Muzeum Narodowego w Warszawie* 11 (1967), 175–191; K. Michałowski, 'Open problems of Nubian Art and Culture in the Light of the Discoveries at Faras', *Kunst und Geschichte Nubiens in christlicher Zeit*, edited E. Dinkler (Recklinghausen, 1970), 14.

<sup>61</sup> Tomković, 'Évêques locaux', (note 2), 73–88.

bishops, although occasionally more recent local bishops were chosen.<sup>61</sup> The general sense of the inclusion of local saintly bishops among the others must be that the local Church was in communion with the other orthodox Churches.

The most original adaptation of the echelon of bishops to the situation of a local Church was that of the church of Saint Sophia, Ohrid.<sup>62</sup> Here, as Grabar justly remarked, the choice and number of bishops represented was inspired not by the claims of Ohrid to autocephaly as Prima Justiniana but by its recent reintegration into the Constantinopolitan sphere of influence.<sup>63</sup> In this respect its situation resembled that of Ravenna in the 6th century. However, whereas the Church was conceived in Justinian's time as the *okoumenē*, in which the emperor had a leading rôle, in the 11th century its structure was entirely clerical. In Saint Sophia, Ohrid, the principal bishops represented are John Chrysostom as exemplar of wisdom and Basil of Caesarea as author of the principal Constantinopolitan liturgy.<sup>64</sup> Unlike other echelons of saintly bishops in apse programmes, that in Saint Sophia, Ohrid, is not inspired uniquely by their cult. An explicitly ecclesiastical significance may be attributed to their choice and disposition. The patriarchs of the Pentarchy are all represented, with pride of place given to the saintly bishops of Constantinople.<sup>65</sup> Two local bishops, Cyril the Philosopher and Clement of Ohrid, are relegated to an unimportant place on the

<sup>61</sup> Desanka Milosević, 'Ikoneografija svetoga Save u srednjem veku', *Savv Nemanjić — Sveti Sava, isvorja i predanje*, edited V. Đurić (Belgrade, 1979), 279–315. There have so far been published only two examples of recently dead Greek bishops figuring among those who officiate at the altar. One, Michael Choniates, Patriarch of Peć, Kaliva-Kouvara has long been known. Narsika Comnati-Panselinon, *Saint Pierre de Kaliva-Kouvara et la chapelle de la Vierge de Mèrena* (Thessaloniki, 1976), 67–70, pls. 11–12. The other, of John Kaloktetes of Thebes (12th century) in the crypt of Saint Nicolas, Kambia (Beroe), was published recently by Maria Panagiotidé, *Oι τοπογραφίες της Χρυσόποιας Νικολάου στη Κάμβια της Βορείας, Actes du 15e congrès international d'études byzantines Athènes 1976*, II, *Art et Archéologie, Communications* (Athens, 1981), 601, 614, fig. 5. John Kaloktetes of Thebes figures frequently in the correspondence of the patriarchs of Constantinople. He was also considered to be a saint by so elevated a personality as Gregory Palamas, *Regester des actes du patriarche de Constantinople*, Index sub nomine. For Slav bishops recently dead, see below note 67.

<sup>62</sup> V. Đurić, *Vizantijske freske u Jugoslaviji* (Belgrade, 1974), 9–10, with earlier bibliography, especially S. Radić, 'Prilozi za istoriju naštarajućeg ohridskog slikarstva', *ZRV* 1/82 (1964), 355–381; Ann Wharton Epstein, 'The Political Content of the Paintings of Saint Sophia at Ohrid', *Jahrbuch der österreichischen Byzantinistik* 29 (1980), 315–329; Walter, *Art and Ritual* (note 1), 175–176, 193–198.

<sup>63</sup> Grabar, 'Deux témoignages' (note 17), 166–168. Ann Epstein, *art. cit.* (note 62), develops Grabar's thesis, but carries it too far. Strictly the pictures have no 'political' content, for their themes are entirely religious, although no doubt Leo's appointment to Ohrid was intended to facilitate the political reintegration of the city into the Byzantine Empire. Epstein fails to notice the local bishops (see note 67 below). Her interpretation of the Christ child as a deacon in the apse, as well as of the Communion of the Apostles, is open to doubt. Finally, the scene on the north wall of the sanctuary next to that of the *Triclinium* celebrating the liturgy can now only be understood as John Chrysostom receiving the gift of wisdom, C. Grozdanov, 'Sljka sviljanja premudrosti sv. Jovana Zlatoustom u sv. Sofiji Ohridskoj', *ZRV* 19 (1980), 147–155.

<sup>64</sup> Walter, *Art and Ritual* (note 1), 193–196.

<sup>65</sup> Radić, 'Prilozi' (note 62), 365–369.

south wall of the diaconicon.<sup>66</sup> Thus the latent autocephaly of Ohrid was strictly contained!

A new situation arose in the late Byzantine epoch, for which no exact analogy exists in Eastern Christendom in the pre-Iconoclast period, when a claim to autocephaly was associated with national autonomy. So far as the national Church was concerned, such a claim did not imply the rupture of ecclesiastical communion with Constantinople. On the contrary, local saintly bishops — Cyril the Philosopher, Clement of Ohrid, Sava I and Arsenije of Serbia — were represented concelebrating with the saintly bishops of the Constantinopolitan Church.<sup>67</sup> Thus the theme of apse programmes remained the cult of the communion of orthodox bishops.

When an explicitly ecclesiological notion concerning the status of a national Church had to be expressed in pictorial form, this was done in the narthex or at least not in the apse. A local bishop might be represented wearing the *sakkos*, a vestment originally reserved to patriarchs of Constantinople but later extended to major archbishops.<sup>68</sup> Nicolas Cabasilas of Ohrid was represented in the church of Saint Clement wearing the *sakkos* in 1295. Sava I, founder of the Serbian autocephalous Church, was represented wearing the *sakkos* in the Bogorodica Ljeviška, Prizren (1308/9).<sup>69</sup> Other vestments could also serve as a sign of the prestige of a local bishop. Thus, in the church of the Dormition, Volotovo (ca. 1380), Moses and Alexius of Novgorod were represented wearing a phelonion decorated with crosses, although the patriarch Philorheus of Constantinople had expressly forbidden Alexius to wear this vestment.<sup>70</sup>

Another way of expressing the claims of the local Church was to represent a series of bishops in the narthex. For the late Byzantine period, all the surviving examples are in Serbian churches.<sup>71</sup> The absence of analogies elsewhere makes it difficult to determine the exact significance in every case. The earliest series of portraits of Serbian archbishops was executed in the South Chapel of the shrine of Symeon Nemanja at Studenica (1233—1235).<sup>72</sup> The anachronism of placing it in a shrine may be explained by the exceptional veneration offered by the Serbian nation to the Nemanjić dynasty.

<sup>66</sup> *Ibid.*, 368; C. Grozdanov, 'Pojava i prodor portreta Klimenta Ohridskog u srednjovjekovnoj umetnosti', *Zbornik za likovne umetnosti*, 3 (1967), 53—55.

<sup>67</sup> Mirjana Čorović-Ljabinović, 'Održaz kultu Cirila i Metodija u balkanskoj srednjovjekovnoj umetnosti', *Simpozijum 1100 godišnjina od smrti na Karił Solunski*, I (Skopje, 1970); 123—130; Milošević, 'Iconography sv. Save' (note 61), 290, 299—300; Walter, *Art and Ceremonial* (note 1), 107—108, 223—224. One of the officiating bishops in the apse of Sopocić is generally identified by Serbian scholars as Sava II (1263—1271). They date the decoration of the church to his lifetime, Đurić, *Vizantijiske freske* (note 62), 196 note 41. However, the argument is tenuous, for no other example is known of a living bishop being represented among those who officiate in the apse.

<sup>68</sup> Walter, *Art and Ritual*, (note 1), 16—19.

<sup>69</sup> C. Grozdanov, 'Prilozi poznавању средњевековне уметности Охрида', *Zbornik za likovne umetnosti*, 2 (1966); 199—207; Dragi Pančić & Gordana Bašić, *Bogorodica Ljeviška* (Beograd, 1975), 129, pl. 4.

<sup>70</sup> V. Lazarev, *Old Russian Murals and Mosaics* (London, 1966), 165—166, figs. 140—142; Regester (note 61) nos. 2364, 2583; Walter, *Art and Ceremony* (note 1), 14—15.

<sup>71</sup> Gordana Babić, 'Nizovi portreti srpskih episkopa, arhiepiskopa i patrijaraha u zidnim slikarstvu (13—16 v.)', *Sava Nemanjić* (note 61), 319—340.

<sup>72</sup> *Ibid.*, 320—321.

The series of portraits of Serbian archbishops in the cathedral churches of Arilje (1226) and Prizren (1307—1313) affirm that the local Church is in communion with the other Serbian eparchies.<sup>73</sup> When a series of local bishops figured there as well, as at Arilje and Prizren, then the independent traditions of the local eparchy were affirmed along with its juridical subordination to the Serbian major archbishops.

In conclusion it may be suggested that the use of imagery to affirm the status and claims of a local Church was always the exception rather than the rule. In the earlier period these claims were invariably related to the cult of the saintly patron or patrons of the local see and the pictures expressing these claims were placed in their shrine. Evidence is available from the 9th century of divergences in the use of imagery in the East and West to set forth the rôle of the Church in the divine providential plan. In the Constantinopolitan sphere of influence, emphasis was placed upon the communion of all orthodox bishops, whereas in Rome it was placed on the privileged status of the local 'apostolic' see. In Byzantine iconography, the cult of the whole communion of orthodox bishops becomes the central theme of apse decoration. When a local Church gave a special interpretation to this universal theme, it did so in order to emphasize the fact that it was in communion with other orthodox bishops. Pictures expressing the judicial status of the local Church were placed elsewhere than in the apse of the church, normally in the narthex. Thus the distinction regularly made in ecclesiastical matters between the orthodoxy and communion of local Churches on the one hand and their respective canonical status on the other was also made in the decoration of churches, both in the choice of iconographical themes and in their emplacement.

<sup>73</sup> *Ibid.*, 335—340.

### THREE NOTES ON THE ICONOGRAPHY OF DIONYSIUS THE AREOPAGITE

Among the hagiographical traditions of the Byzantine Church that which concerns Dionysius the Areopagite is not the least complex.<sup>1</sup> The beginnings are, indeed, modest. Dionysius is mentioned once in the Acts of the Apostles 17,34, as a follower of Saint Paul. Eusebius recorded a tradition that, according to Dionysius of Corinth (fl. 17), he was appointed the first bishop of Athens<sup>2</sup>. This was also noted in the Apostolic Constitutions<sup>3</sup>. However the situation changed when the *Corpus dionysiaca* appeared some time before 533<sup>4</sup>. Some of those works, notably the *De divinis nominibus* and the Letter to Polycarp, contain biographical details which were developed in two later texts, doubly spurious, the Letter to Apollophanes and the Autobiography. From John of Scythopolis' *scholion* to a passage in the *De divinis nominibus* the tradition spread that Dionysius had been present at the Dormition of the Virgin. Finally, when Dionysius had been identified with the founder bishop of Paris and the *Post beatiam* translated into Greek, information became available about his Western apostolate and his martyrdom.

1. There is no full study of the hagiographical tradition of Dionysius in the East. Both the late R. Loenertz and P. Canart intended to undertake such a study but were regrettably obliged to set it aside. Some texts — possibly important — remain unpublished : *BIGG* 555c, d, e, m, 556b, 557. Only those which are published are exploited here. From the plethora of general studies of (Pseudo-) Dionysius the Areopagite may be cited : M. DE GANDILLAC, *Oeuvres complètes du Pseudo-Denys l'Areopagite*, Paris 1943, Introduction, p. 7-60 ; Denys l'Areopagite (le Pseudo), *Dictionnaire de spiritualité* 3, 244-430, especially A. RAYEZ, Utilisation du Pseudo-Denys en Orient, 286-318 ; G. O'DAHL, Dionysius Areopagita, *Theologische Realenzyklopädie* 8, 772-780.
2. EUSEBÉ DE CÉSARÈE, *Histoire ecclésiastique*, IV, xxiii, edited G. BARDY, Paris 1952, p. 203 = PG 20, 385 (*Clavis* 3495).
3. *Constitutions apostolicae*, 7, 46 : PG 1, 1053 (*Clavis* 1730).
4. DE GANDILLAC, op. cit. (note 1), p. 14.

Although Dionysius the Areopagite never rivaled the Three Hierarchs in the esteem of the Byzantine Church and although he was less appreciated as a theologian in the East than in the West, nevertheless he had a certain standing. He was introduced into the Byzantine calendar of feasts about 800<sup>5</sup>. He figures among the bishops named in the Letter to the Three Patriarchs<sup>6</sup>, as well as in Ode 9 for the Saturday τῆς Τριῶν in the *Triodion* along with his teacher Hierotheus<sup>7</sup>. In the Letter attributed to Photius addressed to the Armenian catholicos Zacharias he is also counted among the Greek bishops who evangelized the world<sup>8</sup>. Ulpian the Roman provided a description of his features which also appears in the *Synaxaria* and the *Menaiā*<sup>9</sup>. Later he merited the distinction of a Metaphrastic Life and quotation by Euthymius Zigabenus in his *Panoplia dogmatica*<sup>10</sup>.

In consequence representations of him in Byzantine art are fairly frequent. He appeared in the echelon of bishops in Saint Sophia, in illuminated manuscripts of the October volume of Metaphrastic Lives, in the Lectionary Vatican grae. 1156, f. 255<sup>v</sup>, in Menologia, wall-calendars and in two manuscripts of Zigabenus's *Panoplia*. However I have only recorded one example of him among the officiating bishops in apse programmes<sup>11</sup>. Most of these pictures are conventional portraits or scenes of decapitation. Yet three iconographical themes, derived from the apocryphal texts about his life, depart from the ordinary. These are his vision at Heliopolis, his presence at the Dormition of the Virgin and the prodigy which occurred at his death when he picked up his head and carried it two *millia*. It is with these themes that the following notes are concerned.

### 1. THE VISION AT HELIOPOLIS

The Chludov Psalter contains three miniatures of the Crucifixion : f. 45<sup>v</sup>, f. 67 and f. 72<sup>12</sup>. The first of the three miniatures differs from

5. V. GRUMEL, Autour de la question pseudo-dionysienne, *REB* 13, 1955, p. 48.  
6. L. DUCHESNE, L'Iconographie byzantine dans un document grec du 9<sup>e</sup> siècle, *Roma e Oriente* 5, 1912-1913, p. 354.

7. *Triodion*, Rome 1879, p. 96.

8. Ch. WALTER, *Art and Ritual of the Byzantine Church*, London 1982, p. 173.

9. See below, note 68.

10. *PG* 130, 19-1362.

11. At Staro Nagoričino, Gordana BABIĆ and Ch. WALTER, The Inscriptions upon Liturgical Rolls in Byzantine Apse Decoration, *REB* 34, 1976, p. 275; R. HAMANN-MAC LEAN and H. HALLENLEBEN, *Die Monumentalmalerei in Serbien und Makedonien*, Giessen 1963, fig. 280.

12. Maria ŠČERKINA, *Miniatjuri Hudovskoj Psaltirjy ...*, Moscow 1977, at folio number.

the other two in several respects (figure 1). Only in this one is Christ flanked by two other crucified figures, one to the right with his head hanging down and the other to the left looking up at Christ. The latter figure must be the Good Thief. It therefore follows that the artist sought his inspiration for this miniature in Saint Luke's Gospel 23,33 ..., for only Luke recounts the incident of the Good Thief.

Only in this miniature is the scene of the Crucifixion augmented by two other groups of figures. To the right, beside the centurion, is a group of figures, two of whom are represented wearing the *loros*. Yet further to the right is another group composed of three figures. Two, engaged in conversation, are bearded and of mature age ; one holds three *codices* in his left hand. Behind them, partly concealed by the figure to the right, is a youth who looks towards the Crucifixion, his right hand extended in that direction. In the margin beside this group is a legend : ΕΛΛΗΝΕΣ ΗΤΟΥΝ ΔΙΟΝΥΣΙΟΣ<sup>13</sup>.

No other marginal Psalter is illustrated with the full scene, although the Crucifixion is represented beside the same Psalm in the Barberini and Hamilton Psalters<sup>14</sup>. Nor has the full scene survived elsewhere in Byzantine art. It is a *hapax* and, as such, not susceptible of an absolutely certain interpretation. Tikkannen and Kondakov both drew attention to it, but Malickij was the first to read the name of Dionysius and to refer the miniature to his vision at Heliopolis<sup>15</sup>. However, he wrongly connected it with Psalm 45,4 : « The mountains have been troubled by this night. » In fact there is an indicative sign beside verse 7 : « The nations were troubled ; the kingdoms tottered. He uttered his voice ; the earth shook. »

The earliest account of the vision at Heliopolis is to be found in Dionysius's Letter to Polycarp<sup>16</sup>. According to this he witnessed an eclipse of the sun which could not be explained as a natural phenomenon. Later, on meeting Saint Paul in Athens, Dionysius discovered that the eclipse had occurred exactly at the time of Christ's death, corresponding to the account in Saint Luke's Gospel 23,44-45 : there was darkness from the sixth hour (midday) for three

13. ΕΛΛΥΕΣ ἦτούν Διονύσιος. Neither Tikkannen nor Malickij nor even Ščerkina (although it is clearly legible in her illustration of the miniature) transcribed this legend correctly.

14. J. ANDERSON, P. CANART and Ch. WALTER, *The Barberini Psalter*, Stuttgart 1989, at f. 79<sup>v</sup>; Ch. WALTER, Christological Themes in the Byzantine Marginal Psalters, *REB* 44, 1986, p. 275; Suzy DUFRENNE, *Tables synoptiques des 15 psaltiers médiévaux*, Paris 1978, at Psalm 45.

15. J. J. TIKKANNEN, *Die Psalmenillustration im Mittelalter*, Helsingfors 1895-1900, reprinted, Soest 1975, p. 58 ; N. MALICKIJ, Remarques sur la date des mosaïques de l'église des Saint-Apôtres à Constantinople, décrites par Mésarites, *Byz.* 3, 1926, p. 145-146.

16. *PG* 3, 1077-1084 (*Clavis* 6610).

hours, the sun having disappeared. The passage in the Letter to Polycarp was commented in a *scholion* by John of Scytopolis<sup>17</sup> and developed later in the Letter to Apollophanes<sup>18</sup>.

The connection between the Psalm verse, the miniature and Dionysius's vision is so far somewhat tenuous, being limited to the fact that the texts refer to the account of the phenomenon in Luke's Gospel and that the miniature derives from Luke's account of the Crucifixion. In the Psalm verse there is no reference to an eclipse. The connection becomes considerably stronger if another text attributed to Dionysius is taken into consideration, the account of the vision in the Autobiography. This work, which has not survived in Greek, is nevertheless known in Coptic, Syriac, Armenian, Arabic and Georgian.<sup>19</sup> Kugener published two recensions of the Syrian text, one of which is in a manuscript dated 804.<sup>20</sup> According to this, Dionysius, in spite of his youth, was sent from Athens to judge a priest at Heliopolis in Syria. While everyone was assembled in the theatre, there was a great earthquake, the sun was obscured and there was darkness from the sixth to the ninth hour<sup>21</sup>.

"I saw", Dionysius added, "with the eye of the spirit, Christ hanging from the cross in the land of Judaea. I learnt that he was the god who had become incarnate."<sup>22</sup>

Dionysius returned to Athens. Fourteen years later, when Saint Paul visited the city, he heard the account of Christ's death, of the eclipse, the earthquake and the God who died in the flesh.<sup>23</sup>

The author of the Autobiography has evidently borrowed from the more developed accounts in Saint Matthew's and Saint Mark's Gospels of the phenomena which occurred at the time of Christ's death. Now it is clear that the connection between the miniature, the Autobiography and the Psalm verse is the earthquake: "The earth shook." Moreover it can be established that a Greek version of the



Figure 1. — Vision of Dionysius, Chludov Psalter, f. 45v.

17. PG 4, 536-541 (*Clavis* 6852, 7708).

18. PG 3, 1119-1122; cf. PL 106, 33-34 (*Clavis* 6630); P. CANART, En marge de la question aréopagite : La lettre XI de Denys à Apollophane, *Byz.*, 41, 1971, p. 18-27.

19. P. PEREIRA, La vision de Denys l'Aréopagite à Héliopolis, *An. Bell.* 29, 1910, p. 302-322; IDEM, La version géorgienne de l'autobiographie de Denys l'Aréopagite, *Ibidem* 31, 1912, p. 5-10; IDEM, La version ibéro-arménienne de l'autobiographie de Denys l'Aréopagite, *Ibidem* 39, 1921, p. 277-313.

20. M. A. KUGENER, Une autobiographie syriaque de Denys l'Aréopagite, *Oriens christianus* 7, 1907, p. 292-348 (*Clavis* 6633). The two recensions are contained in London British Library Additional 12151 ('A', dated 804) and 14645 ('B', dated 936).

21. *Ibidem*, recension 'A', § 8, p. 303.

22. *Ibidem*, § 10, p. 307.

23. *Ibidem*, § 12-13, p. 309-311.

Autobiography existed as early as the first decades of the ninth century, for Michael the Syncellus used it in his panegyric on Dionysius. Before quoting lengthily from the Letter to Polyarp, he summarizes the account of the phenomena in the Autobiography, giving only one phrase *verbālē*: ‘Ο δύωτος, ἐπον, σαρπὶ τάχει Θεός, διὰ τὸ πᾶν ἐξέφωται τε καὶ σεσκέυεται (The unknown God suffers in the flesh, on account of which the universe is deprived of light, and shaken)’<sup>24</sup>.

This phrase, while corresponding to the Syriac, seems closest to the Coptic, which Peeters rendered thus: *Omnis istiae terrae molus et astrorum perturbatio quae acciderunt propter Deum qui crucifixus est*<sup>25</sup>. Grabar remarked on its relevance to the Iconophile cause<sup>26</sup>. If Michael the Syncellus composed the panegyric between 821 and 833, then we have a *terminus ante quem* for the composition of the Greek version of the Autobiography<sup>27</sup>.

To return to the miniature, it may now be possible to elucidate other problems that it poses. The group in the centre no doubt represents the troubled nations and tottering kingdoms, but who are the figures to the right? The legend beside them can only be translated: “(The) Greeks, that is to say Dionysius.” The words may be part of a phrase of which the rest is obliterated. Nevertheless they affirm that one of the figures is Dionysius. Which one? Now in the account of the vision in the Autobiography only one person actually sees Christ hanging on the cross, Dionysius himself. Equally only one figure is actually looking towards and pointing at the scene of the Crucifixion, the young man standing behind the two others. It is affirmed in the Autobiography that Dionysius was young when he visited Heliopolis. There are consequently reasons for arguing that the young man is, in fact, Dionysius.

Who, then, are the other two? In the Autobiography, the elucidation of the phenomena which occurred fourteen years earlier is placed more or less in parallel to the actual account of them. It may be that the parallel is taken up in the miniature. In other words, Dionysius may be represented twice. The figure wearing a mantle and holding three scrolls, who partly obscures the youthful figure, would be the mature Dionysius. He would be explaining to a Greek, no doubt Apollophanes, the cause of his conversion<sup>28</sup>.

24. PG 4, 625-628 (*BHG* 566).

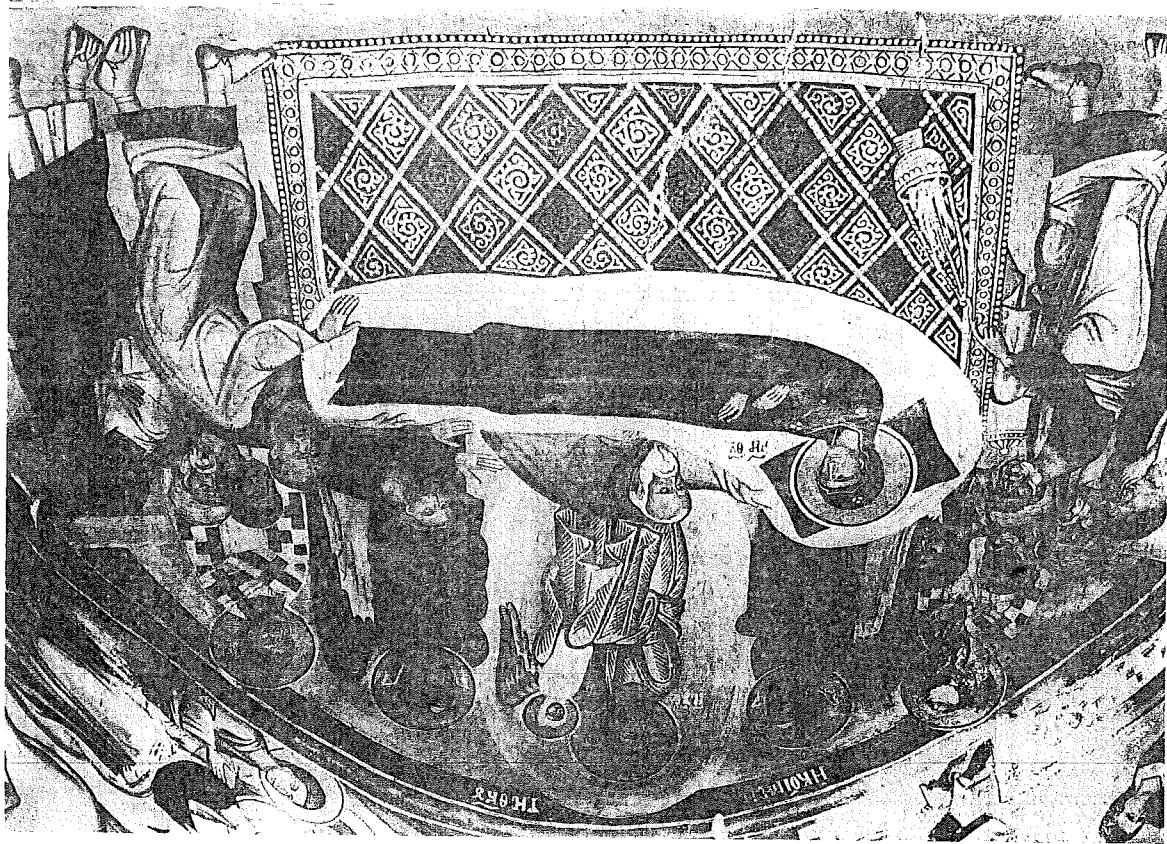
25. PEETERS, *art. cit.*, 1910 (note 19), p. 304.

26. A. GRABAR, *L'Iconoclasmie byzantin*, Paris 1957, p. 230.

27. R. LOENERZ, Le panégyrique de S. Denis l'Aéopagite par S. Michel le Syncelle, *An. Boll.* 68, 1950, p. 97.

28. Cf. the account in the *Souda* (*BHG* 558), *Suidae Lexikon*, edited Ada ADLER, II, Leipzig 1931, p. 106-109 = PG 4, 608-612.

Figure 2. — Dormition, Hypsistene, Meteora.



Since the miniature is a *hapax*, this explanation remains conjectural, but at least it takes into account all the elements of its perplexing iconography.

## 2. THE PRESENCE OF DIONYSIUS AT THE DORMITION OF THE VIRGIN

Although good studies of the iconography of the Dormition exist, they do not enter exhaustively into all its complexities.<sup>29</sup> The subject, for which the earliest surviving examples date from the tenth century, did not remain stable. New elements were successively introduced until, in the Palaeologan period, a whole cycle was developed, beginning with the annunciation to the Virgin of her imminent demise and ending with her corporal *metasasis* from earth to heaven. Artists, therefore, or their patrons, regularly had recourse to the rich apocryphal literature about the Dormition, borrowing from it new iconographical details.

The earliest dated example of the Dormition in which bishops

figure is that in the church of Saint Sophia, Ohrid (1037-1056).<sup>30</sup>

Subsequently — and possibly earlier<sup>31</sup> — they are represented, either mourning or participating in the funeral rites. There may be four, three or two bishops; rarely there is only one.<sup>32</sup> It is well known that their presence was also inspired by the literary sources. Globally they can be identified as Dionysius the Areopagite and Hierotheus of Athens, James Adelphothoeos of Jerusalem and Timothy of Ephesus. However, when it comes to identifying the individual bishops, art historians are hesitant or speculative.

Here are some examples, taken more or less at random, of identifications proposed. At Asinou (1105/6) there are two bishops, one with dark hair and a short rounded beard, the other with white hair and a longer pointed beard. Cormack suggested that "perhaps the older figure with a white beard is Saint James and the other Dionysius". On the other hand for the Dormition at Lagoudera (1192), where there are three bishops all represented with the same

features, white hair and a medium pointed beard, Cormack refrained from an identification.<sup>33</sup> For the Dormition at Kurbinovo (1191), where there are two bishops, one with grey hair and a shortish beard and the other with dark hair and a rounded beard, Hademann-Misgrich wrote that "ces prélates... dont Denys l'Areopagite... Jacques, premier évêque de Jérusalem, ainsi qu'éventuellement Hérothée et Timothée"<sup>34</sup>. For the Dormition in the King's church at Studenica (1314), where one bishop has a long, forked grey beard and the other shaggy hair and a beard, Babic proposed Dionysius and James Adelphothoeos.<sup>35</sup>

For the Dormition in the Kariye Cami (1315-1320/1), two different interpretations may be noted. Del Medico proposed for the two bishops to the left, one of whom is bald with a long pointed beard and the other of whom has full grey hair and a beard, Dionysius and Hierotheus respectively, while for the bishop to the right, with a short dark beard and hair, he proposed Timothy.<sup>36</sup> Underwood, however, with the proviso that bishops in Dormition scenes cannot be firmly identified because they vary from picture to picture, suggested that the bishop holding a book was James Adelphothoeos while one of the others was probably meant to be Dionysius.<sup>37</sup>

These examples illustrate well Underwood's point that there is not absolute consistency in the portrait types of bishops in Dormition scenes any more than there is consistency in the number represented. This may be because artists were sometimes ignorant of or indifferent to the identity of the bishops. Another reason might be that there was a variety of iconographical traditions. Nevertheless it seems that, if all the literary and iconographical evidence is taken into consideration, artists can be shown to have been in many cases both conversant with the legends of the Dormition and exact in their representation of the bishops concerned. A survey of the material will entail a revision of the identifications proposed for some of pictures which have just been cited.

The presence of bishops at the Dormition is attested in two apocryphal traditions which develop parallel and then converge. Legends about the Dormition first appear in the fifth and sixth centuries.<sup>38</sup> A liturgical feast of the Dormition became widespread in

29. Ludmila WRATISLAW-Mirnović and N. OKURAY, La Dormition de la Sainte Vierge dans la peinture médiévale orthodoxe, *Byzantinoslavica* 3, 1931, p. 134-174; Karoline KREMLE-PAPADOPOULOS, Koimasis, *Lexikon zur byzantinischen Kunst* 4, 136-182.

30. V. ĐURĐIĆ, *Vizantijske freske u Jugoslaviji*, Belgrade 1974, p. 9-11, 197 note 3.

31. The Phocas Lectorary, with a miniature of the Dormition, is usually dated around 1000. See below note 79.

32. V. N. LAZAREV, *Istoriya bizantinskoi zhivopisi*, Moscow 1986, fig. 519, a 14th-century icon at Saint Catherine's Mount Sinai.

33. R. CORMACK, *Writing in Gold*, London 1985, p. 174, fig. 62-64.

34. Lydie HADERMANN-MISGRICH, *Kurbinovo*, Brussels 1975, p. 184.

35. Gordana BABIĆ, *Kratka crkva u Studenici*, Belgrade 1987, p. 166.

36. H. E. DEL MEDICO, La mosaïque de la *xolopogia* à Kahrije Djami, *Byz.* 7, 1932, p. 128-129.

37. P. A. UNDERWOOD, *The Kariye Djami*, New York 1966, p. 15 (date), n° 185, p. 166-167, fig. 320-327.

38. M. JUGIE, *La mort et l'assomption de la Sainte Vierge*, Vatican 1944, p. 103-171.

the early decades of the seventh century, inviting the composition of homilies for the occasion.<sup>39</sup> However the early texts make no allusion to the presence of bishops. The only reason for supposing at this stage that any bishop was present would be the attribution of one apocryphal account to James, bishop of Jerusalem.<sup>40</sup> Moreover many of the subsequent homilies also omit any reference to bishops. They are mentioned neither by John of Thessaloniki (fl.. 610-649)<sup>41</sup>, nor by Modestus of Jerusalem (died 634)<sup>42</sup>, nor by Germanus of Constantople (died 733)<sup>43</sup>, nor by John Damascene (died 749).<sup>44</sup>

Among the treatises which make up the *Corpus dionysiacaum* is the *De divinis nominibus*, addressed to the priest Timothy, which recounts how Dionysius, Hierotheus and James Adelphotheos met with others to contemplate «the body origin of life and residence of the divinity»<sup>45</sup>. As is well known, John of Scythopolis, commenting this passage in the sixth century, suggested that “perhaps” it referred to the body of the Virgin and that the occasion of the meeting was her Dormition.<sup>46</sup>

It is at this point that the two traditions first converge. That an eyewitness account of the Dormition existed was of moment to hagiographers. For Andrew of Crete (died 740) “perhaps” became certitude. In his homily on the Dormition he cited the passage from the *De divinis nominibus* with the names of the three episcopal witnesses, adding Timothy to their number.<sup>47</sup> The same passage was used in the *Historia euhymnata*, according to which “there were present with the apostles the holy apostle Timothy, first bishop of Ephesus, and Dionysius the Areopagite”. Hierotheus and James

39. *Ibidem*, p. 173-194.

40. *Ibidem*, p. 121-122.

41. *Clavis* 7924, *BHG* 1144. I wrote erroneously, *op. cit.* (note 8), p. 141 note 138, that John of Thessaloniki mentioned the presence of bishops.

42. *Clavis* 7876, *BHG* 1085.

43. *Clavis* 8010-8012, *BHG* 1119, 1135, 1155.

44. *Clavis* 8061-8063, *BHG* 1114, 1126n, 1089.

45. *PG* 3, 681 (*Clavis* 6602).

46. *PG* 4, 236 (*Clavis* 6852, 7708). JUGIE, *op. cit.* (note 38), p. 99-101, was quite certain that the passage does not refer to the Dormition!

47. *PG* 97, 1061-1068 (*Clavis* 8181, *BHG* 1122).

48. This text is most easily accessible in editions of John Damascene's homily, S. JEAN DAMASCENE, *Homélies sur la Nativité et la Dormition*, edited P. VOULÉT, Paris 1961, p. 168-175 = *PG* 96, 748-752. However, it exists independently in *Sinait. 491, f. 246v-251* (8th-9th century); A. WENGER, *L'assomption de la T. S. Vierge dans la tradition byzantine du v<sup>e</sup> au x<sup>e</sup> siècle*, Paris 1955, p. 136-139. E. HONIGMANN, *Juvénal f. 1961, p. 168-175* = *DOP* 5 1930, p. 270, dated it between 518 and 980. A probable *terminus post quem* would be John of Scythopolis's *scholion* (fl. 536-550), and the *terminus ante quem* the homilies of Cosmas Vestitor who knew the text (first half of the 9th century): WENGER, *op. cit.*, p. 137.

Adelphotheos are also mentioned, but their episcopal status is not stressed. The *Historia euhymnata* had the good fortune to be interpolated into John Damascene's homily in the second half of the ninth century; otherwise it might have been ignored.<sup>49</sup> As it was, the whole text is likely to have been one of the principal sources for the iconography of the Dormition.

Another text which may have been influential was the discourse of John the Geometer (died after 989).<sup>50</sup> Accepting the authenticity of the passage in the *De divinis nominibus*, as an account of the Dormition, he made full use of his imagination in developing it. He attributed considerable importance to the ceremonial aspect, stressing the rôle of the “hierarch” Hierotheus, but also referring to Dionysius, James Adelphotheos and Timothy. Symeon the Metaphrast also mentions all these names, although he calls only Timothy a bishop.<sup>51</sup> In the Synaxary of Constantinople, Dionysius, Hierotheus and Timothy are explicitly mentioned at the date of the feast of the Dormition, while in the Menaiā at the same date only James Adelphotheos is mentioned.<sup>52</sup> Later Nicephorus Callistus Xanthopoulos (ca 1256-ca 1335) mentions the presence of Dionysius, Hierotheus and Timothy, adding that James Adelphotheos was also there.<sup>53</sup>

In the parallel tradition for the Life of Dionysius himself, Michael Syncellus wrote in his panegyric that Dionysius was present at the Dormition with James Adelphotheos.<sup>54</sup> Symeon the Metaphrast mentions his presence too but names no other bishops.<sup>55</sup> The *Souda* makes no allusion to his presence at the Dormition,<sup>56</sup> nor does the Synaxary of Constantinople at the date of his feast (October 3rd).<sup>57</sup> However in the *Menaiā* for the same date the presence of Dionysius, Hierotheus and Timothy is mentioned in a *theotokion*.<sup>58</sup>

Curiously, although the presence of Hierotheus at the Dormition is noted in the Menologium of Basil II and the Synaxary of Constantinople at the date of his commemoration (October 4th),<sup>59</sup> no hagiographer in the Menaiā for the same date the presence of Dionysius,

49. JUGIE, *op. cit.* (note 38), p. 160-162, demonstrated that the passage is an interpolation.

50. WENGER, *op. cit.* (note 48), p. 185-205, 371-373 (*BHG* 1102g). See also V. LAURENT, Jean le Géomètre, *Catholicisme* 6, 604-606.

51. Reading for August 15th : *PG* 115, 547-550 (*BHG* 1047).

52. *Syn. CP*, 893 ; *Menaiā* 6, Rome 1901, p. 410.

53. *PG* 145, 812.

54. *PG* 4, 653-655.

55. Reading for October 3rd : *PG* 4, 593.

56. See above, note 28.

57. *Syn. CP*, 101-102.

58. *Menaiā* 1, Rome 1888, p. 329 ; compare *PG* 4, 584.

59. *PG* 117, 89 (*BHG* 75); *Syn. CP*, 103. See also V. GRUMEL, *Hierotheus, Catholicisme* 5, 728.

pher, not even Nicodemus Hagioireitus, thought of mentioning the presence of Timothy and James Adelphotheos in notices concerning their respective Lives<sup>60</sup>.

With such diversity in the texts, it is not surprising that there should be diversity in the iconography. Nevertheless some generalisations can be made. When only two bishops are represented, they are likely to be Dionysius and Timothy or Dionysius and James Adelphotheos. When three are represented, they are likely to be Dionysius, Hierotheus and Timothy<sup>61</sup>.

We may now consider the evidence provided by the tradition of portrait types outside pictures of the Dormition. Hierotheus is represented in the Menologium of Basil II p. 88, with white hair and a medium pointed beard<sup>62</sup>. There is little attempt at individualisation. James Adelphotheos is represented in the same manuscript, p. 131, with grey hair and a beard which is slightly shaggy<sup>63</sup>. This portrait is similar to the one in Vatican græc. 1679, f. 248<sup>v</sup>, and to the one at Hosios Loukas<sup>64</sup>. His portraits at Nereiditsy and in the Baltimore *Præcipitostolos*, W. 533, f. 89, while similar, are more individualized, for he now has a slight curl in the middle of his forehead (figure 5)<sup>65</sup>. Timothy in the Menologium of Basil II, p. 341, and in the similar miniature in the Baltimore Menologium, W. 521, f. 203, has dark short hair and a dark rounded beard<sup>66</sup>. He is

60. So far as I have been able to control them : Timothy BHG 1848, 1848b, 1848n; James Adelphotheos BHG 765, 766m.

61. Dionysius of Phourna gives these three bishops as figuring in representations of the Dormition : *Ἐγκυρία τῆς Κοιμήσεως τριῶν*, edited A. PAPADOURAKIS-KΕΡΑΜΕΙΟΣ, Saint Petersburg 1909, p. 144.

62. *Il Menologio di Basilio II*, edited C. SMAILAJOLO and P. FRANCHI DE' CAVALIERI, Vatican/Milan 1907, p. 88, also reproduced in illustration to J.-M. SAUGER, Geroteo, *Bibliotheca sanctorum* 6, 275-276. Hierotheus's features are similar in the Oxford Menologium, Bodleian gr. th. f. 1, f. 12 (1322-1340) : I. HURTER, *Corpus der byzantinischen Miniaturen-handschriften*, I, Oxford Bodleian Library 2, Stuttgart 1978, fig. 19. For other representations of Hierotheus, not easily explicable, see P. Mirović, *Monology*, Belgrade 1973, *sub nomine*. For Dionysius of Phourna, *ed. cil.* (note 61), p. 153, Hierotheus is to be represented as an old man with a long beard.

63. *Ed. cil.* (note 62).

64. Vatican græc. 1679 : Ch. WALTER, The Triumph of Saint Peter in the Church of Saint Clement at Ohrid and the Iconography of the Triumph of the Martyrs, *Zograf* 5, 1975, p. 31. Hosios Loukas : P. LАЗАРДЕС, *Le monastère de Hosios Loukas*, Athens 1987, fig. 22. For Dionysius of Phourna, *ed. cil.* (note 61), p. 154, James is to be represented as an old man with curly hair and a long beard.

65. Nereiditsy : V. N. LAZAREV, *Old Russian Manuscripts and Mosaics from the XI to the XVI Century*, London 1966, p. 117, fig. 94. Baltimore W. 533 : Sharpie DER VERSESSIAN, The Præcipitostolos of the Walters Art Gallery, *Gatherings in Honor of Dorothy E. Miner*, edited Ursula McCracken, Baltimore 1974, p. 43, fig. 1. Dorothy græc. 1613 : *ed. cil.* (note 62), p. 341. Baltimore W. 521 : WALTER, *op. cil.* (note 8), fig. 43 (with incorrect legend).



Figure 3. — Timothy and Paul, Baltimore *Præcipitostolos*, f. 239.



Figure 4. — Timothy, Dormition (detail), Omorphi Ekklesia, Athens.

represented four times in the Baltimore *Praxapostoles* with similar features (figure 3)<sup>67</sup>. Of these three bishops he has the most distinctive portrait type.

For Dionysius there is a detailed description in the text of Ulpian the Roman: white complexion, sallow skin, somewhat flat-nosed, puckered eyebrows, hollow eyes, (an air of) continual concentration, big ears, long grey hair, a fairly long beard of sparse growth<sup>68</sup>. The same text occurs in the Synaxary of Constantinople and in the *Menaiā*<sup>69</sup>. However, in spite of its accessibility, artists do not seem to have referred to it often. There is no resemblance, for example, between this description and any of the figures in the Chludov Psalter miniature, f. 45v (figure 1); Salzberg's drawing of the lost mosaic in Saint Sophia, Constantinople, is perhaps too academic to be reliable<sup>70</sup>; in the Menologium of Basil II, p. 82, Dionysius has grey hair and a short beard (figure 7)<sup>71</sup>. Later pictures, with one exception, are also disconcertingly different from Ulpian's description, as that in Moscow GIM græc. 175, f. 28, where he a dark beard and hair, or in the Vienna Metaphrast, *hist. græc.* 6, f. 3, where he has a longish dark beard and copious hair<sup>72</sup>. The exception is his portrait among the doctors of the Church in the frontispiece to the Panoply of Zigabenus, Vatican græc. 666, f. 17<sup>73</sup>. One could well suppose that in this case the artist was familiar with Ulpian.

Of these bishops, the one who is most easily recognized is Timothy with his dark hair and short beard. It is consequently necessary to revise the identifications proposed by Cormack for the bishops at Asinou and by Hadermann-Misgisch for those at Kurbinovo. In both

67. DER NESESSIAN, *art. cit.* (note 65), f. 239, 255, 262, 287, fig. 8, 9, 10, 11. For Dionysius of Phourna, *ed. cit.* (note 61), p. 364, Timothy is to be represented as a young man with a flattened beard.

68. M. CHARZIDAKIS, 'Ex τῷ Εὐαγγελίῳ τοῦ Παύλου', *EΦΒΣ 14*, 1938, p. 412, reprinted *Studies in Byzantine Art and Archaeology*, Variorum London 1972; C. MANGO, *The Art of the Byzantine Empire, 312-1453*, Englewood Cliffs 1972, p. 148.

69. *Syn. CP*, 102. Delehaye had already noted the similarity with Ulpian, *ibidem*, lxvi. CHARZIDAKIS, *art. cit.* (note 68), p. 402-403, considered that Ulpian's text was earlier. The problem still remains where he found it if he did not compose it himself. See also *Menaiā*, PG 4, 587.

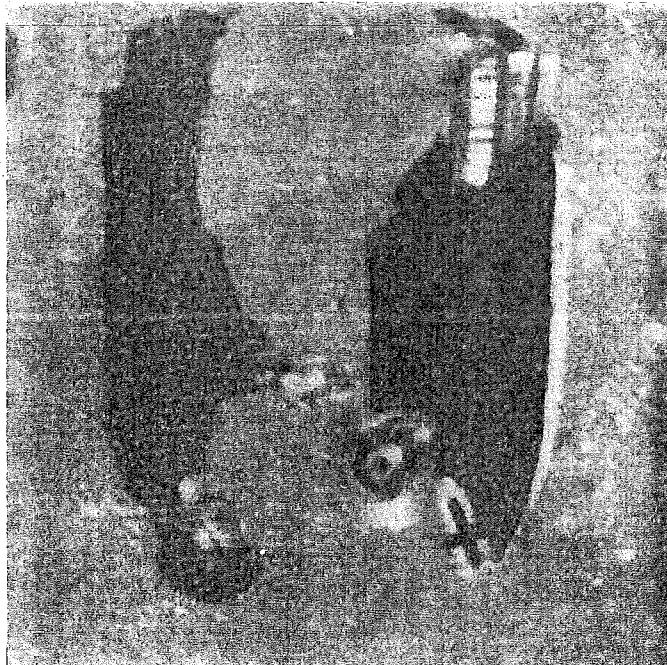
70. C. MANGO, *Materials for the Study of the Mosaics of St. Sophia at Istanbul*, Washington 1962, p. 49-51, figure 57-59.

71. *Ed. cit.* (note 62), p. 82. For Dionysius of Phourna, Dionysius was to be represented as an old man with curly hair, and a shaggy forked beard, *ed. cit.* (note 61), p. 154.

72. P. BUBERL and H. GEASTINGER, *Die illuminierten Handschriften und Inkunabeln der Nationalbibliothek in Wien*, IV, Leipzig 1930, p. 38-43, fig. 13-15.

73. WALTER, *op. cit.* (note 8), p. 40, fig. 11; I. SPATHARIKIS, *The Portrait in Byzantine Illuminated Manuscripts*, Leiden 1976, p. 122-129, fig. 78, 83 (with the copy in Mosqu. græc. 387, f. 5v).

Figure 5. — James Adelphotheos, Baltimore *Praxapostoles*, Figure 6. — Dionysius and Cattula, calendar-icon (detail), Saint Catherine's, Mount Sinai. L. 89.



these pictures Timothy is represented. Moreover this identification is confirmed by the evidence of the painting in the Omorphi Ekklesia at Athens (second half of thirteenth century). Here Timothy's portrait, with the dark hair and beard, is accompanied by a legend specifying his name (figure 4)<sup>74</sup>. Other examples of the Dormition with two bishops, one of whom has Timothy's features, are those in the Martorana, Palermo (1146-1151)<sup>75</sup>, at Saint Nicolas *iou Kasnizi*, Kastoria (1164-1191)<sup>76</sup>, in the church of the Virgin, Studenica (1208/9)<sup>77</sup>, in the Hypapante, Meteora (1366/7) (figure 2)<sup>78</sup>, and in the Phocas Lectionary, f. 134<sup>v</sup>, in the skevophylakion of the Great Lavra.<sup>79</sup>

There is no consistency in the way that the second bishop, who must be Dionysius, was represented in these pictures. This was to be expected since, outside Dormition scenes, no clear tradition had been established for this portrait type. Nevertheless it should be noted that the second bishop in the miniature of the Skevophylakion Lectionary closely resembles the Dionysius in Vatican græc. 666, f. 1<sup>v</sup>, which corresponds to Ulpian's description of him. Furthermore the second bishop at Kurbinovo and in Saint Nicolas *iou Kasnizi* is represented as being bald. This portrait type recurs at Staro Nagorično (1316/8)<sup>80</sup>, Lesnovo (before 1349)<sup>81</sup>, at Markov manastir (1376-1381)<sup>82</sup> and at Saint Athanasius *iou Mouzaki*, Kastoria (1384/5)<sup>83</sup>. It is therefore

74. Agapi VASILAKI-KARAKATSANI, *Ou τοπογραφίες της Ουαράνης Εκδόσεως στην Αθήνα*, Athens 1971, p. 51, fig. 36, 37. Legends accompanying the bishops in pictures of the Dormition are rare. G. DE JERPHANION read the names of Dionysius and Timothy on the fresco at Saint Basil, Cemil. *Les églises rupestres de Cappadoce*, II, Paris 1936, p. 124-125, but unfortunately he did not reproduce it.
75. O. DEMARS, *The Mosaics of Norman Sicily*, London 1949, p. 82, fig. 56; LAZAREV, op. cit. (note 32), fig. 379.
76. S. PELEKANIDES and M. CHATZAKIS, *Kastoria*, Athens 1985, p. 63, fig. 16.
77. ĐURMIĆ, op. cit. (note 30), p. 31-33. Restored 1568, Gordana BABIĆ, O kompoziciji Uspenja Bogorodičnog u Studenici, *Starinar*, n. s., 13-14, 1965, p. 261-265.
78. G. SUBORIĆ, Počeci monaškog života i crkva manastira Sretenja u Meteorima, *Zbornik za likovne umjetnosti* 2, 1966, p. 143-176.
79. K. WEITZMANN, Das Evangelistar im Skevophylakion zu Lavra, *Seminarium Menologium*, f. 11<sup>v</sup>, HURTER, op. cit. (note 62), fig. 18.
80. P. LAZAREV, *Le monastère de Daphni*, Athens 1987, fig. 15.
81. Treasures, I, Athens 1973 (cf. note 73), fig. 272; Ch. WALTER, The Date and Content of the Dionysiou Lectionary, *Aektor* της χριστουργίας αρχαιολογικής επαρχίας 4, 1985-1986, p. 186 (dating the Lectionary around 1100).
82. ĐURMIĆ, op. cit. (note 30), p. 19.
83. Gordana BABIĆ, Quelques observations sur le cycle des grandes fêtes de l'église de Pojsto (Macédoine), *CA* 27, 1978, p. 175-176, fig. 8, 9. With the discovery and publication of the donor portraits, these frescoes can now be dated between 1343 and 1345 : G. GRÖNDANEK and D. CORNACKOV, Istorijski portreti u Poljskom (1), *Zograaf* 14, 1983, p. 60-67.
84. Dionysius is also represented as bald in his martyrdom scene in the Oxford Menologium, f. 11<sup>v</sup>, HURTER, op. cit. (note 62), fig. 18.
85. P. LAZAREV, *Le monastère de Daphni*, Athens 1987, fig. 15.
86. Treasures, I, Athens 1973 (cf. note 73), fig. 272; Ch. WALTER, The Date and Content of the Dionysiou Lectionary, *Aektor* της χριστουργίας αρχαιολογικής επαρχίας 4, 1985-1986, p. 186 (dating the Lectionary around 1100).
87. ĐURMIĆ, op. cit. (note 30), p. 19.
88. Gordana BABIĆ, Quelques observations sur le cycle des grandes fêtes de l'église de Pojsto (Macédoine), *CA* 27, 1978, p. 175-176, fig. 8, 9. With the discovery and publication of the donor portraits, these frescoes can now be dated between 1343 and 1345 : G. GRÖNDANEK and D. CORNACKOV, Istorijski portreti u Poljskom (1), *Zograaf* 14, 1983, p. 60-67.
89. ĐURMIĆ, op. cit. (note 30), p. 17-19, plate XV.
90. HAMANN-MAC LEAN, op. cit. (note 1), fig. 232.
91. V. PETKOVIĆ, *La peinture serbe du Moyen Age*, II, Belgrade 1934, fig. CLXIX.
92. *Ibidem*, p. 38.
93. PELEKANIDES and CHATZAKIS, op. cit. (note 76), p. 115, fig. 9.

likely that this bald-headed portrait type was developed for Dionysius, although it is not clear why.<sup>84</sup>

A certain number of representations of the Dormition exist with two bishops, neither of whom are of the portrait type of Timothy. At Daphni and in the Dionysiou Lectionary, f. 163<sup>ss</sup>, the two bishops are not individualized. Both have conventional white hair and beards. Not only do they resemble each other but also the portraiture in the two pictures is extremely close. At Saint Nicolas, Prilep (1298), both bishops have letters inscribed on their haloes.<sup>85</sup> One has the letters ΔΙ, so that he must be Dionysius. The other has the letters ΔΑ (an error for ΙΑ?). This latter bishop has a slight curl in the middle of his forehead, which recalls the portraits of James Adelphiotheos in the Baltimore *Praxipostolos* and at Nereiditę (figure 5). We can therefore be fairly sure of his identity. The same portrait type recurs in two other churches in which the Dormition is represented with only two bishops, at Lesnovo and at Pološko (after 1350)<sup>86</sup>. It recurs again in representations of the Dormition with more than two bishops, at Saint Clement (Peribleptos), Ohrid (1294/5)<sup>87</sup>, at Saint Nikita, Čučer (before 1316)<sup>88</sup>, and at Saint Nicolas, Psacă (after 1354)<sup>89</sup>.

In view of these considerations, the names proposed by Babić for the two bishops in the Dormition in the King's church at Studenica can be confirmed. The bald-headed bishop would be Dionysius. The other is certainly not Timothy. On the other hand, while his features are less individualized than in the examples mentioned above, they are close enough to the portrait type of James Adelphiotheos. For the bishops in the Kariye Cami mosaic, del Medico's identifications are to be preferred to those of Underwood. The bishop to the right certainly has the features attributed to Timothy, while, when three bishops are represented, the other two are likely, according to the texts, to be Dionysius and Hierotheos.

84. Dionysius is also represented as bald in his martyrdom scene in the Oxford Menologium, f. 11<sup>v</sup>, HURTER, op. cit. (note 62), fig. 18.
85. P. LAZAREV, *Le monastère de Daphni*, Athens 1987, fig. 15.
86. Treasures, I, Athens 1973 (cf. note 73), fig. 272; Ch. WALTER, The Date and Content of the Dionysiou Lectionary, *Aektor* της χριστουργίας αρχαιολογικής επαρχίας 4, 1985-1986, p. 186 (dating the Lectionary around 1100).
87. ĐURMIĆ, op. cit. (note 30), p. 19.
88. Gordana BABIĆ, Quelques observations sur le cycle des grandes fêtes de l'église de Pojsto (Macédoine), *CA* 27, 1978, p. 175-176, fig. 8, 9. With the discovery and publication of the donor portraits, these frescoes can now be dated between 1343 and 1345 : G. GRÖNDANEK and D. CORNACKOV, Istorijski portreti u Poljskom (1), *Zograaf* 14, 1983, p. 60-67.
89. ĐURMIĆ, op. cit. (note 30), p. 17-19, plate XV.
90. HAMANN-MAC LEAN, op. cit. (note 1), fig. 232.
91. V. PETKOVIĆ, *La peinture serbe du Moyen Age*, II, Belgrade 1934, fig. CLXIX.
92. *Ibidem*, p. 38.
93. PELEKANIDES and CHATZAKIS, op. cit. (note 76), p. 115, fig. 9.

There are, nevertheless, limits to the possibility of identifying the bishops. It has already been noted that there was no attempt by the artist concerned to individualize the bishops at Daphni or in the Dionysiou Lectionary. At Saint Sophia, Ohrid, the three bishops have similar features<sup>92</sup>. At Sopočani (ca 1265), their features differ but only slightly; there is no clear correspondence with the established portrait types<sup>93</sup>. Further, although the presence of Hierotheus may sometimes be inferred, no individualized portrait type seems to have been developed for him. Cormack was therefore right not to suggest names for the bishops at Lagoudera.

To conclude, it may be affirmed, in spite of these reservations, that artists were often concerned to portray the bishops present at the Dormition according to their portrait type. For Hierotheus they could do no more than delineate an elderly man with white hair and beard. For James Adelphotheos a clearer portrait type existed, with shaggy hair and beard and a curl in the centre of his forehead. Timothy of Ephesus was evidently considered to be younger, with dark hair and short beard. Finally there seems to have developed a consensus that Dionysius, in spite of the fact that a detailed description of his features existed in the literary sources, should be represented as bald.

These criteria may be extended to the less usual cases, where four bishops are represented as present at the Dormition. For example, on a Crusader icon at Saint Catherine's, Mount Sinai, all the bishops can be identified, while in the painting of the Dormition in Saint Nicolas Orphanos, the features of Dionysius and Timothy are clearly delineated, although the other two bishops, James Adelphotheos and Hierotheos, are too similar for it to be possible to distinguish them<sup>94</sup>.

### 3. SAINT DIONYSIUS 'KEPHALOPHOROS'

In Byzantine art the death of Dionysius the Areopagite was sometimes represented as a banal scene of decapitation. This is the case, for example, in Vatican græc. 1679, f. 25<sup>1</sup>, the Oxford Menologium, Bodleian gr. th. f. 1, f. 11<sup>2</sup>, and in the wall-calendars at

92. HAMANN-MAC LEAN, *op. cit.* (note 11), fig. 26.

93. ĐURČE, *op. cit.* (note 30), p. 39-41, plate XXVIII.

94. Crucader icon : K. WERTZMANN, *The Icon*, London 1978, p. 118, plate 40. Saint Nicolas Orphanos : Anna Tsirogianni, *O ζωργικός διακοπές του αγίου Νικολάου Ορφανού στη Θεσσαλονίκη*, Thessaloniki 1986, p. 105, fig. 30.

1. WALTER, *art. cit.* (note 64), p. 30.

2. See above, note 62.

Figure 7. — Martyrdom of Dionysius, Menologium of Basil II, p. 82.





Figure 8. — Dionysius, Moscow Metaphrast, f. 28.



Figure 9. — Denys of Paris (detail), Musée du Louvre.

Cozia and Pee<sup>3</sup>. However there are at least four examples of the martyr holding his severed head in his hands: Vatican *graec.* 1613, p. 82<sup>4</sup>, Moscow GIM *graec.* 175, f. 28<sup>5</sup>, a calendar icon at Saint Catherine's monastery, Mount Sinai<sup>6</sup>, and the wall-calendar at Dečani<sup>7</sup> (figures 7, 8, 6). These pictures, each of which has its individual characteristics, will be discussed in due course. Before doing so, it is useful to consider briefly what was written about 'kephalophoroi' saints in general and Dionysius in particular in the literary sources both Western and Eastern.

There is no doubt that the legend of Dionysius walking for two *millia* holding his severed head in his hands is of Western origin. It reached Byzantium after Denys the founder bishop of Paris had been identified with Dionysius the Areopagite by means of the Greek translation of the Latin Life *Post beatam*, the first in which the prodigy was recounted<sup>8</sup>. In the earlier Latin Life, the *Gloriosae*, it is told that Denys, with his companions the priest Rusticus and the deacon Eleutherius, was sent by pope Clement to France<sup>9</sup>. After their martyrdom a pagan matron buried their bodies in a field. Later a mausoleum was built for them and finally a shrine. It seems that the *Gloriosae* dates from about 475 when the first shrine in honour of Saint Denys was built.

The *Post beatam* modifies the story by identifying Denys with Dionysius of Athens. Dionysius, already a bishop consecrated by Saint Paul, went to Rome and thence to Paris where he was martyred along with his two companions. Denys/Dionysius then walked two *millia* carrying his head in his hands. Later the same pagan matron, now called Catulla, recovered their bodies and buried them. She was converted by the intercession of the martyrs to Christianity.

The *Corpus dionysticum*, with its attribution to Dionysius the Areopagite, had reached France as early as 758-763. Another copy was brought to Paris from Constantinople by ambassadors of Michael II in 827. However the *Post beatam* does not exploit any of the biographical material available in the *Corpus dionysticum*. It is

3. Mušović, *op. cit.* (note 62), p. 350, 363.

4. See above, note 71.

5. V. D. Likhachova, *Byzantine Miniature*, Moscow 1977, p. 16.

6. G. and Maria Sotirov, *Icônes du Mont Sinaï*, Athens 1958, p. 121-123, fig. 38;

K. Weitmann, *Ikone*, Belgrade 1983, p. 17, 50.

7. Vl. Petković, *Dečani*, II, Belgrade 1941, p. 9, fig. CVIII; Mušović, *op. cit.*

(note 62), p. 317, 320.

8. *Acta sanctorum octobris* IV, Brussels 1780, 792-794 (*BHL* 2178); PG 4, 669-684

9. PL 88, 577-583 (*BHL* 2171); R. J. LOENERTZ, *La légende parisienne de S. Denys l'Aréopagite, sa genèse et son premier témoin*, *An. Bull.* 69, 1951, p. 217-237.

therefore not certain that its author was aware of its existence and of its attribution to Dionysius the Areopagite. Further, his introduction of the *céphalophorie* is quite gratuitous.<sup>10</sup>

The prodigy was not first recounted of Denys/Dionysius. The earliest recorded example is that of the child martyr Saint Just of Auxerre, whose Passion is attested as early as the seventh century.<sup>11</sup> In this Passion the reason for the prodigy is evident: Saint Just tells his family where he is to be buried and what is to be done with his head. The same motivation for introducing the prodigy is clear in the hundred or so Lives of Western 'céphalophoroi' saints, who indicate the shrine where their reliquies are to be venerated.<sup>12</sup> However Denys/Dionysius was buried at Saint Denis, six *millia* from Paris, whereas he only walked for two *millia* carrying his head!<sup>13</sup>

That the Greek translation of the *Post beatam* (*Μετά τὴν θαυματοποίησιν*) existed before 833 is evident, because it was used discreetly by Michael the Synecclius.<sup>14</sup> He accepted the story that Dionysius went to Paris where he was martyred, but does not recount the prodigy of the *céphalophorie*, nor does he mention Catula. He also drew largely on the biographical material available in the *Corpus dionysiacaum* and, as we have seen, the Autobiography. The *Souda* is yet more discreet. It does not refer to Dionysius's journey to Paris, nor to the circumstances of his death, although it cites Michael the Synecclius.<sup>15</sup>

In the brief notice in the Menologium of Basil II, the *Post beatam* is exploited but considerably modified.<sup>16</sup> No reference is made to the journey to Paris; Dionysius's two disciples are mentioned but not as being in Aquitaine, only true after 817, refused the earlier dating. Neither scholar discusses the fact that Dionysius and his companions are said to chant the Creed with the *Filiique*, *Acta sanctorum*, vol. *cit.* (note 8), 793. This anachronism would surely not have been perpetrated before the synod of Frankfurt, 794! The *Filiique* was, of course, omitted in the Greek translation, *PG* 4, 680.

10. H. MORETUS-PLANTIN, *Les Passions de saint Denys, Mélanges offerts au R. P. Ferdinand Cavallera*, Toulouse 1948, p. 215-230, dated the *Post beatam* to 757 (p. 228). LONNERVZ, *art. cit.* (note 9), mainly on the grounds that Toulouse is mentioned as being in Aquitaine, only true after 817, refused the earlier dating. Neither scholar discusses the fact that Dionysius and his companions are said to chant the Creed with the *Filiique*, *Acta sanctorum*, vol. *cit.* (note 8), 793. This anachronism would surely not have been perpetrated before the synod of Frankfurt, 794! The *Filiique* was, of course, omitted in the Greek translation, *PG* 4, 680.

11. M. OENS, Aux origines de la céphalophorie. Un fragment retrouvé d'une ancienne Passion de S. Just, martyr de Beauvais, *An Boll* 74, 1956, p. 86-114; IDEM, Nouvelles recherches sur un thème hagiographique : la céphalophorie, *Recueil d'études hollandaises (Subsidia hagiographica n° 37)*, Brussels 1969, p. 9-31 (*BHL* 4590).

12. P. SAINTYVES, Les saints céphalophores, *Revue de l'histoire des religions* 99, 1929, p. 158-231; H. MORETUS-PLANTIN, *Les Passions de saint Lucien et leurs dérivés céphalophoriques*, Namur 1953.

13. See above, note 27.

14. *Ed. cit.* (note 28), p. 108.

15. *PG* 117, 84-85.

carried his head two *millia*, presents it to a Christian woman. His two disciples are beheaded after him. It seems that the author was puzzled by the gratuitous nature of the *céphalophorie* in the *Post beatam*. He therefore gives it a purpose, which becomes more explicit in later accounts.

Thus in the notice in the Constantinopolitan *Synaxary*, in which Rufinus and Eleutherius are mentioned by name but without being attributed a clerical status, Dionysius gives his head to the woman, named Catula in the text, as a sacred treasure (*τὸν ἱερὸν θηραύνον*).<sup>17</sup> In the Metaphrastic Life, the *Post beatam* is exploited far more abundantly. Rusticus is called a priest and Eleutherius a deacon. The martyrdom takes place explicitly in Paris. Dionysius again gives his head to a woman, whom, it is explained, was Catula, the person responsible for the burial of the martyrs. Moreover the language used about Dionysius's severed head is more hyperbolic : a prize..., a trophy..., a treasure... (*βραχίονος..., τρόπαιον..., θηραύνον...*).<sup>18</sup> Nicodemus Hagioiletos seems to have followed the Metaphrastic Life closely. He refers to the most sweet miracle and the treasure (*θαῦμα ταῦρων, ὃς ἐν θηραύνῳ*).<sup>19</sup>

The Western motivation for introducing the prodigy of *céphalophorie* into the Life of a saint being unknown in the East, Byzantine hagiographers adapted the prodigy as recounted in the *Post beatam* in order to assimilate it to their own tradition, according to which the head was the most prized relic of a decapitated martyr. A clear witness to this tradition is provided by Saint John Chrysostom in his Homily in honour of Saints Juventinus and Maximinus, who were beheaded under Julian the Apostate. He wrote that the severed head of a martyr was more terrifying to the devil than when it was able to speak. He adduced the case of the head of Saint John the Baptist, which was more awe-inspiring when placed on a dish than when he was alive. He compared soldiers showing their wounds received in battle to the emperor with martyrs holding their severed head in their hands and presenting it to Christ.<sup>20</sup> Among the severed heads prized as relics, that of Saint John the Baptist was obviously pre-eminent.<sup>21</sup>

16. *Syn GP*, 101-102.

17. *PG* 4, 605.

18. Nicodemus HAGIOILETOIS, *Συναξήσπειρτος*, I, Athens 1868, p. 96.

19. *PG* 50, 575-576 (*Clavis 4349, BHG 974*). H. DELEHAYE, *Cinq leçons sur la méthode hagiographique*, Brussels 1934, p. 135-138, rejected peremptorily — but no doubt rightly — the hypothesis that this text of Chrysostom was at the origin of Western *céphalophorie*. However, subsequent research necessitates the revision of several of his statements.

20. Ch. WALTER, The Invention of John the Baptist's Head in the Wall-calendar at Gračanica. Its place in Byzantine Iconographical Tradition, *Zbornik za likovne umetnosti* 16, 1980, p. 71-83; M. CHATZIDAKIS, Une icône avec les trois inventions de la tête du Prodrome à Lavra, *C4* 36, 1988, p. 85-97.

However, the example of Saint Auxentius should also be adduced. Great was the grief when his severed head was found to be missing, until it was discovered in a tree, to which it had been carried by a bird.<sup>21</sup>

It was therefore the severed head as a trophy which was the focal point of Byzantine interest in Dionysius's *céphalophorie*. The rôle of Catula was to take charge of the precious relic, and this is what she does in three of the pictures of Saint Dionysius 'kephalophoros'.

The earliest of these is in the Menologium of Basil II, p. 82. Dionysius's two companions have already been beheaded — or so it seems, although, according to the text, Dionysius was beheaded first (figure 7). They wear simple tunics, but then the text does not say that they were respectively a priest and a deacon. On the other hand, although Dionysius is said explicitly to have been consecrated bishop of Athens, he is not represented wearing episcopal costume. The executioner, having severed Dionysius's head, is replacing his sword in its sheath. Dionysius, leaning forward, holds his head in his covered hands; blood falls from it to the ground. To the right stands the Christian woman, one hand covered, waiting to receive the head.

The scene on the calendar icon at Saint Catherine's, Mount Sinai, which Soterios dated to the second half of the eleventh century, is more simple (figure 6). The executioner and the companions are missing. Dionysius, wearing episcopal dress, holds his severed head in his hands. Catula, facing him, extends her uncovered hands to receive it. At Dečani (1346/7) Dionysius's companions are also omitted. The executioner stands in the background to the left, his unsheathed sword still raised. In the foreground to the right, Dionysius, episcopally dressed, is slightly inclined. Catula, facing him, has taken his head in her hands.

The scene in the Moscow Metaphrast, f. 28, differs from the others (figure 8). Moreover it has little relation to the text. Catula is omitted. Dionysius is represented frontally in episcopal costume holding his severed head in his hands. Haloed, as in the previous examples, the head has more the aspect of a trophy, resembling that of Saint John the Baptist in later pictures of him represented 'kephalophoros'. Blood gushes from Dionysius's neck. To the left stands the executioner who is replacing his sword in its sheath. To the right stand two figures, haloed and episcopally dressed. The one nearer to Dionysius extends his right hand towards him. Their presence is curious. If they are Rusticus and Eleutherius, the artist has perpetrated an anomaly in representing them as bishops. Moreover it does not seem that they



Figure 10. — Heads of Oreb and Zeb, Vatopedi 602, f. 421v.



Figure 11. — Deacon 'kephalophoros', Platanistasa.

21. PG 116, 488-489 (BHG 646); WALTER, art. cit. (note 20), p. 76.

too are to undergo martyrdom, since the executioner is sheathing his sword.<sup>22</sup>

Although the legend of the *céphalophorie* came from the West, there can be no doubt that the iconography, at least for the three first examples, was an Eastern invention, because in Western tradition Catula does not receive Dionysius's head. The frontal portrait of Dionysius in the Moscow Metaphrast is closer to Western examples like the fifteenth-century picture in the Louvre, in which Denys of Paris, also represented frontally with blood gushing from his neck, accompanies Charlemagne (figures 8, 9).<sup>23</sup> However the Moscow Metaphrast is an eleventh-century manuscript and consequently earlier than any known Western picture of a 'kephalophoros' saint. Thus the *céphalophorie* of a martyr, in the literal or historical sense, is restricted in Byzantine tradition, unlike that of the West, to Dionysius. It does not seem that Byzantine martyrs were in the habit of displacing themselves after their death. There is, perhaps, a near equivalent in the description of a picture in the Life of the patriarch Tarsius by Ignatius the deacon. According to this text, the martyr was represented, his severed head reunited to this body, walking on the sea as if it was land. I was unable to establish to which martyr Ignatius was referring.<sup>24</sup> The severed head could, of course, be represented as a trophy in quite another context, when it was the head of an enemy. For example in the thirteenth-century Octateuch, Vatopedi 602, f. 421<sup>v</sup>, and the twelfth-century Vatican grace, 746, f. 480<sup>v</sup>, two soldiers present the heads of Zeb and Oreb to Gideon (figure 10). The illustration corresponds literally to the text, Judges 7,24-25.<sup>25</sup>

On the other hand from the thirteenth century onwards there exists a number of examples of *céphalophorie* in the figurative or symbolic sense. In the pictures in question the saints all differ from Dionysius in that they have *two* heads, one placed on their shoulders and the other, held as a trophy, in their hand. In these cases the severed head

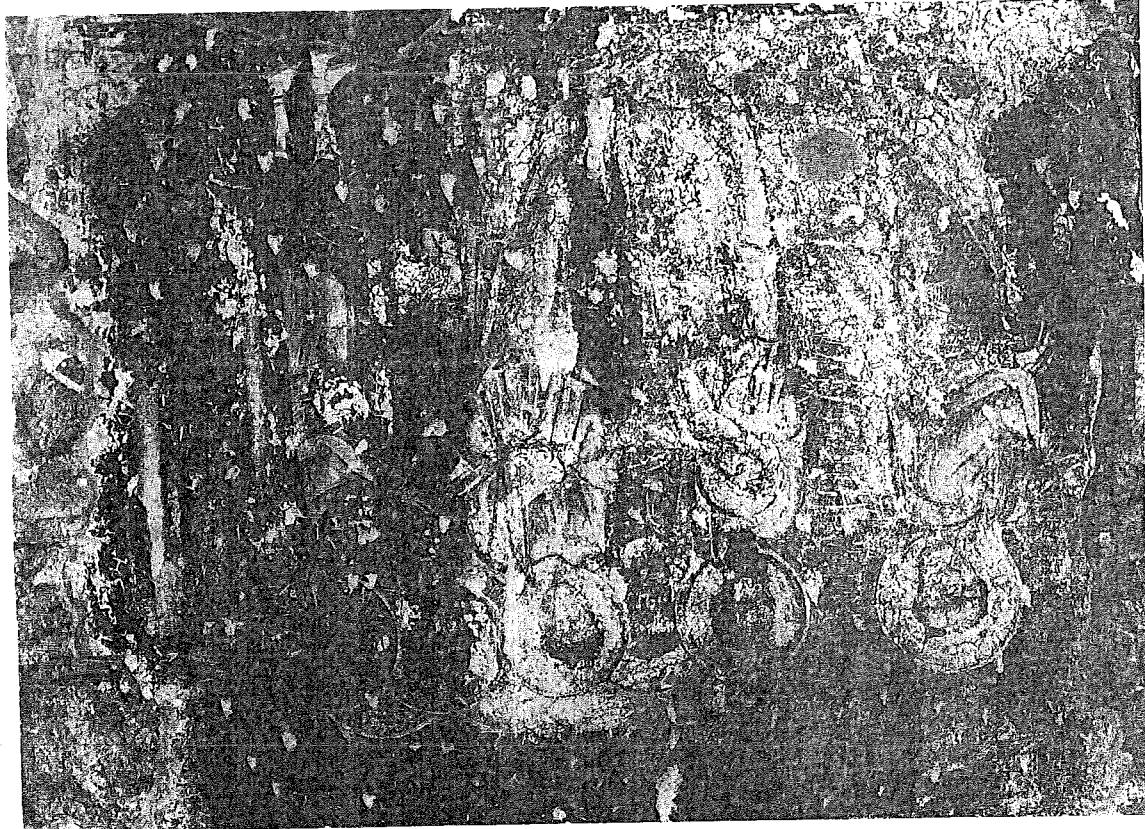
22. For Dionysius of Phourna, the martyrdom of Dionysius was to be represented with him as an old man holding his head in his hands, *ed. cit.* (note 61), p. 194. In the wall-calendar at Markov manastir, there are, at the date of Dionysius's feast, two busts, one of a man and the other of a woman. Muović, *op. cit.* (note 62), p. 346, suggested that the woman was Damaris, whom he calls Dionysius's wife (!). It seems more likely that she is Catula.

23. A. W. RITTER, Dionysius (Denis) von Paris, *Lexikon der christlichen Ikonographie* 5, 61-67; G. KASTER, Kephalophoren Heilige, *ibidem* 6, 307-308.

24. Wanda WOLKA-CÖNUS and Ch. WALTER, Un programme iconographique du patriarche Tarasios ?, *REB* 38, 1980, p. 249-250, 285.

25. J. LOWDEN, The Production of the Vatopedi Octateuch, *DOP* 36, 1982, p. 124-125, fig. 25, 26.

Figure 12. — Saint Paul, *kephalophoros*, Krina.



is to be interpreted as an attribute of martyrdom. There is no question of the saint having displaced himself, carrying his severed head.

Possibly the earliest of these pictures is that of Saint Paul in the church at Krina, Chios, dated between 1197 and 1296 (figure 12)<sup>28</sup>. In the old metropolis at Verona, six bishops are represented 'kephalophoroi'<sup>27</sup>. Saint John the Baptist appears for the first time as 'kephalophoros' at Arije (1296)<sup>28</sup>. Other examples exist in fourteenth-century wall-painting, while Post-Byzantine icons of him 'kephalophoros' are common. In the church at Plataniastase, Cyprus (1494?), an anonymous deacon holds his severed head in a veil (figure 11)<sup>29</sup>. Finally I have noted seventeen examples of Saint George 'kephalophoros' in post-Byzantine art<sup>30</sup>.

To conclude, although the legend of Dionysius's céphalophorie was Western in origin, it received a new interpretation in Byzantine tradition. The head was considered to be a trophy, and, in the case of a martyr, as a prized relic. However, Dionysius was the only martyr whose céphalophorie was understood literally. For all the others represented in Byzantine art the sense was symbolic.

Among the schools of art which developed within the sphere of Byzantine influence during the Middle Ages, that of Serbia is particularly important. Thanks to the dynamism of the Nemanjić dynasty, numerous churches were built or restored. In many of them the donors were represented. I am particularly concerned here with the portraits of Milutin and Simonida in the church of Gračanica. They are represented together in the central archway between the narthex and the nave. Milutin wears a *sakkos* with the *loros*, or *diademata* as it was called in the XIVth century; on his head he has a *stompa* with lappets and in his hands he holds a model of the church<sup>31</sup>. Simonida wears a mantle over her tunic; her *symptomas*, wider at the top than at the base, is decorated with the triangular *pinnas*, which figure on the headdresses of an empress as early as the VIIIth century<sup>32</sup>. It is to be noted, however, that the *thorakon* has disappeared.

Each portrait is accompanied by an inscription<sup>33</sup>:

#### Milutin

Left	Right
σπεῖρην οὐρού	επιφόργχα
πολλούς δούς εἴκ.	ρεθήνα τοπεις
φάντα λιμπίου	κύκλων ζεῦδικ
βούλησι κράμα	η πολυφεντίκης
	η χτυπόρη

#### Simonida

Left	Right
τηλονι	Διάβην ψηφια
Ἄδη νέα	αλιμονία
Δημητρία	πατεύομενα
Δεονθία	

26. Unpublished. Information communicated by Ch. PENNAS.  
 27. Unpublished. Information communicated by I. Ath. PAPANGELIOS, 11th ephoria for Byzantine antiquities, Verona.  
 28. Ch. WALTER, Saint John the Baptist 'Kephalophoros', a New Iconographical theme of the Palaeologan Period, *Evaro ευπρότεροι Βαζαρρύντε και Μερσεζερύντες και τέρψης*, Athens 1989, p. 85-86.  
 29. A. and Judith STYLIANOU, *The Painted Churches of Cyprus*, London 1986, p. 186 (date).  
 30. Ch. WALTER, Saint George 'Kephalophoros', *Mélanges Manolis Chatzidakis* (printing). Credit lines : figure 1, Photothèque Gabriel Millet, Paris; figure 2, Gojko Subotic; figure 3, 5, Der Nerezzian, arl. cit. (note 65); figure 4, VASILAKI-KARAKATSI, op. cit. (note 74); figure 6, WITZMANN, op. cit. (note 100); figure 7, Biblioteca apostolica Vaticana; figure 8, LIKHACHOVA, op. cit. (note 99); figure 9, Girandon, Paris; figure 10, LOWEN, arl. cit. (note 25); figure 11, A. STYLIANOU; figure 12, Ch. Pennas.

<sup>1</sup> S. Radočić, *Portret srpskih vladara u srednjem veku*, Skopje 1954, p. 44-45, pl. XIX no 17; P. Mijović, *O ikonologiji gračaničkih fresaka*, in Starine Kosova i Metohije 4-5, 1971, p. 179 and 191, pl. 6.

<sup>2</sup> J. Ebersolt, *Les arts somptuaires de Byzance*, Paris 1923, p. 120-129; Pseudo-Kodinos, *Traité des offices*, ed. J. Verpeaux, Paris 1966, passim, especially p. 252-273; Gordana Babić, *L'icône-*

<sup>3</sup> à Cozia, in Zbornik radova, 14-15, 1973, p. 185, pl. XXXII-XXXV.

<sup>4</sup> G. de Jephantien, *Le "thorakon", caractéristique iconographique du XIe siècle*, in La voix des monuments (nouvelle série), Rome/Paris 1938, p. 263-278.

## THE ICONOGRAPHICAL SOURCES FOR THE CORONATION OF MILUTIN AND SIMONIDA AT GRAČANICA

Milutin's epigraph, which differs slightly from the one accompanying his portrait at Studenica, nevertheless closely resembles those in use at that time at Constantinople<sup>6</sup>. For example, in the profession of faith made by the emperor, according to Pseudo-Codinus, on the occasion of his coronation, the following formula was used: ἐν οὐρανῷ καὶ στούποις βασιλεὺς καὶ αὐτοκράτωρ Παύλιον<sup>7</sup>.

This is how I translate the two inscriptions at Gračanica:

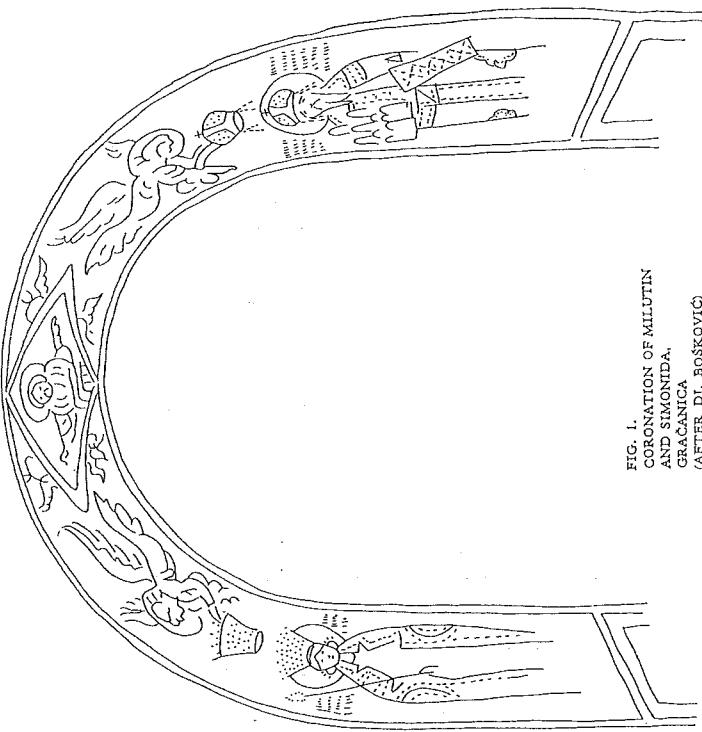
Stefan Uroš (Milutin), faithful to Christ, by divine grace sole despot (autocrator)<sup>8</sup> of all the Serbs by land (Raška) and by sea (Zeta) and founder.

In an article published before the war, Dr Bošković linked these portraits to the Last Judgment scene, represented in the narthex: „Il est évident que les couronnes portées par les anges ne sont pas des couronnes royales, mais bien les couronnes de vie“<sup>9</sup>. With regard to a somewhat similar scene in the *Theodore Psalter* (London, Adit. 1932, f. 21), in which an angel places a second crown upon the head of Hezekiah, I proposed independently an interpretation along the same lines: „What meaning are we to give to this second crown? I suspect that the explanation is to be sought in the Antique distinction between the crown as attribute of victory and the diadem as attribute of authority“<sup>10</sup> (Plate 10a).

Dr Mijović has also published an interpretation of the portraits of Milutin and Simonida<sup>11</sup>. He notes the originality of the Last Judgment scene in the narthex. Its central theme is Christ sometimes by the intermediary of an angel. (Plate 17). The Bulgarian Tsar John Alexander is represented in the same fashion. (Plate 16 a, b). The introduction of this theme into the official iconography of the Serbian and Bulgarian rulers was probably due to the initiative of Milutin. However, as I have noted, the theme already existed in Byzantine art. In interpreting Milutin's portrait at Gračanica, it is necessary to take these other examples of official portraiture into account. In this paper I propose, first of all, to discuss two basic themes: the distinction between the crown and the diadem in Byzantine iconography and the rôle of angels in coronation scenes. After that I shall present a short dossier of dedicatory portraits in which angels crown. Finally I shall reconsider the portraits of Milutin and Simonida in the context of XIVth-century portraits of the same genre.

There are, in fact, in Serbia a number of portraits of sovereigns receiving a crown from Christ, sometimes by the intermediary of an angel. (Plate 17). The Bulgarian Tsar John Alexander is represented in the same fashion. (Plate 16 a, b). The introduction of this theme into the official iconography of the Serbian and Bulgarian rulers was probably due to the initiative of Milutin. However, as I have noted, the theme already existed in Byzantine art. In interpreting Milutin's portrait at Gračanica, it is necessary to take these other examples of official portraiture into account. In this paper I propose, first of all, to discuss two basic themes: the distinction between the crown and the diadem in Byzantine iconography and the rôle of angels in coronation scenes. After that I shall present a short dossier of dedicatory portraits in which angels crown. Finally I shall reconsider the portraits of Milutin and Simonida in the context of XIVth-century portraits of the same genre.

FIG. 1.  
CORONATION OF MILUTIN  
AND SIMONIDA,  
GRAČANICA  
(AFTER DR. BOŠKOVIĆ)



Simonida Palaeologa, queen, daughter of Andronicus Palaeologus.

In the centre of the arch, above the heads of the two Serbian sovereigns, Jesus Christ is represented in a mandorla. He extends both hands, his fingers bent in the gesture of benediction, towards Milutin and Simonida. Outside the mandorla, each side of Christ, is an angel holding a crown; they are descending towards Milutin and Simonida. In each case the crown is identical with that which the sovereign already wears. It is evident that the crowns are being presented by Christ to the Serbian sovereigns. What is the significance of this scene?

In an article published before the war, Dr Bošković linked these portraits to the Last Judgment scene, represented in the narthex: „Il est évident que les couronnes portées par les anges ne sont pas des couronnes royales, mais bien les couronnes de vie“<sup>9</sup>. With regard to a somewhat similar scene in the *Theodore Psalter* (London, Adit. 1932, f. 21), in which an angel places a second crown upon the head of Hezekiah, I proposed independently an interpretation along the same lines: „What meaning are we to give to this second crown? I suspect that the explanation is to be sought in the Antique distinction between the crown as attribute of victory and the diadem as attribute of authority“<sup>10</sup> (Plate 10a).

Dr Mijović has also published an interpretation of the portraits of Milutin and Simonida<sup>11</sup>. He notes the originality of the Last Judgment scene in the narthex. Its central theme is Christ sometimes by the intermediary of an angel. (Plate 17). The Bulgarian Tsar John Alexander is represented in the same fashion. (Plate 16 a, b). The introduction of this theme into the official iconography of the Serbian and Bulgarian rulers was probably due to the initiative of Milutin. However, as I have noted, the theme already existed in Byzantine art. In interpreting Milutin's portrait at Gračanica, it is necessary to take these other examples of official portraiture into account. In this paper I propose, first of all, to discuss two basic themes: the distinction between the crown and the diadem in Byzantine iconography and the rôle of angels in coronation scenes. After that I shall present a short dossier of dedicatory portraits in which angels crown. Finally I shall reconsider the portraits of Milutin and Simonida in the context of XIVth-century portraits of the same genre.

The first problem is one of language. Whereas in Antique usage it seems clear what was the difference between the ὅρεψος and the διάδημα, this is not the case for Byzantine usage.

<sup>6</sup> D. Bošković, *Deux "couronnes de vie"* à Gračanica, in Annals de l'Institut Kondakov, II, 1939, p. 63—64.

<sup>7</sup> P. Mijović, *Carska ikongrafija u srpskoj srednjovekovnoj umetnosti*, in Starinar XVIII, 1967, p. 104—107.

<sup>8</sup> Review of Sirapie Der Nersessian's edition of this *Psalter* (see below note 15), in *Revue des études byzantines*, 30, 1972 p. 369—370.

<sup>6</sup> I give the transcription of S. Radolić, *op. cit.* (note 5), III, p. 86, n° 5093; Stojanović, *op. cit.* (note 1), p. 36.

<sup>7</sup> Pseudo—Codinos, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 252, lines 19—21.

<sup>8</sup> G. Ostrgorški, *Autokrator i samnatičac*, in Glas srpske kraljevske akademije, 164, 1935, p. 95—187, reprinted in *Vizantija i Slovenci*, Belgrade s. d., p. 281—364.

<sup>9</sup> The inscription for Simonida, clearer than that for Milutin even to-day (Stojanović p. 78, n° 5095), presents no problem to the reader.

The next problem is one of material form. Crowns and diadems no doubt differed in their basic aspect but also had, within each genre, numerous variants. Further, in Byzantine tradition not only does the form of the diadem change but also different kinds of ceremonial head-dress existed, corresponding to 'different ranks'<sup>12</sup>.

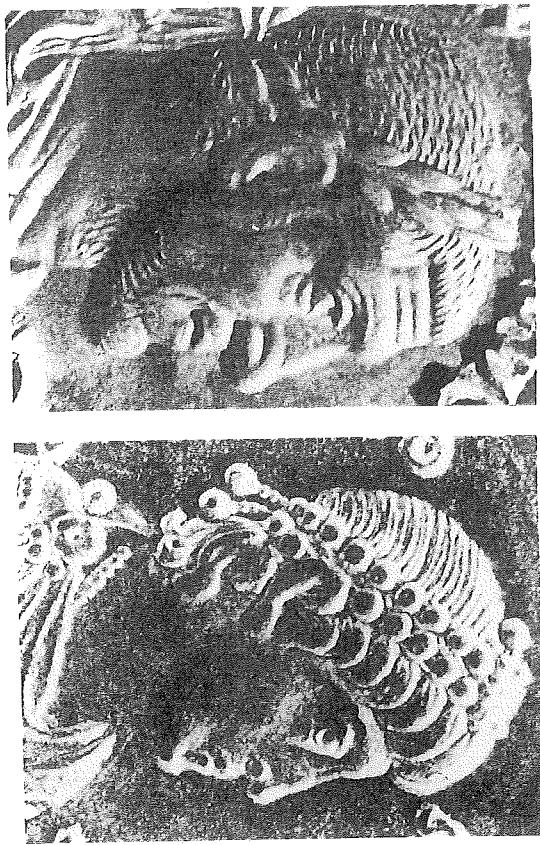
In Antique usage the crown was a circlet made of leaves or flowers, natural or copied in precious metals<sup>13</sup>. Such a crown figured in marriage and funerary rites; it was given as a prize at contests, whether artistic or sporting. In Roman triumphal ceremonial, a crown was held over the head of a *triumphatus*, or presented to the emperor who would then wear it on ceremonial occasions. Apart from the marriage crown, whose significance at the beginning was probably festal, all these crowns were presented as the reward of victory.

By contrast in Antiquity the diadem was a band bedecked normally with pearls; it could be ornamented with tassels and a large jewel in front<sup>14</sup>. It was the sign of royalty *par excellence*, and, as such, notoriously abhorred by the Romans. The distinction between the crown and the diadem is quite clear on Roman coins (Plate 1 a, b). During the first centuries Roman emperors are represented wearing a crown; it was only when they began to imitate Oriental potentates, that they had themselves represented wearing a diadem.

In Antiquity, as in Early Christian iconography, the distinction is normally clear, from the form and the context, between a diadem and a crown. For example, on the Boscoreale cup in the Louvre, the attendant standing behind Tiberius in the quadriga is placing a crown on his head<sup>15</sup> (Plate 2). On the Barberini ivory, also in the Louvre, the emperor is wearing a diadem, while the angel of victory offers him a crown<sup>16</sup>. Similarly in the Adventus scene on the plate from Kersch now in the Hermitage, the emperor wears a diadem, while the angel of victory preceding him carries a crown<sup>17</sup> (Plate 3). The diadem, in both these examples, is the sign of his imperial status, while the crown is the reward of success in battle.

In an apotheosis scene, such as that represented upon a cameo in the Cabinet des médailles of the Paris Bibliothèque nationale, Germanicus, like Ganymede, is carried aloft by an eagle; he holds a *lirrus* and a *cornucopia*<sup>18</sup> (Plate 4 a). The angel flying towards him carries a crown, cf. Gordana Babic, *L'Iconographie constantinopolitaine de l'Anastase de la Vierge à Costa (Valachie)*, in Zbornik Radova, 14–15 1973, p. 185.

<sup>12</sup> E. Amann, in *Le Protévangile de Jacques le Mineur et ses renouvellements latins*, Paris 1910, p. 186, defines the diadem thus: un bandeau plus ou moins orné, servant à retenir les cheveux, qui fixé au bas de la tête perse, devient un ornement royal. It was taken over by Alexander from the Great Kings as a sign of his sovereignty over Asia, cf. H.—W. Ritter, *Diadem und Königscherstola*, Munich/Berlin 1965, especially p. 125–127. For the *meandros*, cf. P. Chartrain, *The Imperial Crown Modiolus and its Constitutional Significance*, in Byzantion 12, 1937, p. 189–195; *The Crown Modiolos Once More*, ibid., 13, 1938, p. 377–383. The word στέμμα originally denoted a garland made of wool, but from the IXth century at least (for example in the *Book of Ceremonies* of Constantine Porphyrogenitus) it denotes the imperial diadem. Pseudo-Codinus observes that by his time the word βασιλικόν was used rather for the imperial girdle or λαρέα, op. cit. (note 2), p. 199. For different views on the meaning of *crispeus* in Byzantine usage, see Verpeaux's important note, op. cit. (note 2), p. 199. For the translation of these words into Slavonic,



(A) CROWN

(B) DIADEM

PLATE 1: ROMAN COINS



(C) CROWN AND DIADEM COMBINED

cf. Gordana Babic, *L'Iconographie constantinopolitaine de l'Anastase de la Vierge à Costa (Valachie)*, in Zbornik Radova, 14–15 1973, p. 185.

<sup>13</sup> Dictionnaire des antiquités grecques et romaines, I 2, Paris 1887, ed. C. Datemberg and E. Saglio, 1520–1537 (Corona) and 1080–1088 (Certanina), for a recent status *quaternio*, cf. R. Turcan, *Les guirlandes dans l'Antiquité classique*, in Jahrbuch für Antike und Christentum, 14, 1971, p. 92–139.

<sup>14</sup> Ibid. II 1, 119–121 (Diadema).

<sup>15</sup> Inez Scott Ryberg, *Rites of the State Religion in Roman Art*, Rome 1955, p. 141–142, pl. I fig. 7a.

<sup>16</sup> D. Tabor Rice, *Art byzantin*, Paris/Brussels 1959, n° 19.

<sup>17</sup> Alisa Bank, *Vizantioski ikustvo*, Leningrad/Moscow 1969, n° 1, p. 277.

<sup>18</sup> E. Babelon, *Guide illustré au Cabinet des Médailles et Antiques de la Bibliothèque Nationale*, Paris 1900, p. 116.

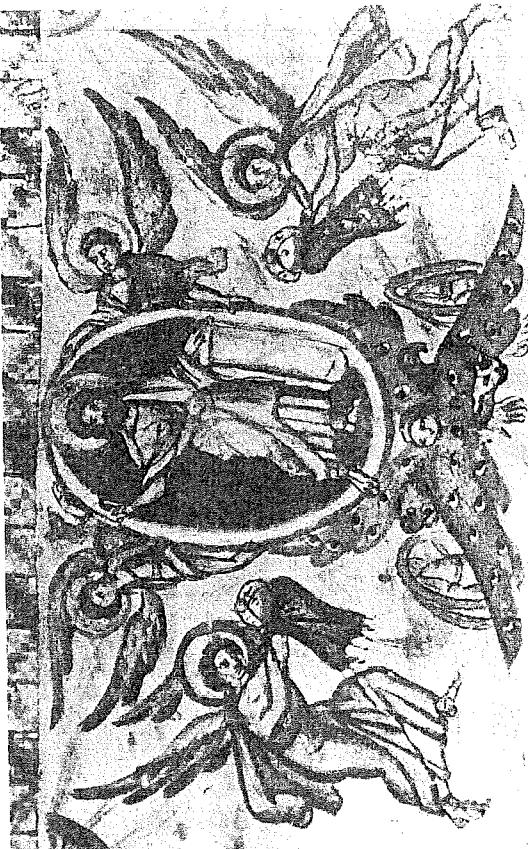


PLATE 4 (B): MINIATURE, RABBULA GOSPELS, LAURENZIANA, FLORENCE.

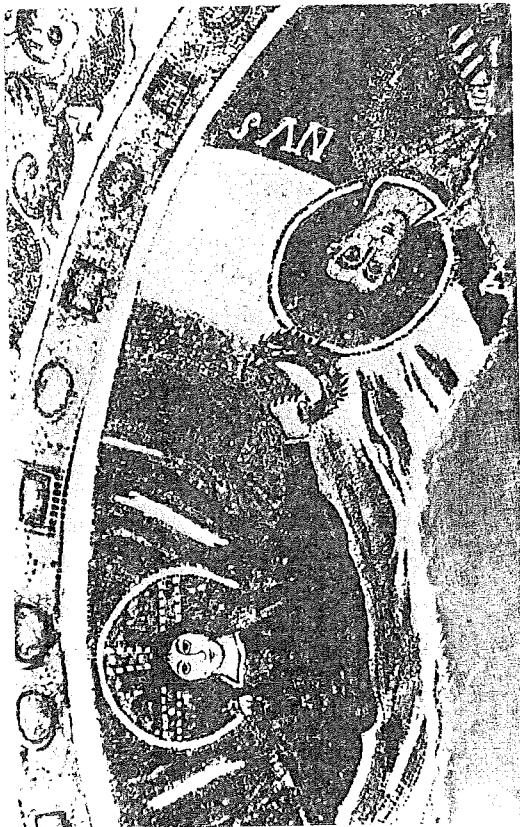


PLATE 5: MOSAIC, NORTH APSE, BASILICA EUPHRASIANA, POREC.

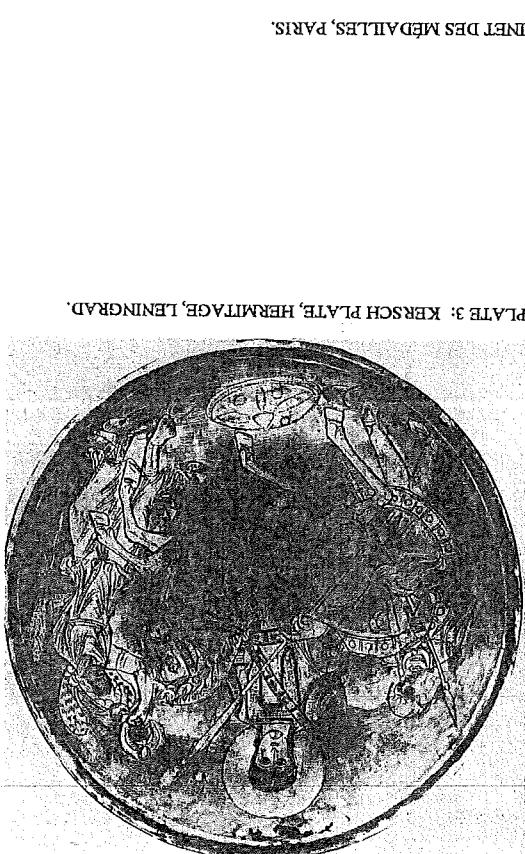


PLATE 3: KERSCH PLATE, HERMITAGE, LENINGRAD.

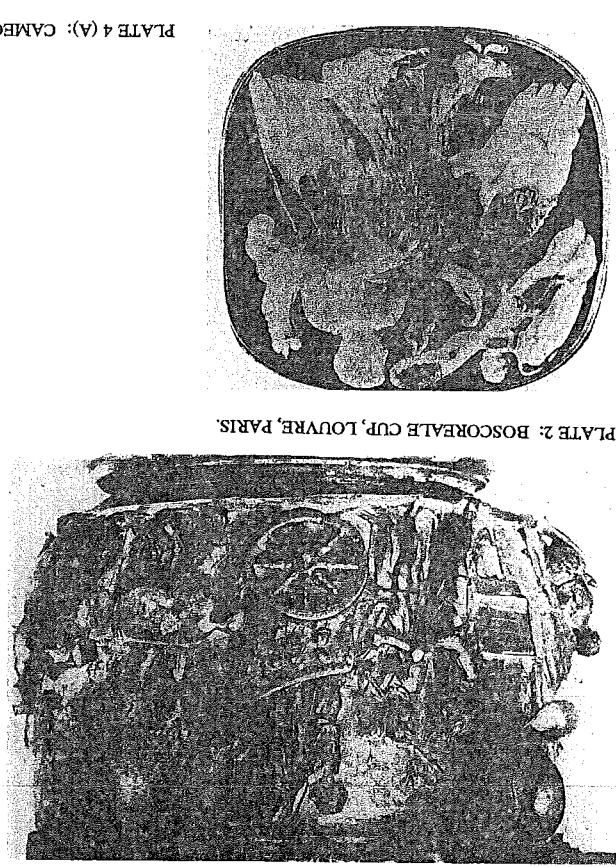


PLATE 2: BOSCOREALE CUP, LOUVRE, PARIS.

which must signify the reward of eternal life. It is with a similar triumphal significance that two angels hold out (Plate 4 b) crowns towards Christ in the Ascension scene of the *Rabula Gospels*<sup>19</sup>.

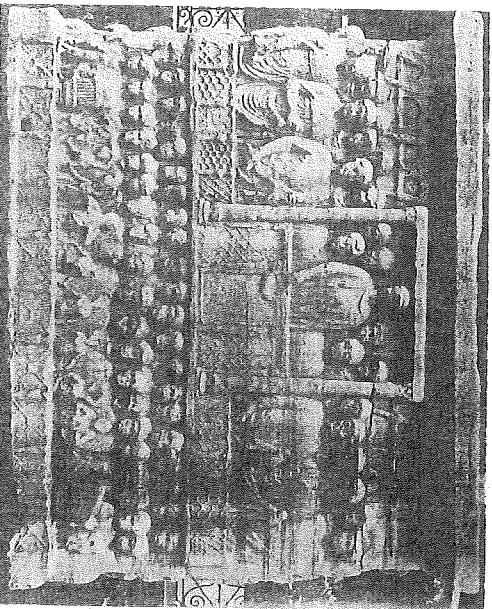


PLATE 6 (A): MOSAIC, APSE, SAN VITALE, RAVENNA.

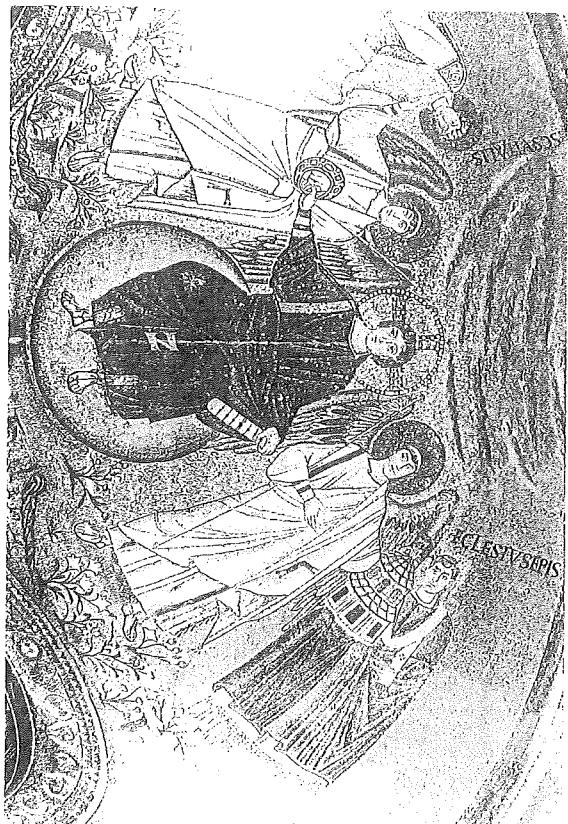


PLATE 6 (B): MOSAIC, APSE, SAN VITALE, RAVENNA.

The most striking adaptation of Hippodrome iconography to Christians ends is probably that at San Vitale in Ravenna<sup>20</sup>. (Plate 6b). Here the crown, which is heavily bejewelled and therefore at one remove from the crown which figures in Hippodrome scenes, is extended by Christ, seated in majesty, towards the martyr Vitalis. One easily recognizes the prototype in the scene of the emperor Theodosius standing in the *kathisma* with a crown in his hand to be presented to the victor, which figures upon the base of his column in Istanbul<sup>21</sup> (Plate 6a). John Chrysostom, so prolific in his use of imperial and sporting analogies, explains in one of his homilies that, just as athletes are not crowned in the stadium but „above“ (presumably in the imperial *kathisma*), so Christians struggle here below, but receive their reward „above“ (in heaven)<sup>22</sup>.

Thus far the distinction between the crown and the diadem is easy enough to make and to explain, the more so that the rite of investiture with a diadem, represented in Iranian art, does not, apparently, exist in Hellenistic art<sup>23</sup>. Confusion begins with the introduction of new items into imperial iconography by Constantine. For example Constantine is represented on coins wearing a headdress which combines the leaves of a crown with the jewelled band of a diadem (Plate 1c). Although his successors were to abandon this in favour of a headdress which is clearly a diadem, it seems that, from the time of Constantine, the emperor's majesty (*βασιλεύς*) and his triumph are jointly symbolized by his headdress. Another Constantian innovation in this kind of iconography, is that of the Hand of God emerging from a mandorla, and extending a crown towards the personage represented below (Plate 7a). Thus on a medal now in

<sup>19</sup> C. Cecchelli, *The Rabula Gospels*, Orlen/Lausanne 1959, f. 13v, p. 71–72.

<sup>20</sup> R. Delbrück, *Die Constantiniyaden und verwandte Denkmäler*, Berlin/Leipzig 1929, p. 72; Tafeln, V pl. 10. This detail only occurs in the Besançon version of the dipylon of Arcobindus.

<sup>21</sup> A. Cameron, *Paraphrase des Charlieren*, Oxford 1973, p. 43–44, fig. 8. This book is a mine of useful information upon the ceremonial and imagery of the Hippodrome.

<sup>22</sup> Dictionnaire de la Bible, II, Paris 1899, 1083—1087 (Couronne); I Corintheans 9, 25; 1 Peter 5, 4; Apocalypse 2, 10, etc.

<sup>23</sup> Marguerite Van Berchem and E. Clozot, *Mosaïques chrétiennes*, Genève 1924, p. 181—182.

<sup>24</sup> Christa Ihm, *Die Programme der christlichen Apokalyptik vom vierten Jahrhundert bis zur Mitte des achten Jahrhunderts*, Wiesbaden 1960, p. 163—

<sup>25</sup> G. Bruns, *Der Obelisk und seine Basis auf Hippodrom zu Konstantinopel*, Istanbul 1935; Cameron, op. cit. (note 21), fig. 19.

<sup>26</sup> John Chrysostom, *In epistola ad Philippenses commentator*, PG 62, 272; cf. P. Van der Aa, *Christus Basileus bij Johannes Chrysostomus*, Nijmegen/Utrecht 1966, p. 1—30.

<sup>27</sup> Investiture scenes, dating back to the IIIrd century A. D., have survived at Neush-i Rustam,

the religious and funerary centre of the Achemenids and the Sasanids. The iconographical formula remains constant: the god puts a diadem into the hands of the king. Cf. R. Graisman, *Parades et Sasanides*, Paris 1962, p. 10, 119, 133, etc. Christian comments (p. 133): une vision artistique se dit d'en haut et d'essence divine. (I thank Mme Nicole Thierry for drawing my attention to these scenes.).

Vienna Constantine stands between two of his sons; one is crowned by an angel of victory, the other, probably, by a personification<sup>30</sup>. Thus far no innovation is introduced. However the hand with a crown above Constantine himself implies that he is directly crowned by God. The title *Desocep̄tis* was later to be applied regularly to emperors, although the first literary witness to it is, apparently, in Sophronius of Jerusalem's *Life of Saints Cyr and John*. The text is relevant to the present enquiry. According to Sophronius, the monk Semiphius gave Theodosius II his baculus and maphorion; Theodosius is qualified here as *Desocep̄tis*. He were the maphorion in battle and thereafter preferred it to any other δέσοδημος<sup>31</sup>.

The Hand of God holding a crown over the head of Christ appears on the lid of the *Capsella africana*, conserved in the Museo sacro of the Vatican<sup>32</sup> (Plate 7 b). Christ, like a victorious charioteer, holds one crown in his hand, while from above another hand extends a crown towards him. André Grabar aptly quotes, with respect to this scene, the African doctor Cyprian: *Dominus... ipse in certamine nostri at coronat et coronam*<sup>33</sup>. However, the sense may not be that Christ is going to present the crown which he holds in his hand; we may have here two successive scenes: God presenting the crown and Christ holding it. Be this as it may, there is no question here of a diadem, any more than in the texts, of which one attributed to George of Pisidia dating from the first half of the VIIIth century seems to be the earliest<sup>34</sup>, in which a martyr is qualified also as *Desocep̄tis*.

One consequence of the conversion of Constantine was that the Hellenistic and Roman concepts of βασιλεύς were further enriched by Jewish notions of Messianic kingship<sup>35</sup>. The ceremony of imposing a diadem on the emperor's head, if first attested in a military context, early became an ecclesiastical one<sup>36</sup>. In the coronation ritual published by Goar, the patriarch recites a prayer paraphrasing Psalm 20 (21), of which verse 3 is οὐρανὸς ἐτί τὴν κεφαλὴν αὐτῷ ἀπέκρινε ἐξ ἀθεοῦ τρίποντος. This is, no doubt, another sign that the symbolism of the crown and the diadem are now united in the imperial address, which receives the name of στέψυας<sup>37</sup>. The verb ἀπέκρινε is used for the imposition both of a crown and of a diadem<sup>38</sup>. George Cedrenus,

<sup>30</sup> Maria R. Alföldi, *Die konstantinische Goldprägung*, Mainz 1963, p. 168 n° 148 and pl. XV fig. 214. Cf. the medal now in the Hamminken, A. Grabar, *Un médailon en or provenant de Mersine en Cilicie*, in L'art de la fin de l'Antiquité et du Moyen Age, Paris 1968, I, p. 200—211 and III, pl. 24. The Hand of God seems to be of Jewish origin; cf. A. Grabar, *Christian Iconography, a Study of its Origins*, London 1969, p. 40.

<sup>31</sup> *Life of Cyr and John*, para. 14, PG 873, 3686—3688 (earlier than 638). Cf. the inscription concerning the donation of a salpian by Justinian II to the sanctuary of Saint Demetrius at Thessalonika: Σεμεόνον Φενιουν Τουρινούν τοῦ θεοορεοῦ, A. Vasiliev, *An Étude of the Emperor Justinian, September 638*, in *Speculum*, 18, 1943, p. 5, and S. G. Mercati, *Sull'uso dei dormentes in Collectanea Byzantina*, II, Baii 1970, p. 370—371.

<sup>32</sup> H. Buschhausen, *Die spätantiken Metallstirnia und frühchristlichen Reliquiare*, Vienna 1971, p. 242—243, pl. 49; A. Grabar, *Meryrium*, II, Paris 1946, p. 56—57, gives the correct explanation of the iconography of this reliquary. Buschhausen did not recognize Christ and, apparently, did not know Grabar's study.

<sup>33</sup> It seems that Julian's military "coronation" is the first of which a written account exists; cf. O. Treitinger, *Die oströmische Kaiser- und Reichsidee*, Darmstadt 1956, p. 7, and that the patriarch intervened for the first time at the coronation of Leo I in 457; cf. W. E. Bassilius, *Zur Frage der ersten Kaiserkrönung durch den Patriarchen und zur Bedeutung dieses Attizes im Kaisermonnelli*, in Byzantinische Zeitschrift, 42, 1942, p. 370.

<sup>34</sup> J. Goar, *Rituale Graecorum*, Paris 1647, p. 925.

<sup>35</sup> See note 12.

<sup>36</sup> The examples cited by Ducange, *Glossarium*, 1445, and by G. W. H. Lampe, *A Patristic Greek Lexicon*, Oxford 1961, 1228, are concerned with crowns (in the Antique sense), but it is evident from the epigrams accompanying miniatures that the word was also used for the imposition of a diadem.

PLATE 7 (B): CAPSELLA AFRICANA, MUZEU SACRO, VATICAN



PLATE 7 (A): MEDAILLON, KUNSTSCHMIDTSCHES MUSEUM, VIENNA



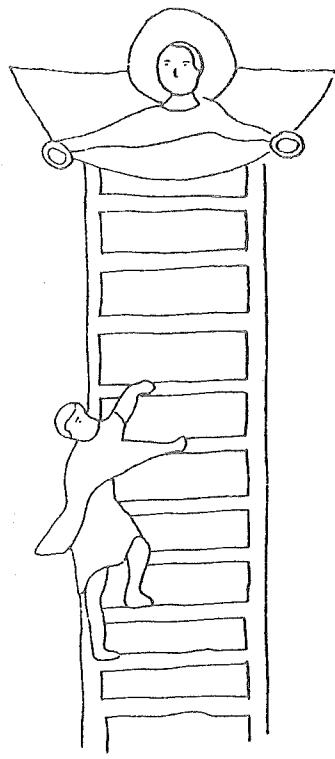


FIG. 2.  
GARRET Ms. 16,  
f. 194

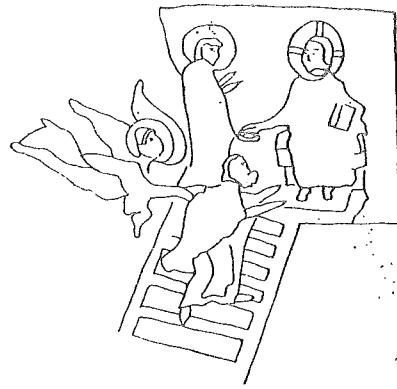


FIG. 3.  
VATICAN. GRAEC.  
394, f. Fv.

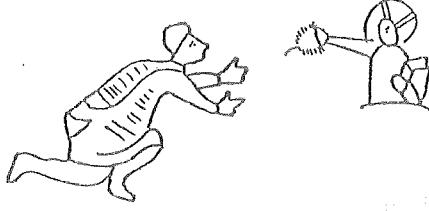


FIG. 4.  
UTRECHT PSALTER,  
f. 34v.

indeed, distinguishes clearly between the marriage crown and the imperial diadem<sup>33</sup>. For the coronation of an emperor, *Pseudo-Codinus* uses the word στραπόποια<sup>34</sup>. Before returning to the specific problems of iconography, one final source of possible confusion must be mentioned: the difficulty in establishing precisely the significance of the Byzantine rite of coronation<sup>35</sup>. Although the ceremony became increasingly important, particularly in the period of the Paleologi, it was „doubled“ by others: raising on a shield, acclamation and proclamation<sup>36</sup>. These other rites marked an accession to power. Unless he was a usurper, an emperor was not normally crowned at the beginning of his reign but during that of his predecessor. A parallel may perhaps be drawn with the consecration and investiture of patriarchs. Coronation, conferred the grace of the state of βασιλεία, a capacity to reign; the authority to reign was conferred by the other ceremonies. As the Patriarch's prayer in the rite of coronation makes clear, these graces of state included the divine favour: long life (immortality), glory, majesty, honour and help against enemies<sup>37</sup>.

These divine favours were not, however, reserved to the state of βασιλεία. In fact it is important to call attention to a group of pictures illustrating *The Heavenly Ladder* of John Climacus in which crowns are awarded for perseverance in the practice of the virtues<sup>38</sup>. Christ, in fact, is represented at the top of the heavenly ladder, conferring crowns upon the monks approaching the last rung. In Hippodrome iconography, the crown is normally held downwards vertically; in scenes where a co-emperor is crowned, the diadem is held horizontally, ready to be imposed on the head. It is interesting to note that both variants occur in Climacus manuscripts: In Garrett MS 16, f. 194 (Princeton University Library), dated 1081, for example, Christ holds the crowns vertically, while in *Sivaz*, 423, f. 10<sup>v</sup>, dated to the XIIth century, he holds the crowns horizontally, as again in the XIVth-century frontispiece added to *Vatican. graec.* 394, f. Fv<sup>39</sup>.

The explanation of this apparently indifferent use of crowns and diadems may be that crowns of the Antique form conferred as prizes in the Hippodrome were no longer in use by the XIth century. However another explanation may be that, whereas in one case the artist had the New Testament uses of Hippodrome imagery in mind, in the other it was perhaps rather *Wisdom* 5, 15—16.

The just live for ever... Royal splendour shall be theirs, and a fair diadem from the Lord himself. In sum the distinction between the royal diadem and the crown of victory, which is clear in Antiquity, subsequently becomes blurred. Byzantine artists and writers, particularly when

<sup>33</sup> *Chronicle*, II, Bonn 1839, p. 315 line 22—24: οὐαὶ δὲ τῷ νυμφεῖον στραπόν καὶ τὸ τῆς βασιλείας διάδημα ἔσται.

<sup>34</sup> *Op. cit.* (note 2), p. 252. On the other hand the word στραπόν is used for the marriage of an autocrat. Alkaterini Christopherouloou, Ιερέα τοῦ προβάτου τῆς Αὐθαίδεων τοῦ βασιλεύοντος καὶ προστάτη τῆς φύσεως τοῦ πλευρῶν τοῦ Πλευρῶν τοῦ Αργονοῦ, 13, 1962—1963, p. 395.

<sup>35</sup> For the most recent *status quaestionis*, cf. A. Failler, *La déposition du patriarche Calistus Ier* (1353), in *Revue des études byzantines*, 31, 1973, p. 146—156.

<sup>36</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 149—152.

<sup>37</sup> Martin, *op. cit.* (note 43), p. 175—177 and fig. 66; p. 190 and fig. 23; p. 177—181 and fig. 67

<sup>38</sup> Goat, *op. cit.* (note 33), p. 925.

<sup>39</sup> J. R. Martin, *The Illustration of the Heavenly Ladder of John Climacus*, Princeton 1954, p. 16—17.

The heavenly crown as a reward for perseverance on earth was a commonplace of Byzantine spirituality. Cf. P. Gautier, *Let. letter de Grégoire, higoumène d'Ostia*, in *Revue des études byzantines*, 31, 1973, p. 212—214. Writing to Alexis Comnenus, a cousin of the emperor Manuel I, Gregory consoles him on the death of his wife by saying that the sufferings which she bore on earth have merited for her innumerable crowns in heaven.

## II. THE ROLE OF ANGELS IN CORONATION SCENES

In matters of coronation, English is not less ambiguous than Greek. Henceforward I use the word 'coronation' indifferently for the imposition of a crown or a diadem. It is evident that the presence of angels in coronation scenes derives from their role in Antique triumphal imagery. To the examples already noted, we may add the cuirass of a IIInd century imperial statue found at Stobi, upon which are represented two angels placing a crown on the emperor's head.<sup>45</sup>

The most obvious Christian adaptations of this kind of scene occur in the iconography of the martyrs. According to the *Passion* of Saint Demetrius, in its IXth century version, the saint killed a scorpion with the sign of the cross. The angel of the Lord then came and placed a crown upon the saint's head, saying to him: Peace be with you, athlete of Christ.<sup>46</sup> No earlier version of this scene for Saint Demetrius occurs than the XIVth-century frescoes of the saint's Life in the Metropolis, dedicated to him, at Mistra<sup>47</sup>. However, the theme recurs fairly often in late Byzantine art. We may cite the ikon attributed to the XVth century in the monastery of the Transfiguration at the Meteora<sup>48</sup>, and the painting over the West door of the monastery of Marko at Sisica, in which Demetrius, seated on horseback, is being crowned and invested with armour (Plate 8). Earlier than these is the ikon of the warrior saint Procopius in the monastery of Saint Catherine, Sinai, attributed, by the Sozirou to the XIIth century<sup>49</sup> (Plate 9). The crown, whether or not imposed by an angel, becomes a regular attribute of warrior saints in late Byzantine iconography, perhaps reflecting the theme of Tertullian's treatise *De corona militari*, which praises those Christian warriors who preferred martyrdom to the ignominy of wearing a military crown fraught with pagan associations<sup>50</sup>.

In a manuscript of the Heavenly Ladder, Sinai. 418, there are three miniatures, in which angels impose a crown<sup>51</sup>. The miniature on f. 164 portrays two angels crowning a poor man, for, according to the text illustrated, the monk who is poor is lord of the world<sup>52</sup>. In this case the crown must have the sense of an imperial diadem. On f. 170 the monk who prays instead of sleeping is crowned by an angel<sup>53</sup>. Here the crown is evidently the reward of perseverance. Finally on f. 279 an angel crowns the monk who practises the virtue of charity. This virtue entitles the poor man to sit with the princes of the angels. Only in the last case does the text contain an explicit reference to angels<sup>54</sup>. It seems, then, that their presence is to be derived from their rôle of servants of the Lord; there is no direct association with Antique angels of victory.

<sup>45</sup> *L'art en Yougoslavie de la préhistoire à nos jours*, catalogue of exhibition, Paris 1971, n° 92.

<sup>46</sup> *Pasio altera*, para. 6, PG 116, 1177.

<sup>47</sup> G. Millet, *Monuments byzantins de Mistra*, Paris 1910, pl. 68, 3; Suzy Dufrene, *Les programmes iconographiques des églises byzantines de Mistra*, Paris 1970, p. 7-8; cf. my article, Saint Demetrius: *The Myroblyos of Thessalonika*, in Eastern Churches Review, 5, 1973, p. 169-170.

<sup>48</sup> *L'art byzantin*, catalogue of exhibition, Athens 1964, n° 240.

<sup>49</sup> G. and Maria Sozirou, *Icônes du Monastère de Sinaï*, I, Athens 1958, p. 171-173; II, pl. 188.

<sup>50</sup> *Tertulliana opera*, II, *Opera montanistica*, ed. E. Kroymann, Tournai 1924, p. 1039-1065; *De corona*, ed. M. J. Fontaine, Paris 1966; J. Bayet, *En rélief la De corona*, in *Rivista dell'archeologia cristiana*, 43, 1967, p. 21-32.

<sup>51</sup> Martin, op. cit. (note 43), fig. 198, 200, 214.

<sup>52</sup> *Scatola paradisi*, 17, PG 88, 928.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., 19, PG 88, 937.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., 29, PG 88, 1152.



PLATE 8: FRESCO, MONASTERY OF MARKO, SISICA.



PLATE 9: ICON, MONASTERY OF SAINT CATHERINE, MOUNT SINAI.



PLATES 10 (A &amp; B): MINIATURES, THEODORE PSALTER, BRITISH MUSEUM, LONDON.



Finally there is the miniature of Hezekiah in the *Theodore Psalter*, to which I alluded at the beginning of this paper (London, Addit. 19352, f. 21)<sup>55</sup>. (Plate 10 a) The text illustrated is, it will be recalled, Psalm 20 (21), v. 4: *Thou set a crown of fine gold upon his head*. In the *Chi-Rho Psalter* (Morgan, addit. græc. 129, f. 18<sup>56</sup>) Hezekiah, dressed in imperial robes, is raised on a shield; the inscription merely says: 'Εξαύλεις ο βασιλέως'. The *Barberini Psalter* (Paris, barb. græc. 372, f. 30<sup>57</sup>) adds to the *Chi-Rho* miniature a standard held by Hezekiah in his right hand, an angel descending from a mandorla to place a single crown on his head and a more detailed inscription: ὁ Εξαύλεις απέκευνε. Another variant occurs in the *Bristol Psalter* (London, Addit. 40731, f. 33), in which David (not Hezekiah), raised on a shield, is crowned by a personification called *Bacchus*<sup>58</sup>. The miniature in the *Theodore Psalter* only differs from that in the *Barberini Psalter* in that the angel imposes a second crown.

The artist responsible for illustrating the *Chi-Rho Psalter* was, then, content to illustrate this Psalm with the standard picture used to mark the beginning of a reign in Old Testament history. The *Bristol Psalter* makes it clear that the state of *βασιλεὺς* is being conferred by placing a crown on David's head. This must also be the sense of the miniature in the *Barberini Psalter*, with the difference that *βασιλεὺς* comes from God by the intermediary of his angel. Can the hypothesis still be maintained that the second crown in the *Theodore Psalter* modifies the sense of the miniature?

In the *Utrecht Psalter*, f. 34<sup>59</sup>, illustrating Psalm 60 (61) v. 7: *Dies super dies regis adicies, annos eius usque in diem generationis*, the king, wearing a diadem, stretches his arms towards Christ in the gesture of prayer. Christ extends towards him a crown with fillets of the Antique kind. In this case, the crown, distinguished from the diadem, no doubt symbolises God's favour, while the diadem symbolises the kingly state. However, in the *Theodore Psalter*, given the fact that the two crowns are identical, and given the preceding illustrations of this Psalm, it seems impossible to maintain the interpretation that I had proposed before. It seems more plausible, to my mind, to interpret the miniature as representing two successive scenes: the angel descending with a crown, and the king wearing the crown. Both crowns here have the connotations of a diadem.

Probably the scene of coronation by an angel has been transposed from another miniature portraying a Byzantine emperor. Indeed, there is a legend, which Constantine Porphyrogenitus recounts in the *De administrando imperio*, that the first imperial diadem was sent by an angel to the first Constantine: These robes of state and the diadems... were not fashioned by men... but when God made emperor that famous Constantine the Great, he sent him these robes by the hand of his angel, and the diadems...<sup>60</sup>

<sup>55</sup> Sirapie Der Nersessian, *Illustrations des psautiers grecs du Moyen Age*, II, Londres, Add. 19.352; Paris 1970, p. 22, 78–79. It is not certain that this Psalm evokes the occasion when the crown of Milcoom, king of Ribia, was placed upon David's head (II Samuel 12, 30–31).

<sup>56</sup> Ch. Walter, Raising on a shield in Byzantine iconography, *Revue des études byzantines*, 33, 1975, p. 149–150 and plates 4–5.

<sup>57</sup> Suzy Dufrenne, *L'illustration des peintres grecs du Moyen Age*, I, Paris 1966, p. 55–56, pl. 49; Eadem, *Le Peintre de Bristol et les autres peintres byzantins*, in *Cahiers archéologiques*, 14, 1964, p. 174, fig. 28.

<sup>58</sup> E. T. De Wald, *Illustrations of the Utrecht*

<sup>59</sup> Psautier, Princeton 1932, p. 28. (I thank Mme Suzy Dufrenne for this, and other references; also for having allowed me to present the subject of this paper in her seminar at the Ecole pratique des hautes études on May 18th, 1974).

<sup>60</sup> Constantine Porphyrogenitus, *De administrando imperio*, ed. Gy. Moravcsik and tr. R. Jenkins, Budapest 1949; p. 66–67; ibid., *Commentary*, ed. R. Jenkins, London 1962, p. 64–65. Cf. Michael Psellos: ὁ δὲ... βασιλεὺς, οὐ το στρόφη οὐ τὸ κυρίου οὐδὲ Στράτον τὸν εὐθύνειν προσπρός... Letter 201, in *Mémoires de l'Académie Impériale des Beaux-Arts*, ed. C. N. Sathas, Metzcouvach, Brüssel, V, Venice/Paris, 1876, p. 508–509.

Our next task must, then, be to examine a number of Byzantine miniatures, in which Christ is represented presenting a crown to an emperor by the intermediary of an angel.

### III. CORONATION BY ANGELS IN BYZANTINE DEDICATORY PICTURES

The four miniatures which I propose to analyse in this section are all extremely wellknown<sup>60</sup>. However in each case previous publication has left something to be desired. For this reason I give a full description of each miniature and transcribe the epigraphs.

#### 1. *Homilies of Gregory of Nazianzen*, Paris, græc. 510, f. C<sup>v</sup>, Basil I.

The miniature, executed between 880 and 883, portrays Basil I between the archangel Gabriel, called ἀρκορεφέτος, placing a diadem on his head, while the prophet Elias presents him with a standard.<sup>61</sup> The miniature is, unfortunately, badly damaged, for which reason I add a drawing

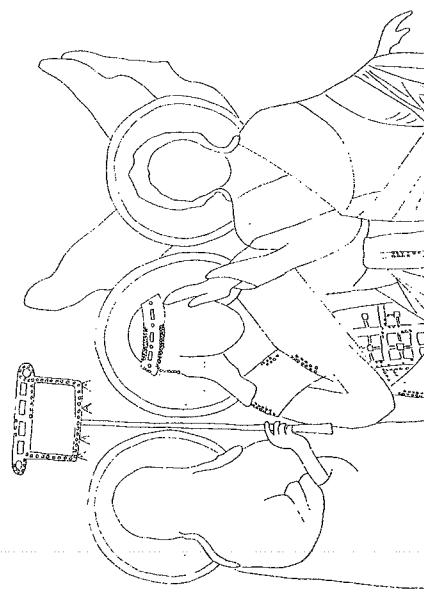


FIG. 5  
PARIS, GRÆC. 510, f. C<sup>v</sup>.

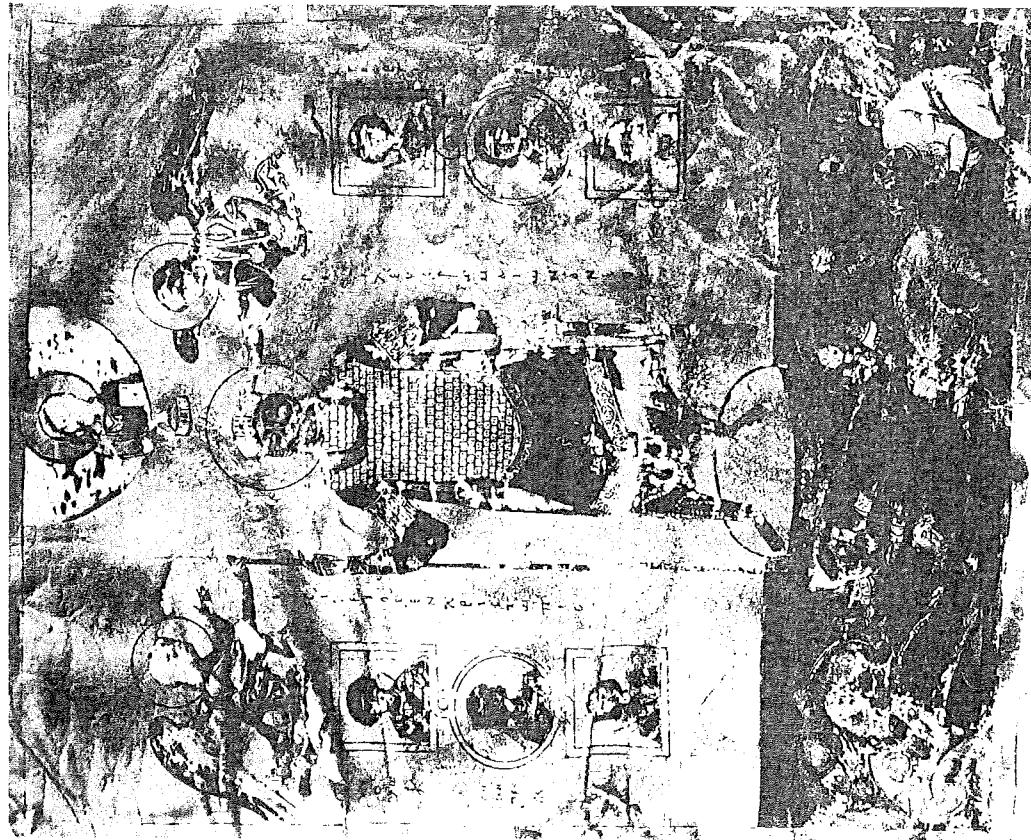


PLATE 11 (A): MINIATURE, PSALTER OF BASIL II, MARCIANA, VENICE.

<sup>60</sup> A. Grabar, *L'empereur dans l'art byzantin*, Strasbourg 1936 (reprinted photographically, London 1971, with an updated bibliography, p. 1-122). Related to the pictures discussed here are those where Christ himself crowns, or blesses or extends his protection to the royal personages represented, as well as those where the Virgin or a saint replaces Christ. For additional comparative material, cf. S. Lambros, Απόκρισις βασιλεύων αὐτοκράτορων, Athens 1930; H. Belting, *Das illustrierte Buch in der spätbyzantinischen Gesellschaft*, Heidelberg 1970; J. Barker, *Manuel II Palaeologus*, Rutgers University (New Jersey) 1969, and the contributions of H. Belting, *Die Auftraggeber der spätbyzantinischen Bildhandschriften*, and Tanja Veltmann, *Le portrait dans l'art des Paléologues*, in *Art et société à Byzance sous les Paléologues*, Venice 1971. I thank Father Joseph Munitz for valuable remarks concerning the literary genre of the verses which accompany the miniatures.

<sup>61</sup> H. Omont, *Fac-similés des miniatures des plus*

anciens manuscrits grecs de la Bibliothèque Nationale, 1902 and 1929, p. 13, pl. XIX; Stirpiae Der Nersessian, *The Illustration of the Homilies of Saint Gregory of Nazianzen*, Paris, græcus 510, in Dumbarton Oaks Papers, 16/1962, p. 198; G. Moravcsik, *Sagen und Legenden über Kaiser Basilius*, in Dumbarton Oaks Papers, 15/1961, p. 104 and fig. 11. Moravcsik does not, to my mind, increase our understanding of this picture by relating it to the ceremonial coronation of Basil. Basil was, in fact, crowned twice, once as the adopted son of Michael III and once as co-emperor (Cedrenus, *op. cit.* note 38, p. 181, 200; cf. Alkaterini Christophilo-Poulou, Εκκλησίας διορθευτικού και ορθόγενετου βασιλεύοντος, Athens 1956, p. 90-92).

On the occasion of his proclamation there was no further coronation ceremony; it would have been superfluous. The coronation represented here is, therefore, purely symbolic; it sets forth the source of Basil's authority without explicit reference to the historical coronation(s).\*

of the essential part. (figure 5) Of the quatrain in dodecasyllables, the line running across the top of the miniature is hardly decipherable. The other three lines run thus:

οὐαρήν δὲ τὴν κέρκην προμηθεῖν  
βασιλεὺς στρίψει σε κόρου προσάρτην.  
νίκην κατέθεσται Τίλιαν δημογράφει.

(Gabriel, announcing joy, crowns you, Basil, ruler of the world; Elias underwrites victory over enemies).

The two themes of *Psalm 20* recur: βασιλεῖα and victory over enemies. However, it is the standard which is regarded particularly as an emblem of success in battle, while the imposition of a crown is the central theme. This would have been more evident still had the miniature on f. B° not been suppressed. Traces of a sketch are just visible under the substituted miniature: Gabriel and Elias jointly crown Basil.

The formula for the coronation of Basil is that which was used in Antique art when the crown was imposed by a personification. An example may be seen on an AE of Servius Sulpicius Galba, dated 68/69 A.D., on which the emperor is crowned by a personification of the Senate<sup>62</sup>.

It does not seem to have been used in Byzantine iconography earlier than this miniature. From the Xth century, however, it figures on Byzantine coins<sup>63</sup>, and is used also, for example, on Leo VI's sceptre<sup>64</sup>. It only recurs in dedicatory pictures when Christ crowns directly.

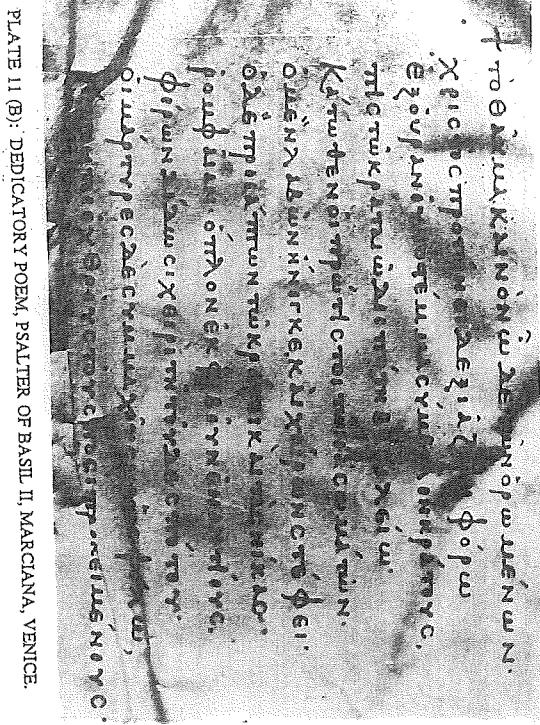


PLATE 11 (B): DEDICATORY POEM, PSALTER OF BASIL II, MARCIANA, VENICE.

## 2. *Psalter, Venice Marc. graec. 17, f. III, Basil II.*



FIG. 6.  
AE OF SERVIUS  
SULPICIUS GALBA.

In this miniature, executed about 1019, Basil II is portrayed in armour standing upon a scabellum. (Plate 11 a) In the foreground a number of personages are making a *prosternēsis*. To left and right are busts of warrior saints: George, Procopius, Demetrius, Mercurius and the two Theodore. Above Basil's head, in a half circle, is a bust of Christ, who holds out a crown horizontally, not vertically as does the hand of Gold. Two angels figure in this scene; one places a crown on Basil's head, while the other presents him with a lance. Like the warrior saints they are named: Michael (left) and Gabriel (right). Basil himself is called: Βασιλεὺς ἐν Χριστῷ ποτέ βασιλεὺς Παύλιον ὁ νέος (Basil II, faithful in Christ, emperor of the Romans).

Before discussing the significance of this scene, it would be well to examine the eleven-line poem in dodecasyllables on the page facing the miniature: (Plate 11 b).

τὸ θεῖμα κανὸν ἔδει τὸν ἀριστεύων.  
Χριστὸς προτίμειον δεῖξεν ζωτιρόπονον.

<sup>62</sup> R. Brilliant, *Gesture and Rank in Roman Art*, New Haven (Connecticut) 1963, p. 87, 90, 201, and *Money in the Byzantine Empire, 1081–1261*, Washington 1961, *passim*.

<sup>63</sup> The first representation of a coronation on a Byzantine coin seems to be due to Alexander (912–913), who is crowned by his patron saint (W. Wroth, *Catalogue of the Imperial Byzantine Coins in the British Museum*, II, London 1908, p. 450, pl. LII 1). John Tzimisces (969–976) is crowned by the Virgin; in one variant the Hand of God is also portrayed (*Ibid.*, p. 474, pl. LIV 10–12). From the time of Alexius I Comnenus the coronation

motif occurs frequently; cf. M. F. Hendy, *Coinage and Money in the Byzantine Empire, 1081–1261*, Washington 1961, *passim*.

<sup>64</sup> Talbot Rice, *op. cit.* (note 6), n° 96.

<sup>65</sup> Reproduction in colour, Talbot Rice, *op. cit.* (note 6), pl. XX; cf. p. 306; Strippie Der Nesiessian, *Remarks on the Date of the Menologium and the Psalter written for Basil II*, in *Byzantium*, 15, 1940–1941, p. 115; V. Lazarev, *Storia della pittura bizantina* Turin, 1967, p. 141, 174 note 57, pl. 128–130.

εξ οὐρανοῦ τὸ στέμμα σημεῖον κακῶν  
πατέσθι καρπαχῆ δεσμότη βασιλεφ.  
κατάθεν οἱ πρότεροι τοῦ: εἰσωμενών,  
δὲ μεγάλην ἡγεμόνα καὶ λαβὼν στέφε,  
δὲ προσθέντα τῷ αἱρετε καὶ τὸν νίκαι  
δοματίου, ὅπλον ἐκφεύγοντο, ἐνεργούσι,  
φέρων διδοὺς καὶ τῇ τοῦ δεσμοτοῦ  
οἱ μάρτυρες δὲ σημεῖον τοῦτο προκεκένουσ.  
μητρούρες ἔγθεος τούτο τοσὶ προκεκένουσ.

(What new wonder is to be seen here! Christ extends in his lifebearing hand / from heaven the crown, symbol of power, / to the despot Basil, faithful and mighty. / Below (are) the princes of the angels. / One (angel), having taken (the crown), has carried (it) and joyfully crowns / The other (angel), linking to power victories as well, / (the) lance, weapon which terrifies adversaries, / having carried (it), he gives (it) into the ruler's hand. / The martyrs fight with him as with a friend, / throwing down enemies prostrate at his feet.)<sup>68</sup>

This text, which, from the style of the script, is certainly contemporary with the miniature, removes a certain number of ambiguities in the iconography. The prostrate figures are said explicitly to be enemies. A similar formula is used for representing conquered enemies in the *Theodore Psalter*<sup>69</sup>. In this case it is a reasonable deduction to suppose that they are Bulgars<sup>70</sup>. The two crowns are not different; in fact two successive actions are represented: Christ extends the crown, and the angel, having taken it, places it on Basil's head. Moreover the crown is said explicitly to be a symbol of power (*κέφαλος*); the adjectival form of the word (*κρατούσις*) being repeated in the poem to qualify Basil. However, as in the previous miniature, success in battle is joined to power; this success is symbolized by a lance, not by a crown of victory.

Were there any doubt as to the significance of the two crowns in this scene, one could dispel it by adducing the miniature in the Theodore Psalter (*Londin. Addit. 1932*, f. 192), in which the set-out of the scene is virtually the same<sup>71</sup>. (Plate 10.) The only difference is that here

<sup>68</sup> Transcribed from the photograph belonging to the Institut des textes, Paris, kindly put at my disposition by Father Joseph Parmentier. This epigram was previously published by J. Morelli, *Bibliotheca manuscripta graeca et latina*, Bassani 1802, p. 34—35 (information kindly supplied by Monsieur J. N. Olivier of the Institut des textes), and by I. Savitsko (‘The Illuminators of the Menologium of Basil II’, *Dumbarton Oaks Papers*, 16, 1962, p. 272 note 92). It should be compared with the poem (n° 81), in *Marc. graec.* 524, f. 36, concerning a lost portrait of Manuel I Comnenus, published by Sp. P. Lamprou, ‘O Mαυρούντος 524’, in ‘Νέος Ελληνογρυπόν’, 8, 1911, p. 43—44. The poem is attributed to Androniceus Kamaitius (fl. 1150); cf. *Lettres et discours de Georges et Démétrios Tornikes*, ed. J. Darrouzès, Paris 1970, p. 43—49, and perhaps describes a picture over the entrance to Manuel Comnenus' new palace (cf. R. Janin, *Constantinople byzantine*, Paris 1964, p. 126—128), which was decorated with pictures representing Manuel Comnenus' wars. See also below, note 94.

<sup>69</sup> Der Nersessian, *op. cit.* (note 55), p. 22 and fig. 32. For the sake of this miniature in proselytism, the iconographic iconography, cf. my article, *Papal political imagery in the Medieval Laten Palace*, in Cahiers archéologiques, 21, 1971, p. 109—115.

For its association with warrior saints, cf. my *art. cit.* (note 47), p. 175.

<sup>70</sup> The deduction is reasonable, because Basil II's principal victories were over the Bulgars, earning him the dubious title of Bulgarcoccon. It is, however, to be noted that J. Ivanov, in his article, *Le costume des anciens Bulgars*, in L'art byzantin chez les Slaves, Paris 1930, p. 324—333, adduces no conclusive proof from an examination of their dress that the prostrate personages are Bulgars.

<sup>71</sup> Der Nersessian, *op. cit.* (note 55), p. 59, 71—72 and fig. 301. Cf. the similar scene serving as frontispiece to the Liturgical Roll n° 1, in the Library of the Leningrad Academy of Sciences (formerly at the Russian Institute in Constantinople). The two miniatures are reproduced by Suzy Dufremne, *Deux chefs d'œuvre de la miniature du XIe siècle*, in *Cahiers archéologiques*, 17, 1976, p. 189, fig. 16, 17.

all ambiguity has been eliminated, for the angel actually receives the higoumene's staff from Christ, before presenting it to the higoumene.

3. John Chrysostom's Commentary on Saint Matthew, Sinai. 364 (373), f. 3,  
Constantine IX Monomachus, Zoë and Theodora.

Constantine IX married Zoë in 1047<sup>72</sup>; consequently this miniature must date from about the middle of the century<sup>73</sup>. (Plate 12.) Facing it (f. 2v), is another miniature, in which Matthew presents his Gospel to John Chrysostom<sup>74</sup>.

The emperor is not dressed in armour, as was Basil in the preceding miniature, but in *sakkos*, *loros* and *stremma*. The two sisters wear the *thorakion* and the *sympatton* (woman's crown), ornamented with *pinnæ*. The three portraits are accompanied by inscriptions (from left to right): *Zoὴ εὐεξεῖται· γειρυστ(ω) ἡ φοροφορεύντ(η)*. *Κονσταντίνος ἐν Χ(ριστο)φ(ί) τῷ Θ(εο)ῷ φιλοσόφος, βαζανί(η), αὐτοκρατ(ωρ)*. *Ταπεινός ὁ μοναχός. Θεοδόρα εὐτρόπεια· τὸ προσόντοντον(η)*. (Zoë, most revered Augusta, born in the purple. Constantine, in Christ God faithful Basileus, autocrat of the Romans. Monomachus. Theodora Augusta, born in the purple.).

Above the imperial personages, Christ is seated upon a rainbow in a mandorla. From his hands and feet rays of light descend towards the heads of the figures below. A crown is suspended above the head of Constantine, while, to left and right, is an angel holding a crown and bâton.

Around the border of the miniature, runs a quatrains in dodeasyllables:

ἀς τῆς τριάδος σῶτρος εἰς πανορμότερο  
στρέτοις καρδιστού δεσμοτοῦ μοναχού  
δι μαρτυρούσιν καρυός τὸ φρεσφόρος καλλίσιον  
τῶν τῆς ἀνακταρῶν τὴν φανήν τραπεζίδα

(As one of the Trinity, Saviour Pantocrator, / may you protect the mightiest despot Monomachus, / the pair of sisters and offspring of the purple, / the shining trinity of the rulers of the earth.).

In spite of a certain similarity with the preceding miniature, there are differences of detail, which, to my mind, modify considerably its significance. In the first place, there are no military allusions. The central theme is government. Secondly, an analogy is established between the Trinity in heaven, represented by the all-powerful Saviour and the Trinity on earth, among whom figures the mightiest despot Monomachus. The use of the analogy between the terrestrial and the celestial Trinity is, in fact, relatively common in the Byzantine imperial tradition<sup>75</sup>.

<sup>72</sup> G. Ostrogorsky, *History of the Byzantine State*, Oxford 1968, p. 326.

<sup>73</sup> This subject merits a monograph. When Heraclius and Tiberius were to be associated with Constantine IV as co-emperors, the citizens of Nicomedia acclaimed them: εἰς τρίαδον νικητούς. *Tribus τριῶν ἑρακλεούς, Theophanes, Chronographia*, ed. De Boor, Leipzig 1883, p. 352 lines 14—16; Zonaras ed. Bonn, III, 1897, p. 222 lines 12—15. Cf. Treitinger, *op. cit.* (note 34), p. 37—39. For the representation of three angels above the author portrait of John Cantacuzenus, *Paris. græc.* 124, f. 123v, cf. Beiting, *op. cit.* (note 60), p. 86—88, fig. 51.

<sup>74</sup> op. cit. (note 71), pl. XII.

Secondly, the apocalyptic presentation of Christ, linked to the rays of light and the stars, which may just be seen in the trajectory of the light rays, introduces a theme to be more fully developed, as Dr Mijović noted, in the narthex of Gračanica. Again the analogy between Christ and the Light of the World and the emperor is relatively common in the Byzantine imperial tradition.<sup>74</sup>

Finally, the three crowns suspended above the imperial personages, while resembling each other, do not resemble those which they are actually wearing. In fact they recall rather the votive crown of Leo VI in the Treasury of Saint Mark's at Venice<sup>75</sup> (Plate 13). Another kind of crown was known in Byzantine tradition. Although there was, as we have seen, no question of offering an imperial diadem to barbaric rulers, others, who were admitted into the Byzantine family, might be presented with a crown<sup>76</sup>. Unfortunately one cannot be sure as to its exact form. However we do know that Constantine Monomachus, who is represented in this miniature, sent such a crown to Andrew I, king of Hungary<sup>77</sup>. I suggest, therefore, that the crowns represented here are to be explained in terms of a third analogy: Constantine Monomachus, the mightiest despot, considered his relationship to other rulers on earth, such as the king of Hungary, to be analogous to the relationship between Christ, Pantocrator, and himself.

4. Psalter, Vatican, bark. græc. 372, f. 1, Alexius I Comnenus, Irene and John (?).

The two emperors, dressed in *sakkos* and *lōros*, hold standard in the right hand and stand on a *scobellum*. (Plate 15) The empress, also standing on a *scobellum*, wears the *thorakion*. In a half mandorla, Christ is enthroned. In his left hand he holds, as usual, a book, while in his right hand he holds a crown of the same rounded style as that which is worn by the emperor in the preceding miniatures, except for the lappets and the cross in pearls surmounting it.

Below are three angels. Each one places a crown on the head of one of the imperial personages. The empress has the normal *tympanon*. However the two emperors wear a crown with a globe of a kind which hitherto we have not met; it is quite different from that which Christ is holding in his hand.

Around the miniature runs a quatrain in dodecasyllables:

οὐδὲ ἡ τριπετῆς ἔθεσ παντελία  
πολλοὶ διάδει καὶ γενήτως λόγοι  
εἰρηναῖς τε καὶ σοφῖς ναυαρτίαις  
διεζήτειν τε εργάτων τῆς εἰρήνης

(... whom (may) the triply brilliant divine monarchy / protect during long and serene times / in a peaceful and wise state / to wield the sceptres of authority.).

The preceding folio is now lost. De Wald has suggested that the verses, which begin abruptly on this folio with a relative pronoun, in fact continue from the preceding page<sup>78</sup>. It would have

<sup>74</sup> This subject also merits a monograph. Cf. my article, *Two Notes on the Desis*, in *Revue des études byzantines*, 26, 1968, p. 332.

<sup>75</sup> A. Grabar, *Opere bizantine*, in Il Tesoro e il Museo di San Marco, Florence 1971, n° 92, p. 81.

<sup>76</sup> A. Grabar, *Opere bizantine*, in Il Tesoro e il Museo di San Marco, Florence 1971, n° 92, p. 81. Barberini Psalter, in *Hesperia*, 13, 1944, p. 80. fig. 46.

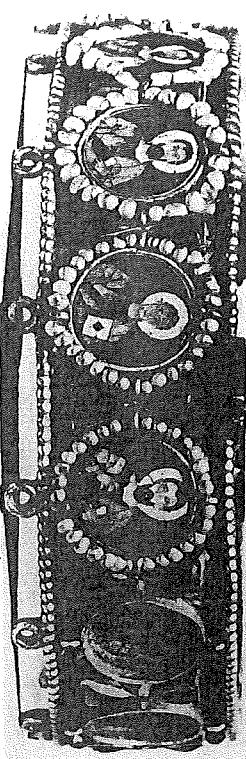


PLATE 13: CROWN, TREASURY, SAN MARCO, VENICE.

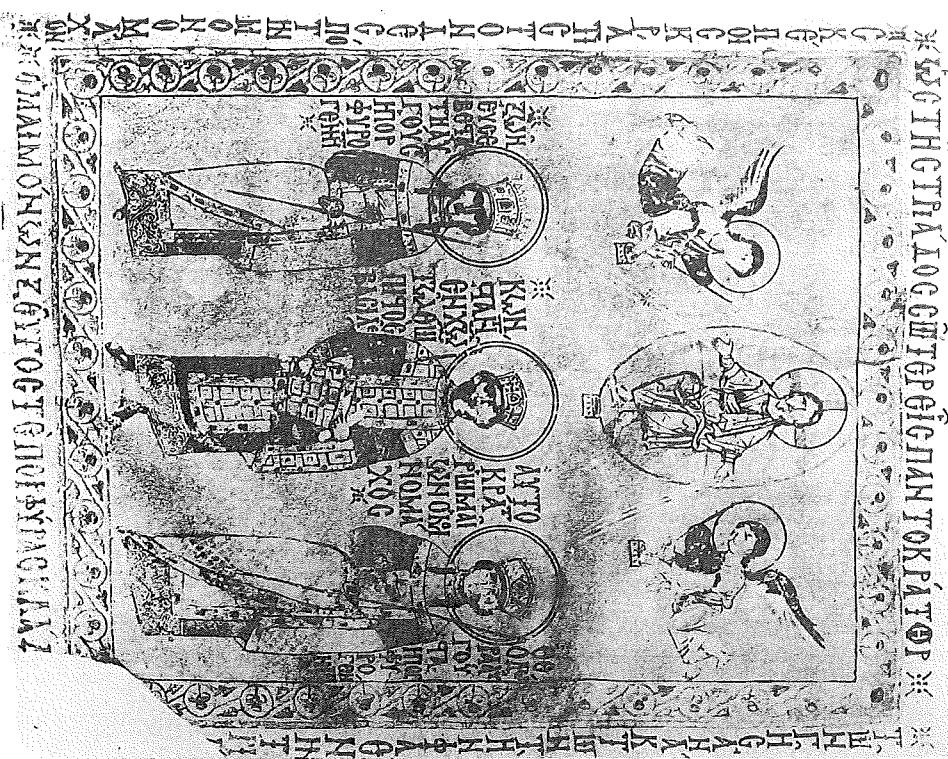


PLATE 12: MINIATURE, JOHN CHRYSOSTOM'S COMMENTARY ON MATTHEW, MONASTERY OF SAINT CATHERINE, MOUNT SINAI.

<sup>77</sup> Treitinger, op. cit. (note 34), p. 202—204; Déés, op. cit. (note 3), p. 139—149; G. Ostrogorsky, *Die byzantinische Staatshierarchie*, in Zur byzantinischen Geschichte, Darmstadt 1973, p. 119—141.

<sup>78</sup> E. De Wald, *The Comnenian Portraits in the Barberini Psalter*, in *Hesperia*, 13, 1944, p. 80.

197

been on the missing folio that the names of the personages represented would have been inscribed. However this may be, the identification, made independently by De Wald and de Jerphanion, with Alexius I Comnenus, Irene and their son John, is now generally accepted. The date 1092, when John was crowned, may be advanced<sup>77</sup>. De Wald has also suggested that the book which John holds in his hand is, in fact, this Psalter, illuminated for the occasion.

By analogy with the miniature of the coronation of Hezekaiah on f. 30<sup>v</sup> mentioned above, the coronation may be interpreted as conferment of the state of *Beyazetz*. The Trinity analogy is introduced but not in so developed a form as in the previous miniature. There remain, then, only the contrasting style of crowns and the gesture of the angel above the head of Alexius Comnenus to be explained.

The contrasting style of the crowns may be summarily despatched as a „non-lieu“. In a lecture delivered at the Conférence Gabriel Millet (Paris) on January 11th 1975, John Spaharakis called attention to the fact that the crowns had been repainted. In February 1975 I was able to examine myself the manuscript in Rome. The crown of the empress has not been repainted since the angel's hand is clearly visible. On the other hand, the angel's hand has been painted over in the case of the two emperors. Originally, therefore, the two emperors were represented wearing crowns of the same type as that which Christ holds in his hand. Consequently, the crowns offer no argument in favour of an association of the miniature with the reign of Alexius Comnenus, when the globe was introduced<sup>78</sup>. All that we can infer is that the repainting of the miniature cannot be earlier than the reign of Alexius Comnenus.

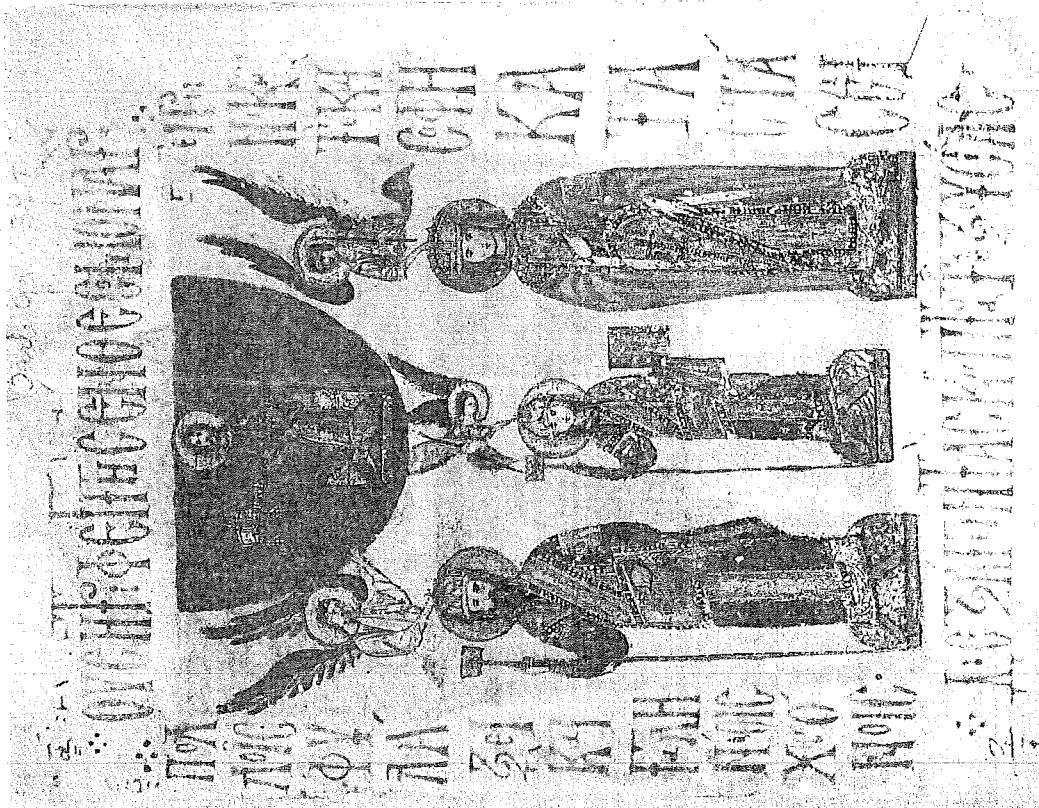
The gesture of the angel, whose left hand is extended towards Christ, while the right hand places the crown on the head of Alexius, resembles that of the Virgin in certain versions of the *Deesis*<sup>79</sup>. In her rôle of Advocate, the Virgin extends one hand towards the person whose petition she is to present and the other towards Christ who is to receive it. If we interpret the angel's gesture in this miniature in the same way, then Alexius, who is, in fact, ruling emperor is being particularly commended to Christ.

The analysis of these miniatures and the confrontation of their iconography with the accompanying texts permit us to draw certain conclusions. Firstly, the imposition of a crown or diadem has as its primary sense the conferment of power or authority. This comes from Christ by the intermediary of an angel. The notion of victory or triumph, which is primary in Roman and Hellenistic coronation scenes, as in other genres of Christian scenes, notably the triumph of the martyr and perseverance in the practice of virtue, is secondary in these imperial portraits. When it is explicitly present, as in the portraits of the two Basils, a military investiture accom-

<sup>77</sup> De Jerphanion, *art. cit.* (note 4), p. 270—271.  
Sirapie Der Nersessian, *op. cit.* (note 55), p. 63  
and V. Lazarev, *op. cit.* (note 65), p. 249 note 28,  
accept this identification. De Wald, *art. cit.* (note 78), p. 80, draws attention to the use in the verses  
of expressions characteristic of the acclamations  
made on the occasion of a coronation; cf. Con-  
stantine Porphyrogenitus, *Book of Ceremonies*,  
chapters 38 and 39, I ed. Bonn 1829, p. 192 line  
14; p. 195 lines 14—15; p. 196 lines 3—4. Cf. also  
P. Maas, *Méritische Abläufanzeiger der Byzantiner*,

in *Byzantinische Zeitschrift*, 21, 1912, p. 28—51.  
It is to be noted that, in the acclamations, the  
*art. cit.* (note 79), p. 316, 320 and fig. 6, 7.

PLATE 14: MINIATURE, BARBERINI PSALTER, VATICAN.



panies the imposition of the crown. On the other hand further developments of the notion of authority are possible. By reason of the special links between the emperor and the members of the Trinity authority may be accompanied by divine illumination. Further the relationship between the emperor and other princes may provide an analogy for his relationship with Christ.

#### IV. CORONATION BY ANGELS IN SLAV DEDICATORY PICTURES.

It is possible now, I think, to give a clear and certain interpretation of the picture of the coronation of Milutin and Simona at Gračanica. My suggestion that the double coronation as an iconographical theme is derived from the distinction between the crown and the diadem in Antiquity cannot be rigorously maintained. Nor, it seems, can the distinction made by Dr Bošković between the diadem and the crown of life. The primary sense, in all these official portraits, is that imperial authority is derived from Christ; where the two crowns are identical, two successive stages are represented in the conferment of the crown by Christ.

It seems that Milutin was the first Serbian ruler to make use of this iconographical theme — and this right at the end of his reign. One may ask why he should have adopted it at this time. Earlier Serbian rulers were represented more modestly in the churches which they built. They were aware that their status was inferior to that of the Byzantine emperor. Stefan Provenčani was, indeed, proud of his subordinate title of sebastocrator<sup>82</sup>. However since his time the Nemanjić family had risen in the world.

In his earlier foundations Milutin is also represented with a relative modesty. At Arilje, where he figures with Dragutin, the two Nemanjić princes, in imperial dress, are blessed by Christ (1293—1295)<sup>83</sup>. At this time Milutin had been already master of Byzantine territory in the Skoplje region for more than a decade<sup>84</sup>. After 1299 his social status was further enhanced by his marriage with Andronicus II's daughter Simona<sup>85</sup>. Not only did this marriage mark the beginning of an intensive influence of Byzantine culture on the Serbs, but it also raised Milutin socially far above the general run of Serbian nobles. Although, apparently, he did not himself adopt the title of Tsar, the time was not far off when Stefan Dušan would do so<sup>86</sup>. Meanwhile the iconography of the portrait at Gračanica suggests that Milutin was already attributing himself the same kind of relationship with Christ as that of the Byzantine emperors. He is receiving what is virtually the βασιλεία from Christ as they did.

If Milutin was the first Serbian prince to lay claim to so exalted a status, he had been preceded in Sicily by William II. There are two dedicatory mosaics in the cathedral of Monreale; both date from between 1180 and 1194<sup>87</sup>. In one king William II presents the church to the Virgin. In the other Christ is enthroned, holding a book inscribed with the following words: *Ego sum lux mundi; qui sequitur me, tenet deum in manu* (John 3, 12). Christ, in fact, crowns the king himself, but two angels descend with a sceptre and an orb (Plate 15). The picture, if closer to Western tradition than those in Serbia, nevertheless depends from Byzantine models. A century before Milutin, a Sicilian king was laying claim to derive his authority directly from Christ.

<sup>82</sup> Ostrogorsky, *art. cit.* (note 70), p. 125.

<sup>83</sup> Radojčić, *op. cit.* (note 1), p. 55—56, pl. XVII 25.

<sup>84</sup> Ostrogorsky, *op. cit.* (note 70), p. 464.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 489—490.

<sup>86</sup> In the Gospel of Hilandar (1346) Stojanović, *op. cit.* (note 5), I, Belgrade 1902, p. 35, n° 89;

in an inscription at Dečani, ibid., III, Belgrade 1905, p. 79, n° 510; on the Nemanjić genealogical tree at Dečani, (about 1350), Radojčić, *op. cit.* (note 1), p. 58, pl. XVI 24.

<sup>87</sup> O. Demus, *The Mosaics of Norman Sicily*, London 1949, p. 118, p. 163 note 314, pl. 7a; Lazarov *op. cit.* (note 65), p. 219.



PLATE 15: MOSAIC, CATHEDRAL, MONREALE.

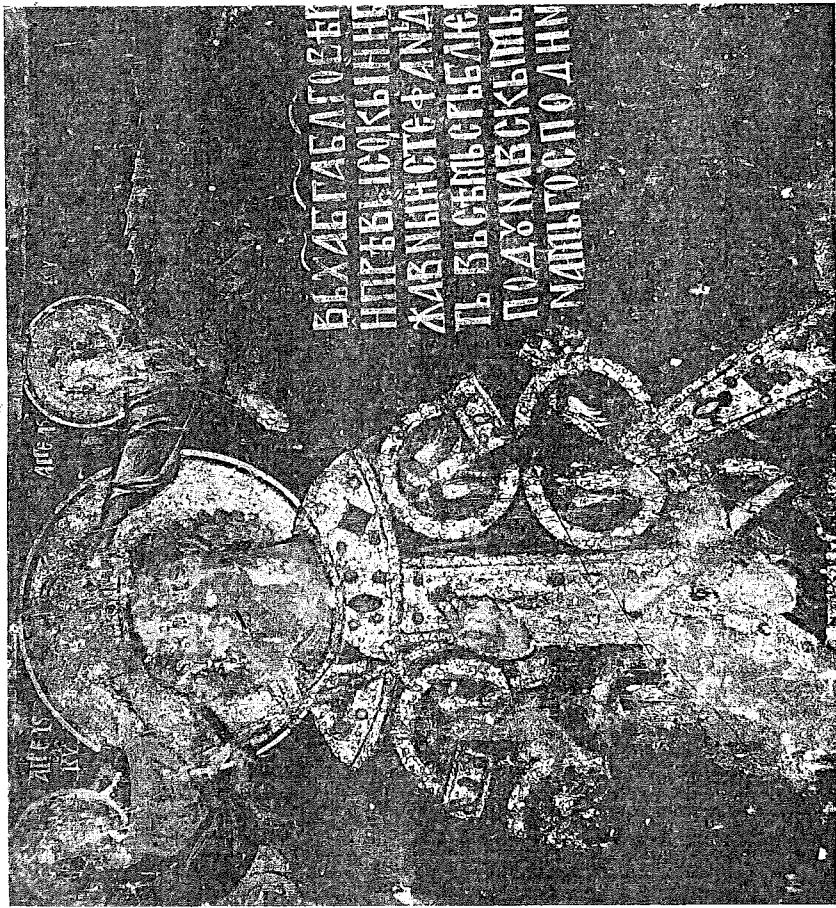
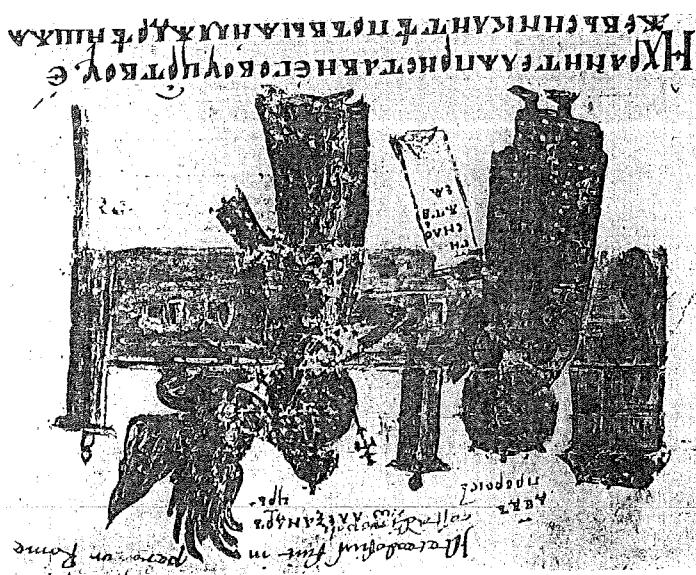


PLATE 17: DESPOT STEFAN, FRESCO, LJUBOSTINJA.

PLATE 16 (A & B): MINIATURES, CHRONICLE  
OF MASSES, VATCAN.

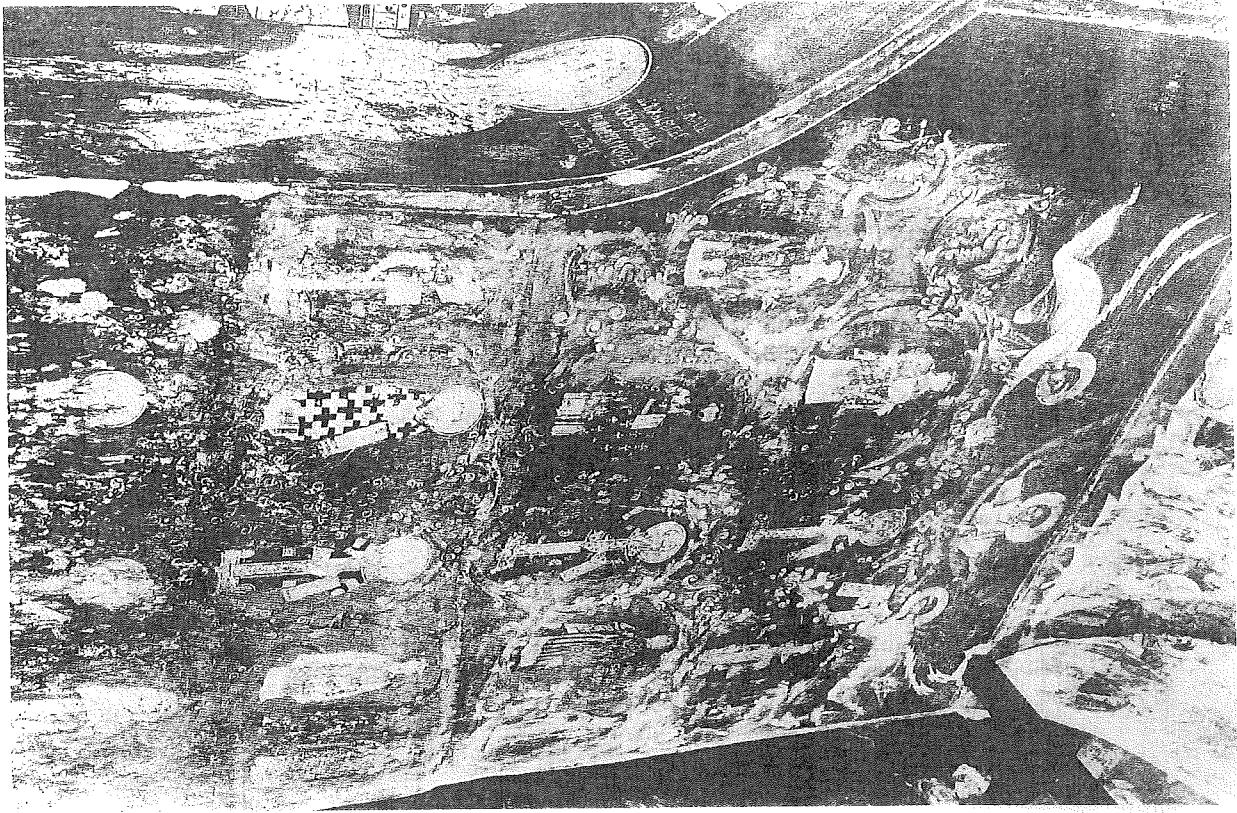


PLATE 18: NEUMANIĆ FAMILY TREE, FRESCO, GRACANICA.

John Alexander II (1331—1371) was to do the same. In two miniatures of the Chronicle of Manasses (*Vatican, slav. 2, f. 1<sup>v</sup>* and *f. 91<sup>v</sup>*), illuminated at Tirnovo between 1344 and 1345, the Bulgarian ruler is represented being crowned by an angel<sup>81</sup>. In the first (*f. 1<sup>v</sup>*), Christ is called Tsar of Tsars and eternal Tsar, while John Alexander is called faithful to Christ God, Tsar and autocrat of all the Bulgars and Greeks (Plate 16). The text upon Christ's roll is from *John 8, 12: I am the Light of the world*. Further the angel holds a circlet over John's head, while John wears a diadem with a globe<sup>82</sup>. I. Dujčev proposes as a model for the illuminations of this manuscript a Byzantine original probably from the time of Manuel I Comnenus (1143—1180)<sup>83</sup>. If the frontispiece was changed only by the substitution of John Alexander's portrait for that of Manuel I, then there is good reason to interpret the iconography in the same way as that of the Sinai and Barberini frontispieces: Christ illuminated the ruler and, by the intermediary of his angel, presents him with a crown of the kind offered to subordinate rulers, a sign that his authority derives from Christ.

In the second miniature (*f. 91<sup>v</sup>*), which illustrates a panegyric on John Alexander, substituted for that on Manuel I in the Byzantine original, the angel presents the Bulgarian Tsar with a crown identical to that which he is already wearing<sup>84</sup>. Beside him stands king David with an unrolled scroll upon which is inscribed the following phrase: *и в чаша твоя (Oh Lord in thy might...)* It is the beginning of *Psalm 20 (21)*, that which is illustrated by a coronation in the *Bristol, Theodore and Barberini Psalters*, and which is paraphrased in the prayer recited by the patriarch in the rite of coronation. There is no doubt that we have here two successive stages of the same scene: the angel brings the crown, and Tsar John Alexander wears the crown. This miniature, therefore, is to be interpreted in the same way as the portraits of Milutin and Simonaia at Gračanica.

To return now to Serbia, we may note that Milutin's innovation was copied by his successors. Stefan Dušan with his wife Helena are portrayed at Lesnovo sometime after 1346 being offered crowns by Christ<sup>85</sup>. In the following century, towards 1405, the despot Stefan was represented being crowned by two angels<sup>86</sup> (Plate 17). They place a crown upon his head, while one of the angels also presents him with a sword. At that time, when the Turks were advancing ineluctably across the Balkans, the Serbian despot needed the qualities of a warrior as well as those of a ruler.

The portraits of Milutin can be treated as belonging to a series. They can be inserted chronologically into the line of coronation pictures which stretches back to Antiquity and continues after their time. This, however, is not the only way of treating them. They should also be considered in the context of the rich iconographical vocabulary created during Milutin's reign<sup>87</sup>.

<sup>81</sup> B. D. Filow, *Les miniatures de la Chronique de Manasza*, Sofia 1927, p. 10—15; I. Dujčev, *Minijature Manasženog letoptira*, Sofia/Belgrad 1965, p. 23—24; Belting, op. cit. (note 60), p. 7 note 19, p. 21—22.

<sup>82</sup> Filow, op. cit. (note 83), p. 29—30, pl. 1; Dujčev, op. cit. (note 83), n<sup>o</sup> 1.

<sup>83</sup> I. Dujčev, *Le miniature bulgare médiévales*, in *Corsi di cultura sull'arte ravennate e bizantina*, 15, 1968, p. 124—125.

<sup>84</sup> Filow, op. cit. (note 83), p. 51—52; Dujčev, op. cit. (note 83), n<sup>o</sup> 33. The text of both panegyrics is given by Filow, ibid., p. 10, notes 6 and 7. Cf. also the portrait of John Alexander in the narthex of the funerary chapel at Bačkovo, in which he

is crowned by angels and protected by the Virgin and Child (after 1344 when John Alexander conquered the region of Plovdiv). A. Grabar, *La peinture religieuse en Bulgarie*, Paris 1928, p. 202—203; A. Vasiljev, *Bačkanska kostnica*, Sofia 1965 fig. 41.

<sup>85</sup> Radojčić, op. cit. (note 1), p. 55—56, pl. XVII 33.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 66—68, pl. XXIII 33.

<sup>87</sup> V. Đurić, *Tri dogadaja u srpskoj državi XIV veka i njihov odjek u slavenskim i Zbornik za likovne umetnosti*, 4, 1968, especially p. 68—76. Kralj Milutin „izbi Turk“, in which he develops the military aspects of Milutin's official imagery, interpreting the picture of Milutin and Saint George at Stano Nagorčeno as a military investiture, analogous to that of Manuel Comnenus by Sain

The theme of coronation, itself so full of overtones, entered well into a repertory of official imagery, the theme of which was the divinisation of the Nemanjić family. Dr S. Čurić has shown how, in Miliutin's church at Studenica, the ancestors of Christ, Saints Joachim and Anna, are placed parallel to members of the Nemanjić family<sup>66</sup>. The adaptation of the Tree of Jesse to the genealogy of the Nemanjić family was also, it seems, an innovation due to Miliutin. Represented in the narthex of Gračanica, it has at the summit Miliutin, in imperial costume, to whom angels are proffering a crown and a *loros*<sup>67</sup>. (Plate 19) To link the theme of coronation to that of Christ Light of the World presented no difficulty; indeed, as we have seen, the Byzantine imperial family had already done so. To his claim to have received the *iazakia* Miliutin could well add that of immortality. Indeed Psalm 20 (21), to which we have already so frequently alluded, continues: He asked of thee life, and thou didst give it to him, length of days for ever and ever.\*

## THE DEXTRARUM JUNCTIO OF LEPcis MAGNA IN RELATIONSHIP TO THE ICONOGRAPHY OF MARRIAGE

In the course of his academic career, Monsieur Jean Lassus has worked in many countries on several continents. In the present article we shall not be following him on all his travels, nor, however, shall we be remaining the whole time on the continent of Africa. The monument with which we are here particularly concerned, the Triumphal Arch at Lepcis Magna, constructed and decorated in the first decade of the third century, was probably decorated by sculptors from the East and certainly reflects, in its iconographical programme, Roman political and religious notions. We too, in consequence, shall be obliged to turn our attention both to Constantinople and to Rome.

The excavation of the site of Lepcis Magna between 1923 and 1942 has proved to be one of the most rewarding archaeological enterprises of this century<sup>1</sup>. It seems that the triumphal arch commemorates the visit of Severus to the city where he had been born, of a wealthy provincial family about 146 A.D. The most recent dating of the arch is that of V.M. Stroka, who proposes the years 206-209.<sup>2</sup> We are particularly concerned here with the relief on the South-West side (fig. 1). In this relief Septimius Severus and Caracalla hold each other's right hand. Julia Domna and Geta also figure in the scene, together with a number of personages, real and mythological. It is not our intention here to enter into the detail of the composition, in which, as is generally the case in Roman official art, ceremonial, realism and the

\* Coins to which reference is made in this article are cited almost exclusively from *The Coins of the Roman Empire in the British Museum*, edited by R.A.G. Carson and H. Mattingly, volumes I-VI, London, 1923-1962. The citation is made thus: British Museum, number of volume, number of plate, number of coin. The article by KANTROWICZ (E.H.), *On the Golden Marriage Belt and the Marriage Rings of the Dumbarton Oaks Collection*, Dumbarton Oaks Papers, t. 14, 1960, p. 1-16, is cited thus: KANTROWICZ, *Marriage Belts*. I take the opportunity of expressing my gratitude to Madame Cécile Morisson, Mademoiselle Claude Brietot and Mr R.A.G. Carson for their help with the coins.

<sup>1</sup> BARTOCCINI (R.), *L'Arco quadrifronte dei Severi a Lepcis (Lepcis Magna)*, Afrca italiana, t. 4, 1931, p. 32-152, especially p. 116-129; WARD-PERKINS (J.B.), *Severan Art and Architecture at Lepcis Magna*. The Journal of Roman Studies, t. 38, 1948, p. 52-80, especially p. 72-80; Id., *The Art of the Severan Age in the Light of Tripolitanian Discoveries*. Proceedings of the British Academy, t. 37, 1951, p. 269-304; TORNACE (Jacelyn M.C.), *Picture-Language in Roman Art and Cologne*. Essays in Roman Coinage Presented to Harold Mattingly, edited by R.A.G. Carson and C.H.V. Sutherland, Oxford, 1956, p. 205-226, especially p. 207-209.

<sup>2</sup> STROKA (V.M.), *Beobachtungen an den attikalischen Quadrifronten von Lepcis Magna*. Antiquités africaines, t. 6, 1972, p. 147-172, especially, p. 157-160.

I. SPATHARIKIS, *The Portraits and the Date of the Codex Per. gr. 510*, Cahiers archéologiques 23, 1874, p. 97-105.  
Idem, *L'art des paléologies et l'art serbe*, in Art et société, op. cit. (note 60), p. 177-191.  
I. SPATHARIKIS, *The Nemanjić Family Tree in the Light of the Ancestral Cult in the Church of Joachim and Anna at Studenica*, in Zbornik radova, 14-15, 1973, p. 191-195.

<sup>66</sup> RADOJIĆ, op. cit. (note 1), p. 42-43, pl. X 15.

<sup>67</sup> Note (1978). The text of this article has not been altered since 1975. Although they do not, in my opinion, necessitate any important modification of what I have written here, it seems worth while listing here the four following studies which have subsequently come to my notice:

A. CUTTER, *The Painter of Basil II*, Arte Veneta 30, 1976, p. 9-19; 31, 1977, p. 9-15.

I add a complement concerning the marriage congratulations of the coronation of Miliutin and Simođa in the forthcoming number of *Zagraf* dedicated to the memory of the later professor Svetozar Radić.

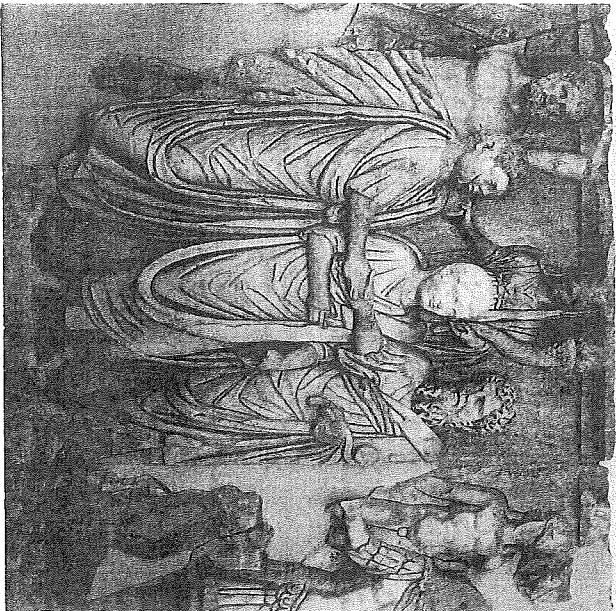


Fig. 1. — Lepcis Magna. Relief, South-West attic of the Arch of Severus.

supernatural are combined. We intend rather to concentrate upon the central gesture of Severus and Caracalla, the so-called *Dextrarum juncio*. Its particular interest is due to the fact that it seems to be the unique surviving example of this gesture represented on an imperial Roman monument.

Hitherto the *Dextrarum juncio* has been studied almost uniquely in the context of the iconography of marriage. The pioneer study of August Rossbach, published over a century ago, is still valuable<sup>1</sup>. However, it has been superseded by the excellent article due to Louis Reekmans, which includes a virtually exhaustive repertory of this theme in marriage scenes<sup>2</sup>. He traces the theme from the fourth century B.C., when it seems to have first appeared in Etruscan funerary art, through the period of the Roman Republic and Empire, noting the adaptations introduced when the theme is introduced into Christian art. However he is manifestly unconcerned by the known examples of the *Dextrarum juncio*, which have no relationship to marriage<sup>3</sup>.

It may well be that the first examples of the *Dextrarum juncio* occur in marriage scenes. However, if the evidence of coinage may be adduced, it could be argued that, in Roman art at least, the *Dextrarum juncio* was originally exploited mainly in a military context<sup>4</sup>. It seems to have been first represented in periods of civil war, with the desire to propagate the notion that military unity was a condition of civil peace. In its earliest form, dating back to Augustus (B.C. 8), the *Dextrarum juncio* is represented as a pair of clasped hands, holding the caduceus<sup>5</sup> (fig. 2). An example of 68 A.D. has the legend: PAX ET LIBERTAS<sup>6</sup>. The replacement of clasped hands by two standing soldiers making this gesture and holding legionary eagles seems to date from the reign of Vespasian, (69-70 A.D.), when the picture is accompanied by the legend: CONSENSUS EXERCITUS<sup>7</sup>. The way was now open for extending the theme to propagate the notion of agreement between members of the imperial family or rival emperors. Thus Titus and Domitian are represented together joining right hands in the presence of a figure who may be Pietas or Concordia on a coin of 80-81 A.D., with the legend: PIETAS AUGUSTORUM<sup>8</sup>.

Later (after 161 A.D.), Marcus Aurelius and Verus are represented together in the same way, with the legend: CONCORDIA AUGUSTORUM<sup>9</sup>. These examples may be multiplied. For example, from the period of the construction of the Arch of Lepcis Magna, we have coins on which Caracalla and Geta are represented joining their right hands, with the legend: CONCORDIA AUGUSTORUM or FELICITAS SAECULI<sup>10</sup>. However, before the middle of the third century, the theme of standing figures joining right hands disappears, apparently, from coinage, while, around 228 A.D., a pair of clasped hands is re-introduced, with an legend such as CONCORDIA or FIDES MUTUA or PIETAS MUTUA AUGUSTORUM<sup>11</sup>. Only one later example seems to have survived, dating from 321-324, in which Crispus and Constantine II join hands, with Fausta as Concordia<sup>12</sup>.

Meanwhile, for the period of the reign of Commodus, there had been a transitory but luxuriant exploration of the *Dextrarum juncio*. It merits our attention. From about 186 A.D. Commodus is represented in military dress with four soldiers in front of him: the two in the centre join their right hands



Fig. 2. — Clasped hands and caduceus, coin of Antonius Pius (Cabinet des médailles, Paris).

<sup>1</sup> KÖTTING (B.), *Dextrarum juncio. Rövölkerkunst im Antiken und Christentum*, t. 3, Stuttgart, 1957, col. 881-886. ROSSBACH, *op. cit.*, p. 21 wrote of « die schöne Münze aus der Zeit Allexanders des Grossen ». However, I have found no example with a *dextrarum juncio*.

<sup>2</sup> British Museum I, pl. 20, 2, n° 204.

<sup>3</sup> British Museum I, pl. 50, 15, n° 27; compare IV, pl. 3, 2, n° 85 (Antoninus Pius, 139 A.D.).

<sup>4</sup> British Museum II, pl. 14, 11-13, n° 414-16.

<sup>5</sup> British Museum II, pl. 49, 2, n° 177.

<sup>6</sup> British Museum IV, pl. 53, 15, n° 9.

<sup>7</sup> British Museum V, pl. 34, 19, n° 312.

<sup>8</sup> REEKMAN (L.), *La dextrarum iunctio dans l'Iconographie romaine et paléochrétiennne*. Bulletin de l'Institut historique belge de Rome, t. 31, 1958, p. 23-95.

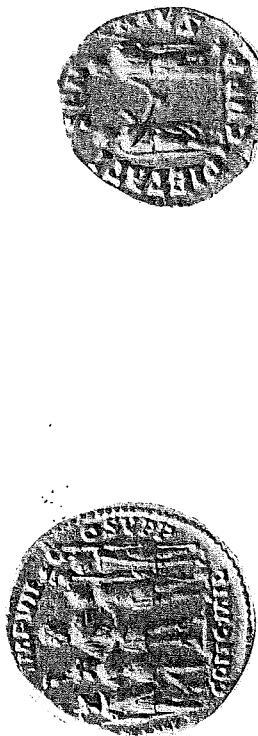
<sup>9</sup> Thus, in his article *Dextrarum juncio in Encyclopédie dell'arte antica*, t. 3, Rome 1960, col. 82, Reekmans defines this subject as « La rappresentazione dei due coniugi nell'atto di stringere la mano destra ».

(fig. 3, a). The legend reads : CONCORDIA MILITUM<sup>1</sup>. Another example shows Commodus dressed in a toga, joining hands with a personification of the Senate, the legend: PIETATI SENATUS<sup>2</sup> (fig. 3, b). Yet another shows him holding a cornucopia and joining right hands with a personification of Felicity, the legend: FELICITAS PERPETUA AUGUSTORUM<sup>3</sup> (fig. 3, c). In a different register, Commodus is represented joining hands with Serapis, accompanied by Isis, over a lighted altar, while Victory crowns him<sup>4</sup> (fig. 3, d). Similarly, he is represented, dressed as Hercules, joining right hands with a personification of Africa, the legend: PROVIDENTIAE AUGUSTORUM<sup>5</sup> (fig. 3, e).

These examples from the reign of Commodus are important partly because the range of meaning of the *Dextrarum junctio* seems to have been extended, but also because the connotiations have become richer. We are confronted with developed scenes such as we find on the arch at Lepcis Magna. A legend is not necessarily a direct «translation» of the iconographical type which it accompanies, but it is certainly related to it. It may either render more explicit or implement the picture's meaning. Thus the words *consensus*, *concordia*, *mutua* would seem to render more explicit the sense of the joined hands : that two separate entities are united. Other words, such as *pietas*, *felicitas*, *fides*, suggest the conditions or consequences of this union of two separate entities. Commodus, however, on his coins seems to go beyond the evident notion that unity in the army or between rulers is a necessary condition of peace and prosperity. He is identifying himself with *Felicitas* and *Pietas*, and proclaiming the union in his person of Egypt and Africa with Rome.

We must see if the intentions of Severus at Lepcis Magna were as magnificent. First, however, it would be well to recall that, from the reign of Antoninus Pius, coins are minted on which the *Dextrarum junctio* commemorates an imperial marriage: Antoninus and Faustina I in 141 (fig. 4), Marcus Aurelius and Faustina II after 145, Caracalla and Plautilla after 201<sup>6</sup>. In the last case we find as legends: CONCORDIAE AETERNAE, CONCORDIA FELIX, PRO-PAGO IMPERII. Thus the marriage coins enter into the same range of meaning. Moreover they appear just at the period when it became part of the Roman marriage ceremony to offer sacrifice before the statues of the emperor and empress, *ob insinuam eorum concordiam*<sup>7</sup>. Concord is thus celebrated as a virtue of both public and private life.

Programmes decorating private — notably funeral — monuments could include elements taken from the imagery of imperial cult<sup>8</sup>. Thus a group of sarcophagi, on which the marriage *dextrarum junctio* is associated with sacrifice, enters into the category of monuments where Concord is celebrated at once



a



c



d



e



b



Fig. 3. — Coins of Commodus : a, Concordia militum (Cabinet des médailles) ; b, Pietati Senatus (Cabinet des médailles) ; c, Commodus and Felicity (British Museum, London) ; d, Commodus and Serapis (British Museum) ; e, Commodus as Hercules and Africa (British Museum).

<sup>1</sup> British Museum IV, pl. 96, 2, n° 197.

<sup>2</sup> British Museum IV, pl. 96, 17, n° 237.

<sup>3</sup> British Museum IV, pl. 99, 17, n° 337.

<sup>4</sup> British Museum IV, pl. 99, 15, n° 335.

<sup>5</sup> British Museum IV, pl. 100, 7, n° 355.

<sup>6</sup> British Museum IV, pl. 7, 13, n° 298, 1IV, pl. 43, 4, n° 1787 ; V, pl. 33, 16, n° 271.

<sup>7</sup> REEKWANS, *art. cit.*, p. 35.

<sup>8</sup> SCOTT RYERKO (Inez), *Rites of the State Religion in Roman Art*, American Academy in Rome, Memoirs 22, Rome 1955, p. 163-167.



FIG. 5. — ANTONINE SARCOPHAGUS, MUSEO DEI TERMINI, ROME (DETAIL).

as a private and a public virtue (fig. 5). However, as Reekmans has shown, the *dextrarum iunctio* was easily integrated into other funeral programmes, both pagan and Christian, which are not imperial in origin. Those private monuments do not provide examples of the *dextrarum iunctio* except as the marriage *lugum*. Consequently we have to have recourse to imperial monuments in order to determine the generic sense of this theme.

The starting-point for determining this generic meaning should be, I suggest, the culminating scene of the four great friezes which once decorated the attic of the Arch of Lepcis Magna. Although we cannot argue, in the absence of surviving examples, that the *dextrarum iunctio* figures regularly on imperial monuments, the widespread use of the theme on coins confirms its place in the imperial iconographical repertory. The four reliefs show, first, the state entry of

Septimius, Caracalla and Geta into Lepcis; then the triumphal cortège of Caracalla and his mother; there follows a sacrifice, and, finally, the *dextrarum iunctio*. Dr. Jocelyn Toynbee writes of

« specific ceremonies enacted at Lepcis on the occasion of the imperial family's visit ».<sup>2</sup> This must not, of course, be taken too literally, the more so that she notes, a few lines later, that « supernatural beings... participated fully in the action ».

Would it be excessively sceptical to ask whether a ceremonial performance of the *dextrarum iunctio* did take place at all on such occasions? Did Septimius Severus, ceremonially, present Caracalla to the citizens of Lepcis Magna as co-Augustus and publicly join hands with him?<sup>3</sup> We may be certain that Septimius did not present Caracalla to the Tychei of the cities of Lepcis, Sabratha and Oea, as he is represented doing on another relief of the arch!<sup>4</sup> Moreover it seems unlikely that all the representations of the *dextrarum iunctio* on coins recall an actual historical ceremony. When Commodus joins hands with a personification, we may be sure that the historical event has indeed been represented. However, if the *dextrarum iunctio* is used symbolically as well as historically, then, clearly, the idea which this gesture conveys is more important than its historical enactment. The Arch therefore stood in Lepcis Magna, not just to commemorate the brief visit of a former citizen who had risen to become emperor, but to put on record permanently the notion that joint rule is not divided rule : Septimius Severus and Caracalla constitute one single entity.

If we have spent some time considering whether the *dextrarum iunctio* at Lepcis Magna represents a real ceremony, it is because the same question must be put with regard to representations of marriage

as a private and a public virtue (fig. 5). However, as Reekmans has shown, the *dextrarum iunctio* was easily integrated into other funeral programmes, both pagan and Christian, which are not imperial in origin. Those private monuments do not provide examples of the *dextrarum iunctio* except as the marriage *lugum*. Consequently we have to have recourse to imperial monuments in order to determine the generic sense of this theme.

The starting-point for determining this generic meaning should be, I suggest, the culminating scene of the four great friezes which once decorated the attic of the Arch of Lepcis Magna. Although we cannot argue, in the absence of surviving examples, that the *dextrarum iunctio* figures regularly on imperial monuments, the widespread use of the theme on coins confirms its place in the imperial iconographical repertory. The four reliefs show, first, the state entry of

Septimius, Caracalla and Geta into Lepcis; then

the triumphal cortège of Caracalla and his mother;

there follows a sacrifice, and, finally, the *dextrarum iunctio*. Dr. Jocelyn Toynbee writes of

« specific ceremonies enacted at Lepcis on the

occasion of the imperial family's visit ».<sup>2</sup> This must not, of course, be taken too literally, the more so

that she notes, a few lines later, that « supernatural beings... participated fully in the action ».

Would it be excessively sceptical to ask whether a ceremonial performance of the *dextrarum iunctio* did take place at all on such occasions? Did Septimius Severus, ceremonially, present Caracalla to the

citizens of Lepcis Magna as co-Augustus and publicly join hands with him?<sup>3</sup> We may be certain that

Septimius did not present Caracalla to the Tychei of the cities of Lepcis, Sabratha and Oea, as he is represented doing on another relief of the arch!<sup>4</sup> Moreover it seems unlikely that all the representations of

the *dextrarum iunctio* on coins recall an actual historical ceremony. When Commodus joins hands with

a personification, we may be sure that the historical

event has indeed been represented. However, if the *dextrarum iunctio* is used symbolically as well as his-

tically, then, clearly, the idea which this gesture conveys is more important than its historical enactment.

The Arch therefore stood in Lepcis Magna, not just to commemorate the brief visit of a former citizen

who had risen to become emperor, but to put on record permanently the notion that joint rule is not

divided rule : Septimius Severus and Caracalla constitute one single entity.

If we have spent some time considering whether the *dextrarum iunctio* at Lepcis Magna represents

a real ceremony, it is because the same question must be put with regard to representations of marriage

However, this explanation gives rise to a second difficulty. Where did the Germanic liturgists find this rite of the *dextrarum iunctio*? Metz supposes that they rediscovered it in ancient Roman usage. Consequently for Metz the *dextrarum iunctio* symbolizes the act whereby the Roman father or guardian handed over to her husband the girl promised to her betrothal : « ce rite seraient à l'origine de l'expression *convenire in matrem*. »<sup>2</sup> Unfortunately iconographical and epigraphical evidence hardly favours such an explanation. As we have seen, the significance which it attributes to the *dextrarum iunctio* is wider and more fundamental. We are left with two other possible explanations: either Germanic liturgists rediscovered the *dextrarum iunctio*, possibly from funerary monuments, but misunderstood it; or they gave the rite a different meaning in their own marriage ceremonial from that which it had in Roman liturgical tradition.

This consideration of Western tradition does not give us an answer to the question whether the *dextrarum iunctio* actually formed a part of the Roman pre-Christian marriage ceremony. Possibly Byzantine evidence is more helpful. We have a description by Theophylact Simocatta, written in the early 7th century, of the marriage of the emperor Maurice (533-602).<sup>3</sup> The patriarch of Constantinople presided. After imploring the divine blessing, he took the hands of the imperial couple and joined them; then he pronounced the nuptial blessing and imposed nuptial crowns on their heads. Eight centuries later, in his mystagogical commentary of the marriage liturgy, Symeon of Thessalonika explains that the priest unites the right hands of the couple, in order to signify that they are united in Christ and that they become one entity in him.<sup>4</sup> The meaning which Symeon attributes to the *dextrarum iunctio* in the Byzantine marriage ceremony is, then, close to that which we are attributing to this theme at Lepcis Magna.

Nevertheless, we are inclined to follow Reekmans, who himself follows Rossbach, and to see in the *dextrarum iunctio* in Roman art, whether pagan or Christian, a symbolic act rather than a representation of a specific rite of the marriage ceremony.<sup>5</sup> The introduction of the *dextrarum iunctio* into the marriage ceremony would be due to Christian initiative probably not earlier than the fifth century and certainly not later than the sixth. Of course it is not possible to prove this conclusively; however some arguments can be advanced, whose value the reader must judge for himself.

The last Roman marriage issue with a *dextrarum iunctio* was for Severus Alexander and Orbiana in 225, with the legend : CONCORDIA AUGUSTORVM.<sup>6</sup> Over two hundred years later there were three marriage issues with the *dextrarum iunctio* in fairly rapid succession : for Eudoxia and Valentian

<sup>1</sup> Kroll (W.), *Jugae, Paulus Reichenberg's der klassischen Altertumswissenschaft*, t. IX b, col. 2506 ; *Jugae, Beiname der Juno*. Sie heißt so wohl von der *dextrarum iunctio*. Compare *Ibidem*, t. X a, col. 1117-1118, Juno, paragraph 7.

<sup>2</sup> Tornier, *art. cit.* (note 1), p. 271, p. 207.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 208.

<sup>1</sup> METZ (R.), *La conservation des vierges dans l'Église romaine*, Paris, 1954, Appendice 1. Le rituel du mariage, origine et évolution historique, p. 363-410, especially p. 387 : tunc deuter feminam a patre vel amicos suis, quam vir recipiat in fide Dei... et per manus dextram tenet (sic) eam (*Pontifical* of Lyre).

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 377.

<sup>3</sup> Theophylact Simocates, *Histories*, I.10, edited by C. De Boor, Leipzig 1887, p. 57 line 13 = Bonn, p. 51 line 14; Anné (L.), *Les rites des fiançailles et la donation pour cause de mariage sous le bas-empire*, Louvain, 1941, p. 157.

<sup>4</sup> Symeon of Thessalonika, *Dicitur et legimus coniugio*, Migne, PG 155, 509.

<sup>5</sup> Rossbach, *op. cit.* (note 1), p. 272, p. 9-11; Reekmans, *art. cit.* (note 2), p. 272, col. 82.

<sup>6</sup> British Museum VI, pl. 10, n° 299-301.



Fig. 6. — Eudoxia and Valentinian III, coin of Theodosius II (British Museum).

III in 437 (fig. 6), with Theodosius II as Pronubus, for Marcian and Pulcheria in 451 and for Anastasius I and Ariadne in 491; in the latter two cases Christ appears as Pronubus.<sup>1</sup> Round about the same time Santa Maria Maggiore was built and decorated with mosaics. The artists, although Christian, unselfconsciously adapted pagan models in a way which, a century earlier, would hardly have been possible.<sup>2</sup> Thus they use the *dextrarum iunctio* for the marriage of Jacob with Rachel and of Moses with Sephora.<sup>3</sup> What genre of Antiquity monument would have given the artist his model?<sup>4</sup> Obviously he could have adapted a coin or a sarcophagus. However these marriage scenes definitely have the air of a court ceremony. Although the scale is much smaller, the Marriage of Moses and Sephora recalls the two mosaics in San Vitale of the Offering respectively of Justinian and of Theodora. Sephora stands to the left of the scene, imperially dressed and accompanied by his *garçons d'honneur*. A figure much larger in scale (Sephora's father?) stands behind the couple who join hands. On the one hand it seems that the artist was familiar with contemporary court marriage ceremonial, as represented, for example, on the coin commemorating the marriage of Eudoxia and Valentinian III; on the other hand he is more likely to have known also a representation of a similar ceremony in imperial Roman art.

I do not, of course, suggest that he knew the reliefs of the Arch of Lepcis Magna, but rather related monuments which no longer exist. We can, indeed, demonstrate a similarity between the triumphal art of the Later Roman Empire and the decoration of the triumphal arch of Santa Maria Maggiore (fig. 7). There is the same fusion — or confusion — of personages of different orders of being.<sup>5</sup> In the scene of the Presentation, the two groups of personages converge in the same way as those in the *dextrarum iunctio* scene at Lepcis Magna. The presentation has been conceived as the meeting of the representatives of the old and the new dispensations.<sup>6</sup> Joseph and Anna occupy the central place instead of Caracalla and Septimius Severus, while an angel replaces the tutelary gods. However Joseph and Anna do not join hands. There is no question of a *jugum* between the old dispensation and the new. Their eyes are turned towards the Mother advancing with the Child Jesus, who will reign alone.

As is wellknown, the Christian Church only gradually took an interest in the solemnization of marriages, which was regarded as above all the concern of the civil authorities.<sup>6</sup> Possibly the example which we have cited of the patriarch joining the hands of Maurice and his wife at the end of the sixth century was an innovation in imperial marriage ceremonial. At that time the Church had not formulated definitively the constitutive elements of her sacramental rites, while, in Byzantine imperial iconography, the emperor normally is represented, in religious ceremonies, in direct relationship with Christ. Consequently it is not

<sup>1</sup> ZACOS (G.) and VEGLERY (A.), *An unknown solidus of Anastasios I. Numismatic Circular*, t. 67, 1959, p. 154-155; *Marriage solidi of the 7th century*, *ibid.*, t. 68, 1960, p. 73-74; KANTOROWICZ, *Marriage Belts*, p. 718, fig. 21-23; MORRISON (C.), *De Nicéphore II Phocas à Romain IV Diogène*. Bulletin du club français de la métallurgie, t. 42, 1974, p. 87 and fig. 8.

<sup>2</sup> The best archaeological description of the mosaics is still, to my mind, that of RICHTER (J.P.) and CAMERON TAYLOR (A.), *The Golden Age of Classical Christianity*, London, 1904.

<sup>3</sup> BRENK (B.), *Die frühchristlichen Mosaiken in S. Maria Maggiore zu Rom*. Wiesbaden, 1975, p. 69-70, 80-81, pl. 50.

<sup>4</sup> SCOTT RYBORG, *op. cit.* note 8, p. 275, p. 134.

<sup>5</sup> GRABAR (A.), *L'empereur dans l'art byzantin*, Strasbourg, 1936, London, 1971, p. 216-220; BRENK, *op. cit.* p. 21-22.

<sup>6</sup> ANSÉ, *op. cit.* (note 3, p. 277), p. 170-174; JOURNÉ (P.), *La liturgie romaine du mariage*. La Maison-Dieu, 1957, p. 30-57.

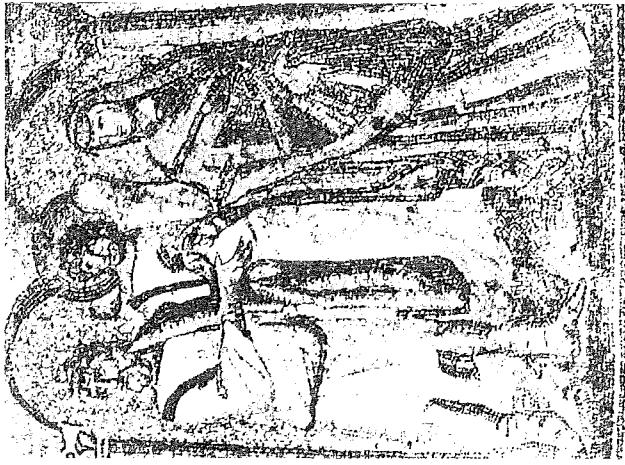


Fig. 6. — Eudoxia and Valentinian III, coin of Theodosius II (British Museum).



Fig. 7. — Joseph and Anna, triumphal arch, Santa Maria Maggiore, Rome (detail).

Fig. 8. — Gold medal from marriage belt (collection de Clercq, Musée du Louvre, Paris, cliché Chauvelin).

surprising to find, on the two other Byzantine marriage issues of coins, that Christ presides the *dextrarum junctio*. The same is true on two examples of gold medals integrated into marriage belts.<sup>1</sup> (fig. 8).

In Byzantine marriage ceremonial, the principal act was, in fact, to become the crowning of the spouses.<sup>2</sup> Whether it is Christ or the patriarch who crowns, this is the most common type of marriage iconography in the Byzantine tradition, although, later, in the Western tradition, the *dextrarum junctio* would be commonly represented.<sup>3</sup> There are only four cases of the *dextrarum junctio* in Byzantine art to be adduced for the rest of the Byzantine epoch.

The first occurs on one of the series of David plates discovered early this century in Cyprus.<sup>4</sup> (fig. 9). They can be dated, by the stamps, to the reign of Heraclius. That is to say, they are contemporary with

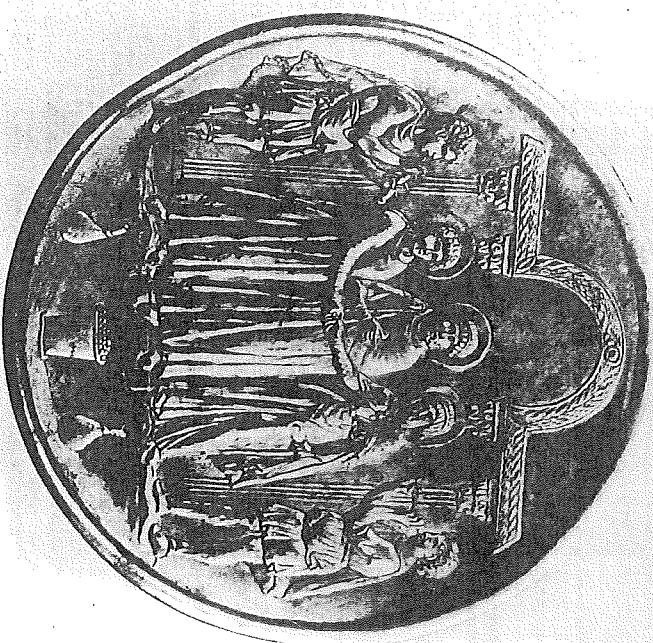


FIG. 9. — Marriage of David and Michal, silver plate (Museum of Nicosia, Cyprus).

<sup>1</sup> KANTOROWICZ, *Marriage Belts*, p. 3, 10-11, fig. 1-2. One belt is at Dumbarton Oaks (Washington); the other, formerly in the De Clercq collection, is now in the Louvre.

<sup>2</sup> ANNE, op. cit., p. 172; JOURNÉ, *art. cit.*, p. 37.

<sup>3</sup> KANTOROWICZ, *Marriage Belts*, p. 12.

<sup>4</sup> *Wealth of the Roman World* (catalogue of exhibition, British Museum, 1977), edited by J.P.C. Kent and S. Painter, n° 180, p. 103.



FIG. 10. — Marriage of sons of God and daughters of men, Octateuch (Vatican Library).

<sup>1</sup> Of the five illuminated Byzantine Octateuchs known, only one, Istanbul, Topkapi Saray cod. 8, is published. The scene is represented on f. 54, Uspeenski (Th.), *L'Octanteuch de la bibliothèque du Sévile à Constantinople* (Sofia/Munich, 1907, pl. XII 33; Smyrna, Evangelical School A 1 was destroyed in 1922; for Athos Vatopedi 602 (315), see LAZAREV (V.), *Storia della pittura bizantina*, Turin 1967, p. 283, note 51; for Vatican græc. 746 and 747, see DEVRESESSE (R.), *Codices vaticani græci III*, Vatican 1950, p. 261-265. M. Lassus lectured on the illustration of the Octateuchs at the Ecole Pratique des Hautes Etudes; I thank him for putting photographs of unpublished miniatures at my disposal for study.

<sup>2</sup> Theodore of Cyr, *Quæstiōnēs in Genesim 47*, Quosnam Moses vocavit filios Dei? Migne, PG 80, 150.

f. 96<sup>v</sup> illustrating *Genesis* 28, 9, which recounts how Esau married a daughter of Ishmaël. Why did the artist use the *dextrarum iunctio* on these two occasions only, whereas there are numerous accounts of marriages, illustrated otherwise, in the *Ottonen*?

We can only hazard an explanation. The two marriages in question may possibly have been considered to lie outside the strict tradition of the Old Testament. Theodore speaks of contamination, when the sons of God marry the daughters of men, while the text of *Genesis* recounts that Esau already had a number of wives. In Byzantine tradition, as we have seen, crowning the couple validates the marriage. Possibly, therefore, the artist deliberately chose a noncommittal formula on these two occasions; possibly it was a deliberate archaism.<sup>1</sup> However, since Byzantine iconography is full of anomalies, it is difficult to be sure.

A Westernizing copy of a Byzantine miniature, made, probably, in the 12th century, may seem very distant from an Easternizing relief, carved at Lepis Magna in the 3rd century according to the prevailing norms of Roman imperial imagery. The justification for so abstruse a juxtaposition may, perhaps, be found in some words penned by Monsieur Jean Lassus himself. I often had the honour of addressing his seminar at the Ecole Pratique des Hautes Etudes. In his report on a paper which I delivered on December 19th 1971, Monsieur Lassus manifested his interest in the subject of this paper : the adaptation of semiological techniques to the study of iconography in order to eliminate possible ambiguity.<sup>2</sup>

One major hazard in the study of iconography is the temptation, in establishing the transmission of themes, to deduce the specific from the general. However such a procedure can lead to strange results. For example, it is improbable, given the universality of the theme of motherhood, that a representation of the Virgin suckling the Christ Child should be a specific adaptation of Isis suckling Horus.<sup>3</sup> Both would be versions of the same generic theme of motherhood. Likewise, in the present context, it seemed necessary to show that the *dextrarum iunctio*, generically, is a theme of union ; the *jugum* of marriage is only a specific case. We have attempted to do this by studying the *dextrarum iunctio* of Lepis Magna with particular reference to analogous representations of this iconographical theme on coins. This study has led us to suggest that, in the Roman iconography of marriage, whether pagan or Christian, the *dextrarum iunctio* retains its generic sense ; it is not to be considered as a direct representation of the specific marriage rite of *convenire in manum*. The *dextrarum iunctio* disappears from marriage iconography in the 3rd century, to be revived in the 5th century. Although the Church only gradually asserted a claim to play a determining role in the solemnization of marriage, we are inclined to attribute this revival of the *dextrarum iunctio* to those who were attempting to create a specific Christian iconography from the generic themes of Antiquity. We have noted that, right up to the 15th century, the *dextrarum iunctio* retains the same generic sense, in Byzantine tradition, as it had at Lepis Magna in the third century. However, since it was not the constitutive element of the Byzantine marriage rite, it was ever less frequently portrayed in Byzantine art.

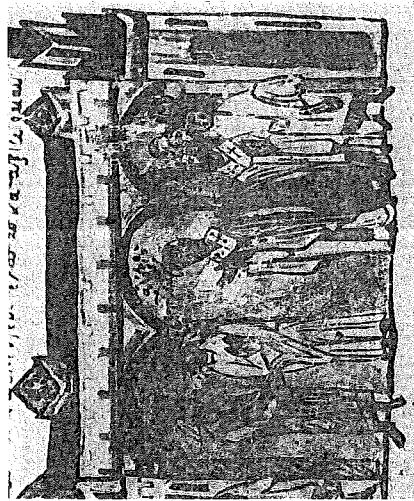


FIG. 11. — Marriage of Michael IV and Zoë, Chronicle of Skylitzes (Biblioteca nacional, Madrid).

In the illuminated manuscript of the *Chronicle of Skylitzes* at Madrid, there are numerous marriage scenes. However, only once is the *dextrarum iunctio* used, f. 206<sup>v</sup>, for the marriage of Michael IV (1034-1040) and Zoë (fig. 11). This was, indeed, an irregular marriage, and the patriarch Alexius had to be bribed to bless it.<sup>2</sup> However, since a Westernizing artist recopied this miniature from the Byzantine original, it is perhaps more likely that the insisted on what was, indeed, an Eastern practice — the joining of hands — but which was given much more importance in the West.

<sup>1</sup> For example, elevation on a shield was regularly used to mark the accession of an Old Testament king in 11th and 12th-century Byzantine manuscript illumination, although it is unlikely that this practice was current then in Byzantium, any more than it had been at the time of the events represented. See my article, *Raising on a shield in Byzantine iconography*, *Revue des études byzantines*, t. 33, 1975, p. 165-167 = *Studies in Byzantine Iconography*, Variorum Reprints, London 1977.

<sup>2</sup> *Skylitzes maritensis*, edited by S.C. Esiofapion, Barcelona/Madrid 1965, p. 193 : Ioannis Skylitzes, *Synopsis Historiarum*, edited by I. Thurn, Berlin/New York 1973, p. 391 lines 4-8 = Bonn (Cedrenus), p. 505 lines 20-25.

<sup>3</sup> Annuaire de la 5<sup>e</sup> section de l'Ecole Pratique des Hautes Etudes, t. 79, 1971-1972, p. 368.

<sup>4</sup> BROWN (P.), *The World of Late Antiquity*, London 1971, p. 142-143.

## Marriage crowns in Byzantine iconography

The late Professor Svetozar Radojičić's book, *Portreti srpskih vladara u srednjem veku*, published at Skopje in 1934, was one of his earliest contributions to our knowledge of the art of the Nemanjić period in Serbia. It retains its authoritative place in the bibliography of official portraiture. I found it particularly useful when investigating the sense of the double coronation of the kralj Milutin and his Byzantine spouse at Gračanica (Fig. 1). In concluding that the basic sense of these paintings was the conferment of the *basileia*, I noted that, since coronation is an iconographical theme rich in overtones, there was no reason to exclude an allusion to the crown as a sign of immortality.<sup>1</sup> One question which I did not raise in my discussion of these paintings was the possibility of an allusion to the crown as a sign of marriage. As is wellknown, the imposition of a crown is an important part of the marriage ceremony in the Byzantine rite, such that marriage is often referred to as στρέψασθαι, a word which corresponds closely enough to the modern Serbian *vencanje*.<sup>2</sup> Milutin took Simona, the five-year-old daughter of the Byzantine emperor Andronicus II, as his fourth wife in 1293. The marriage was intended to ratify a treaty, by which lands conquered by the Serbs in modern Macedonia were ceded to Milutin as Simona's dowry. George Pachymeres, the Byzantine chronicler, commented sourly that Milutin had taken on Simona not as a wife but as an estate-agent.<sup>3</sup> Nevertheless, Milutin was far from indifferent to the prestige which he obtained in marrying a Byzantine princess born in the purple. Obviously the painting at Gračanica, executed nearly a quarter of a century after the marriage, does not directly commemorate the event. On the other hand, given the importance of the dynastic alliance contracted, there may

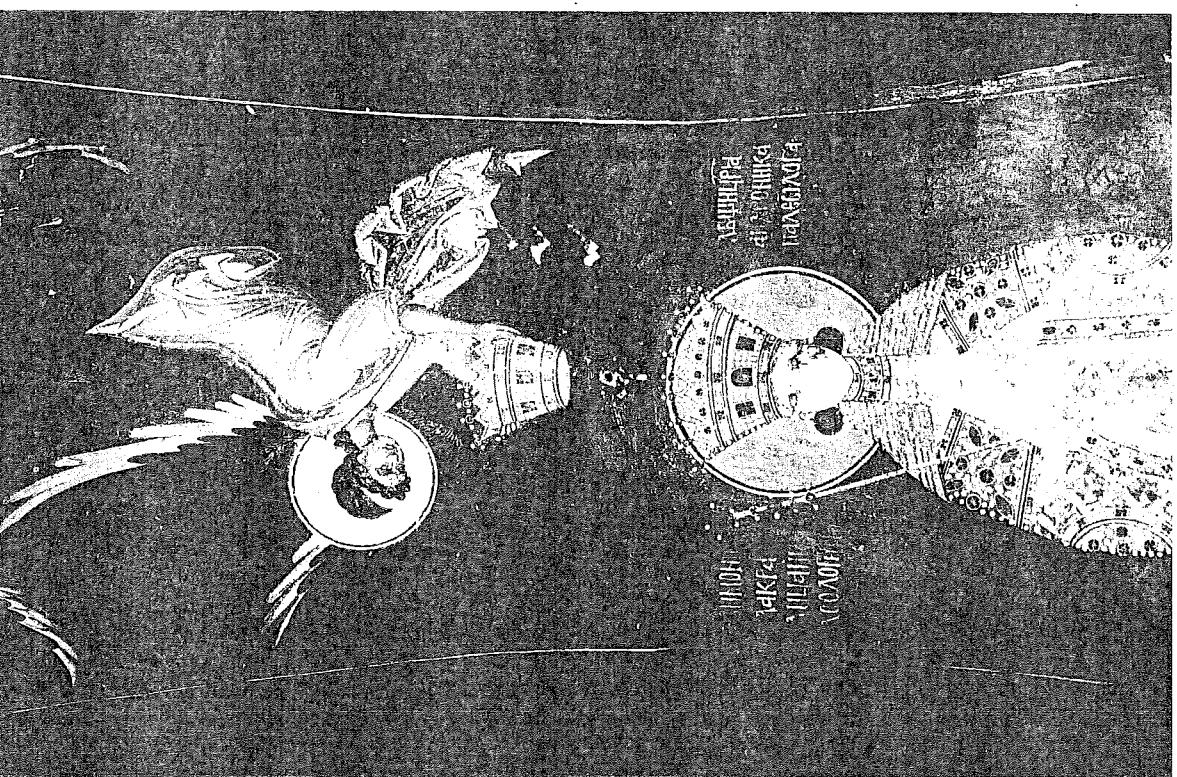
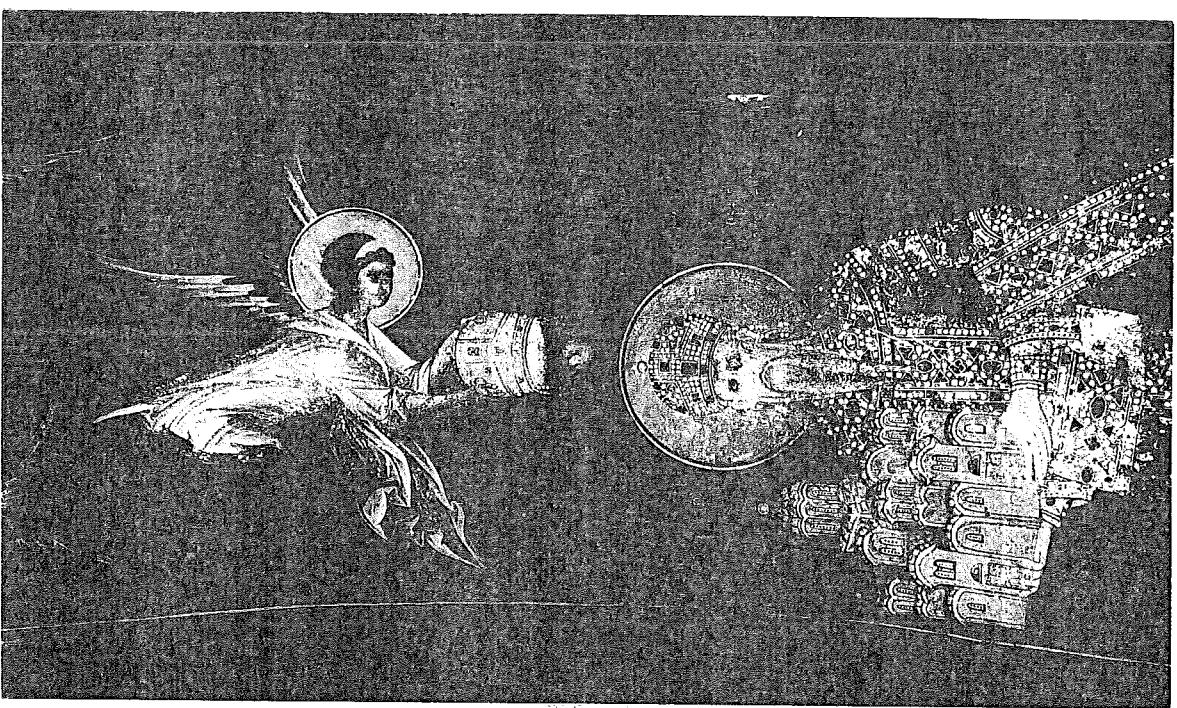


Fig. 1. Milutin and Simonida (Gračanica)



be an allusion to it in the paintings. For this reason it seems worth while returning to the subject of coronation in Byzantine iconography, but this time I propose to consider it from another angle. I propose first of all a brief consideration of marriage scenes in Antique, Early Christian and Byzantine art, with particular reference to the use of crowns. Next it seems advisable to turn to the use of crowns in the marriage rite and the significance attached to them. We shall then be in a position to study and interpret pictures in the Byzantine tradition, in which two spouses are crowned, and to decide whether we are entitled to see there an allusion, explicit or implicit, to marriage.

When I visited Professor Svetozar Radičić for the last time only a few weeks before his untimely death, I had the privilege of discussing the theme of this article with him. I now dedicate the article to his memory.

### I. THE WORKS OF ART

A considerable number of coins from the Roman period have survived, which were issued to commemorate a marriage.<sup>5</sup> Themes are represented upon them which are later taken up in Christian iconography: the *dextrarum junctio*, Juno Pronuba placing a hand on the shoulders of the two spouses, the marriage contract. However, coronation does not appear upon these coins. Moreover marriage issues become rare in the Christian epoch. One or two examples occur in the first centuries with a *dextrarum junctio*.<sup>6</sup> The unique example of a coinage issue upon which the spouses are crowned by Christ is that of Romanus IV Diogenes (1068—1071) and Eudocia.<sup>7</sup> (Fig. 2). The portraits of the spouses may be represented on a Roman coin.<sup>8</sup> This theme recurs on other artefacts: sarcophagi, gilded glasses, rings and other objects, such as the Proiecta casket, which were, presumably, destined to be wedding presents.<sup>9</sup> The same is true of the *dextrarum junctio*, which we also find on marriage belts.<sup>10</sup>

Coronation on objects commemorating a marriage seems to be introduced into iconography by Christians. We have a number of gilded glasses, upon which spouses are crowned by Christ<sup>11</sup> (Fig. 3). But saints may also be crowned, Peter and Paul most frequently<sup>12</sup>; moreover the married

Fig. 2.  
Coin Romanus IV  
and Eudocia (Paris,  
Cabinet des médailles)



Fig. 3.  
Gilded glass, Christ  
crownes spouses  
(London, British  
Museum)



Fig. 4. Gilded  
glass, putto  
crownes spouses  
(London, British  
Museum)



couple may also be represented with their children<sup>13</sup>. Sometimes the subject is more complicated as, for example, on the gilded glass in the Museo Kirchneriano (Rome), where the couple join hands over an altar, while a crown »floats« between them<sup>14</sup>. The floating crown also figures on gilded glasses representing Saints Peter and Paul.<sup>15</sup>

Examples of gilded glasses upon which a putto is represented crowning are much rarer<sup>16</sup> (Fig. 4). Although it has been suggested that such glasses served as a model for the Christian theme of Christ crowning, I wonder whether, in fact, the opposite is not the case. Should not such an object as the gilded glass in the British Museum be associated rather with the pagan Renaissance, which produced a number of remarkable ivories?<sup>17</sup> One of these, which particularly concerns us here, is the diptych in Brescia, upon which two mythological couples are represented. Between Diana and Endymion stands a putto, holding crowns over their heads<sup>18</sup> (Fig. 5).

A unique object is the Rothschild cameo (dated about 335) (fig. 6). The emperor Constantius is represented with his spouse in the form of bust portraits<sup>19</sup>. What makes this cameo particularly interesting for us is the type of crown which each of them is wearing. Delbrueck has suggested that these are not imperial diadems but marriage crowns and that, consequently, this cameo is to be associated with a marriage.

Several Byzantine ivories are known to us, upon which Christ is represented crowning an imperial couple. The most remarkable is that representing Romanus and Eudocia in the Cabinet des Médailles (Paris). The identity of this couple has been the object of controversy: are they Romanus II and Eudocia (959—963) or Romanus IV Diogenes and Eudocia (1068—1071)? (Fig. 7). Recently Dr Joli Kalavrezou-Maxeiner has produced strong arguments, in favour of the latter couple<sup>20</sup> for whom, as we have noted, there exists a coinage issue with the same iconographical theme as well as lead seals<sup>21</sup>. Moreover they also figure, crowned by Christ, upon a silver reliquary in Moscow.<sup>22</sup>

The argument which has told most strongly against such an attribution is the existence, in the Musée de Cluny (Paris) of a similar ivory, dated 982/3, upon which Christ crowns Otto II and Theophanes<sup>23</sup>. This ivory, which for stylistic reasons, must be attributed to a Western rather than a Constantinopolitan workshop, nevertheless depends

Fig. 5. Ivory, putto crowns Diana and Endymion (Musée Cluny, Brescia).



iconographically on a Byzantine model. Moreover, just as with the Romanus ivory, other minor artefacts may be associated with it, notably two medallia with the same iconographical theme<sup>24</sup>. If then we reject the early attribution of the Romanus ivory, such that it antedates that of Otto II, we must postulate in its place the existence of a lost 10th-century Byzantine prototype.

A final Byzantine ivory associated with an imperial couple is the coffin in the Palazzo Venezia (Rome)<sup>25</sup>. It is decorated with a series of scenes from the Life of David, among which is that of Saul giving his daughter to David as his wife. Saul pushes Michal towards David, who joins both hands with her. On the same ivory an identified couple is twice represented, once being blessed by Christ, who places crowns on their heads, and once in *proskynesis*.

There exists one Byzantine enamel associated with a Byzantine imperial couple, in the Museum of Tiflis<sup>26</sup>. On this enamel, Christ is represented crowning Michael VII Ducas (1071–1078) and Maria. The inscription reads: »I crown Michael with Maria by my hand.« Recently Ioannis Spattharakis has identified the imperial couple crowned by Christ in the frontispiece to the Homilies of John Chrysostom, Paris, Coislin, 79, f. 1 (2bis), as also being Michael VII and Maria rather than Nicephorus Botaniates and Maria.<sup>27</sup>

Historical or mythological marriage-scenes occur on Greek vases. A crown or fillet is placed upon the bride's head, sometimes by Aphrodite<sup>28</sup>. A description exists of a lost picture of the Marriage of Alexander, in which Alexander presents a crown to his bride<sup>29</sup>. In the wellknown Roman paintings of wedding scenes, such as the Nozze Aldobrandini (Vatican Museum) or those in the House of the Mysteries at Pompeii, there is no coronation. However, in a painting formerly in the House of Meleager at Pompeii, now in the Museo Nazionale (Naples), Hymen is portrayed, wearing a crown and holding another in his hands<sup>30</sup> (Fig. 8).

It does not seem that Christian artists used these pictures as models for representing Old Testament and New Testament marriages. The *dextrarum iunctio* is preferred for marriages in the 5th-century mosaics in Santa Maria Maggiore<sup>31</sup>. The illuminated manuscripts of the Octateuch use a variety of formulae, which do not, however, include corona<sup>nation</sup><sup>32</sup>. The most frequently represented Old Testament marriage is that of David and Michal. We have already

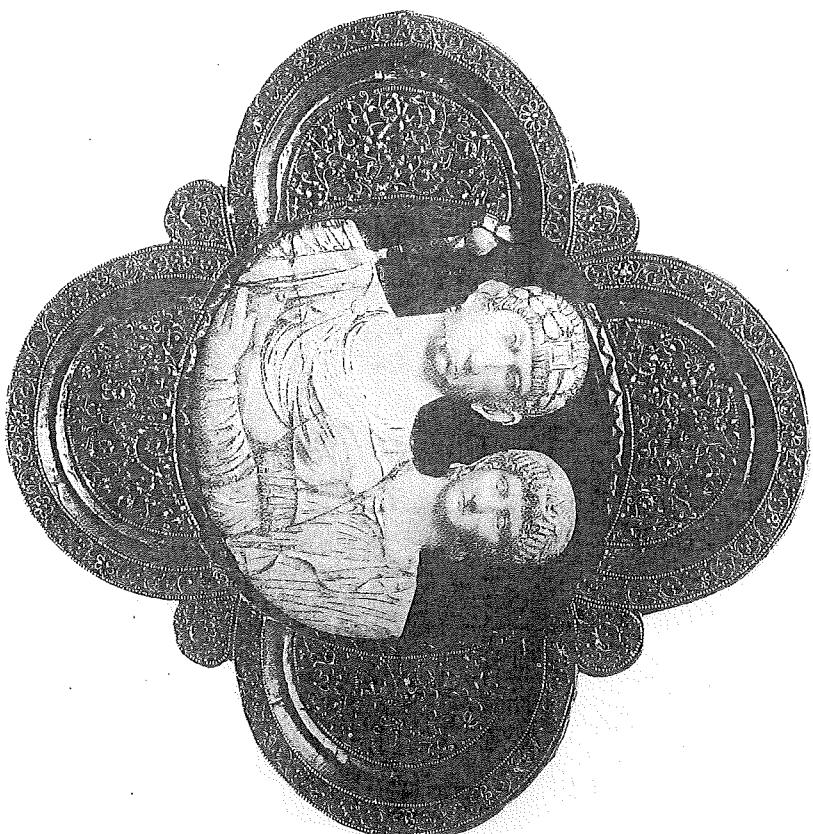


Fig. 6. Cameo, Constantius and spouse  
(Rothschild collection, Paris)

seen that Saul pushes Michal towards David on the ivory casket in Palazzo Venezia. On the silver plate from Cyprus, the *dextrorum junctio* is used<sup>33</sup>. In the illuminated *Book of Kings*, Vatican, graec. 333, f. 24v, Saul, seated on a throne, places his right arm around David and his left arm around Michal.<sup>34</sup>

The Psalter Vatican, graec. 752 contains two biographical series for David. In the first, f. 2<sup>o</sup>, which serves as a kind of introduction to the Psalter and accompanies the Paschal tables, Saul is represented crowning David and Michal, but an inscription makes it clear that he is conferring the *basileia* upon them<sup>35</sup>. The second series, f. 449, accompanies the apocryphal Psalm 151. Here two scenes of coronation occur. In the first, which belongs to the iconography of crowning co-emperors, David is represented, without Michal, receiving a crown from Saul. The inscription makes it clear that he is being crowned to the *basileia*. However, in the second example, which resembles closely the scene on the Romanus ivory, Saul crowns both David and Michal. The inscription, in part effaced, seems to refer to I Kings 18, 27: Saul blessing David with his daughter<sup>36</sup>. New Testament marriage scenes illustrate Lives of Saints Joachim and Anna, or Saint Joseph and the Virgin. An accolade is usually preferred for Joachim and Anna, although, in one case, we may have a representation of the High Priest placing an arm around each of the two spouses<sup>37</sup>. An apocryphal scene, interpolated in the Laurentian Gospels, Florence Laur. Plut. VI 23, f. 5v, shows Zacharias pointing out Mary, who stands to the right, to Joseph<sup>38</sup>. So far as I know, coronation is not used in these apocryphal Lives. On the other hand, on at least four occasions, the artist has represented the two spouses at the Cana wedding feast wearing crowns<sup>39</sup> (Fig. 10).

Other Byzantine illuminated manuscripts with marriage scenes are the Barlaam and Joasaph, Paris, graec. 1128, the Epithalamion Vatican, graec. 185, and the Skylitzes matritensis. On f. 86 of the Paris Barlaam (Fig. 11), illustrating the account of the rich young man who accepts a poor bride, a personage wearing an unusual style of scarf places crowns on the heads of the spouses<sup>40</sup>. The corresponding passage is not illustrated in Athos Iviron 463, f. 47v, with a coronation, while, in other Byzantine manuscripts of Barlaam and Joasaph, this passage is not illustrated at all<sup>41</sup>. The Epithalamion contains a unique narrative series

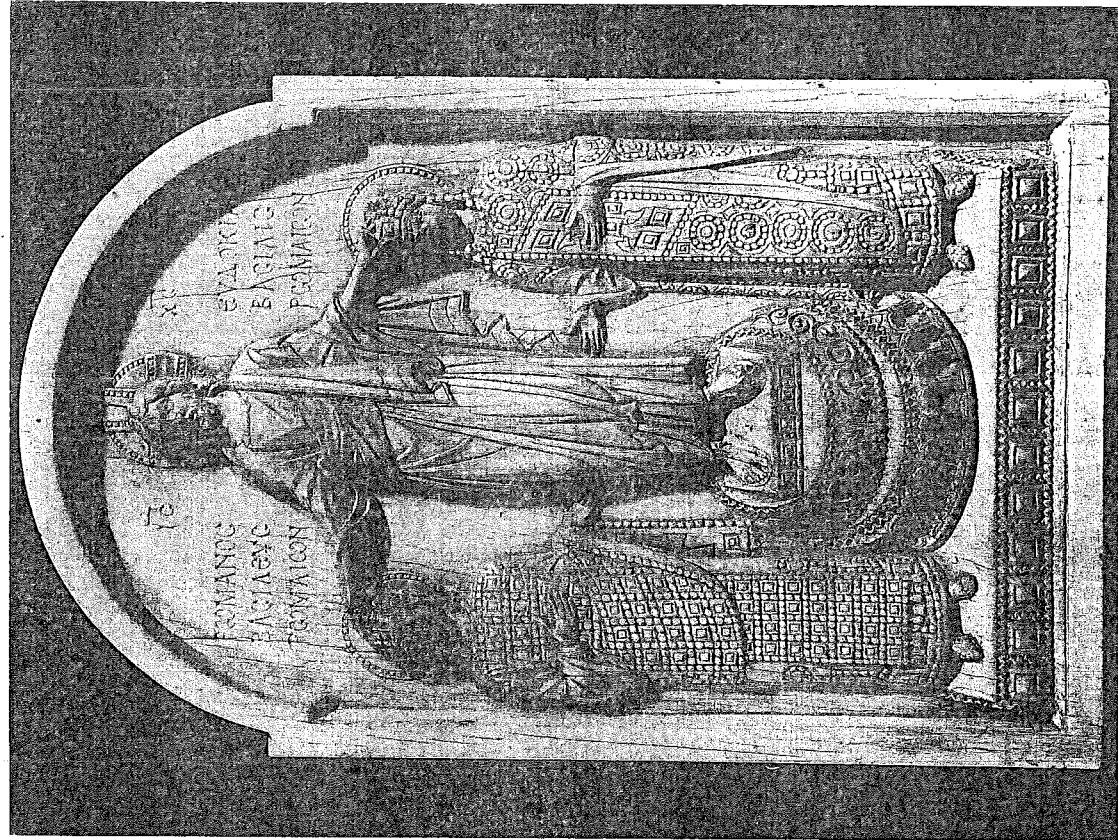


Fig. 7 Ivory, Romanus and Eudocia (Cabinet des Médailles, Paris).

of miniatures illustrating the coming of the bride to Constantinople and her presentation. However no scene of coronation figures in the series.<sup>42</sup>

We have left till last the richest source of documentation for crowns in marriage iconography. The Skylitzes matréniss has nine illustrated accounts of a wedding; in four cases the miniature represents a coronation. We will describe first the coronation scenes (Fig. 12). On f. 53<sup>v</sup>, a bishop places crowns on the heads of Theophobus and the sister of the emperor Theophilus (829—842)<sup>43</sup>. The inscription reads: »Theophobus is made a patrician and honoured with the emperor's sister». On f. 125, a bishop crowns Constantine VII and Helen, the daughter of Romanus<sup>44</sup> (Fig. 13). Their marriage took place in 919. The text refers to two separate events, the giving in marriage and their coronation by the patriarch Nicolas. The miniature follows the allusion to coronation, but the epigraph accompanying it refers to marriage. Like the next two examples, it is not due to a Byzantine copyist. On f. 185, a personage, who apparently wears no omophorion, places crowns on the heads of Asotes and the daughter of Samuel of Bulgaria. The epigraphs refer to Samuel and to marriage<sup>45</sup>. Finally, on f. 198<sup>v</sup>, a bishop crowns Romanus III Argyropoulos (1028—1033) and Zoë<sup>46</sup>. The inscription refers to marriage and coronation as emperor.

We turn now to the miniatures in which a coronation is not represented. On f. 87<sup>v</sup>, the Byzantine copyist has represented Basil with Eudocia Ingerina<sup>47</sup>. Their marriage took place about 865. Basil, his head uncovered, but with an evident badge of nobility on his vestments, stands beside Eudocia, who is wearing imperial dress and crowned. A personage stands to her left with his hands on her shoulder. To the right are two priests who make a gesture of blessing. According to the text, Basil is honoured with the patriciate and allied to his wife. The epigraph refers to Basil, crowning and his wife. On f. 129, a bishop blesses Stephen, the son of Romanus Lecapenus and Anna, the daughter of Gabellas<sup>48</sup>. The scene is set in a church; both spouses wear crowns and imperial dress; the artist, however, was not Byzantine. The text specifies how the crown of marriage and the diadem of *basileia* were conferred at the same time upon Anna; the epigraph refers to marriage and crowning. On f. 130<sup>v</sup> a bishop blesses Romanus II and Eudocia, daughter of Hugh of France<sup>49</sup>. They are imperially dressed and wear crowns;

Fig. 8. Wall-painting, *Hymen*, House of Melenger, Pompeii (Museo Nazionale, Naples)

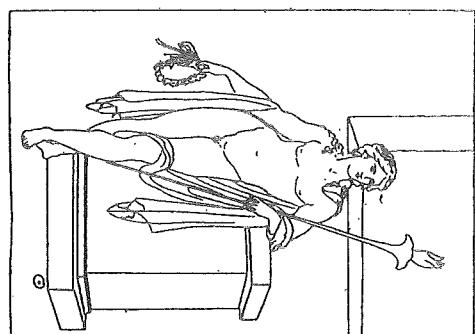


Fig. 9. Miniature, *Marriage at Cana* (Mount Athos, Iviron)

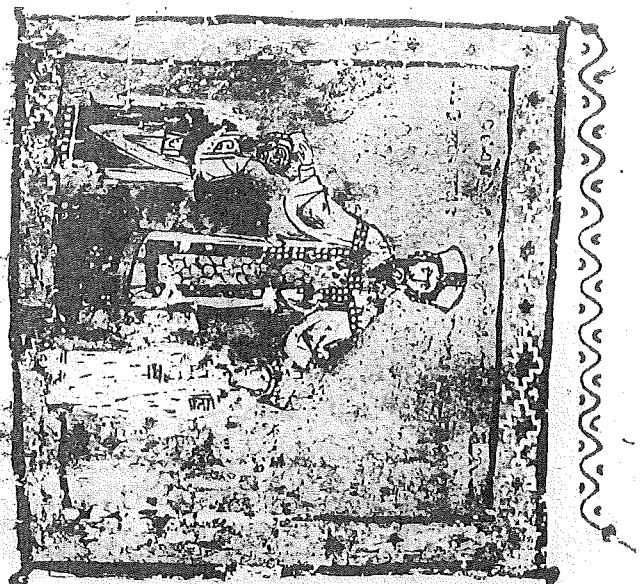
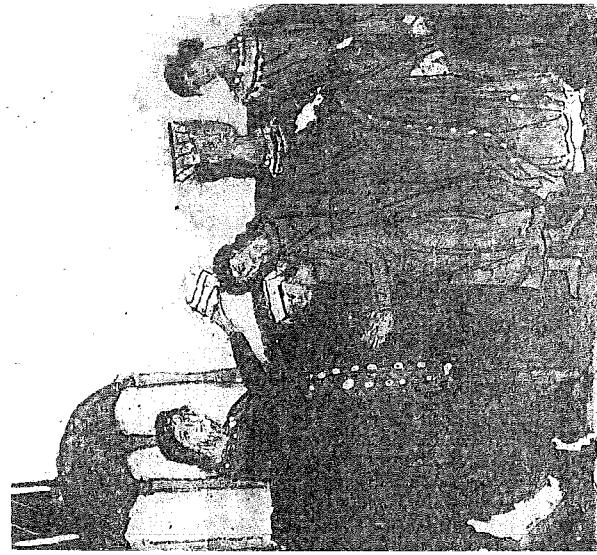
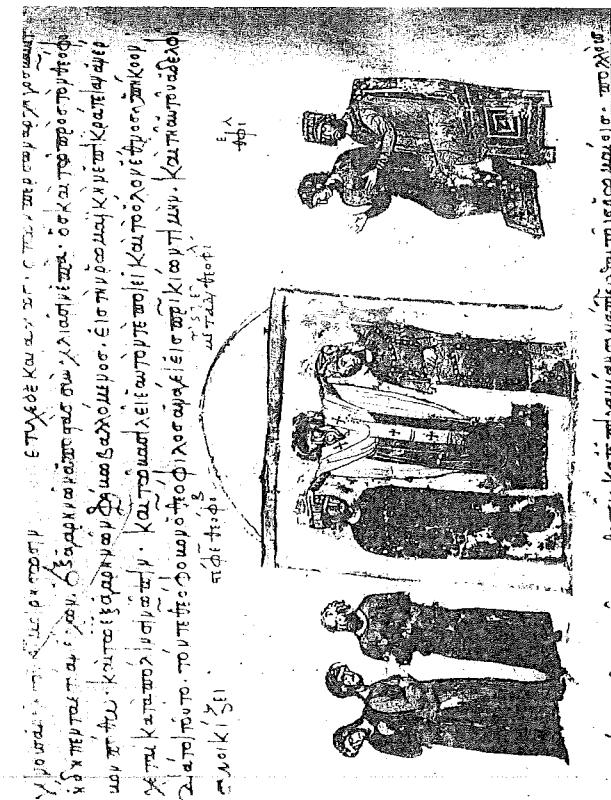


Fig. 9. Miniature, *David and Michal crowned by Saul* (Vatican Library)





*Fig. 11. Miniature, Marriage of rich man and poor maiden  
(Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris)*



*Fig. 12. Miniature, Marriage of Theophobus and emperor's sister (Biblioteca nacional, Madrid)*

an epigraph refers to marriage. On f. 206<sup>v</sup>, Michael IV (1034—1040) is represented being blessed by the patriarch Alexius<sup>50</sup>. They wear imperial dress, make the gesture of *dextiarum junctio* (the only time in this manuscript) and stand before a veil. Members of the entourage hold lamps<sup>51</sup>. The epigraph refers simply to the beginning of the reign of Michael, son of John the Orphanotrophus of the Paphagionians.

Finally we have two miniatures on f. 222<sup>52</sup>. They illustrate the accession of Constantine IX (1042) (Fig. 15). In the first miniature, Constantine is shown wearing a crown and standing at the altar; behind him is Zoë, also crowned, while another personage may be placing a hand on her shoulder. The officiating priest stands on the other side of the altar. In the next scene, a crown is placed on the head of Constantine only (Zoë was, of course, already invested with the basileia). The epigraph »marriagek« has been incorrectly placed beside the second miniature, instead of properly beside the first.

Thus — to sum up briefly — coronation does not seem to figure in the Roman imperial iconography of marriage. On the other hand, crowns are found, particularly in mythological scenes, on Greek vases and in wallpaintings, although these are generally known only from descriptions. When they first appear in the Christian repertoire, crowns are attributed both to saints and martyrs and to married couples. When a Byzantine imperial couple is crowned, it is not at once evident whether the scene refers to their marriage or to the conferment of the *basileia*. It is necessary to have resort to the context or to an inscription to be sure. The same is true of miniatures of David and Michal. Only in some miniatures of marriage in the Skylitzes matiensis and in one miniature illustrating the Paris Barlaam and Joasaph do we find certain examples of the use of crowns in marriage ceremonial. Finally we find an occasional echo of this use in representations of the Cana Miracle.

We must now ask what significance was attached to

these crowns, first in Antiquity and then in the Early Chris-

## II. THE USE OF CROWNS IN MARRIAGE RITES

Just as it is sometimes impossible to distinguish the

crown from the diadem, so there is a possibility of confusing the crown and the garlands<sup>53</sup>. Garlands were used at many kinds of festivity; they were not only worn but carried in the hand or used to decorate walls and doors. Thus, on the occasion of a wedding in Ancient Greece, the house of the bride's father was covered with garlands and wreaths of myrtle<sup>54</sup>. At the wedding, which seems to have been more a family celebration than a civic ceremony, the bride and bridegroom wore crowns, which they exchanged<sup>55</sup>. The crown figured in mythological weddings; for example, Dionysius took Ariadne's crown and placed it in the sky, where it became a star<sup>56</sup>. This reminds us that, in Antiquity, wedding festivities had much in common with the Bacchanal. Consequently we can understand why a number of the Early Fathers of the Church, not only Tertullian who disapproved of crowns in general, discouraged Christians from celebrating their marriage with such festivities.<sup>57</sup>

Marriage in Roman use, from the 2nd century at least, was regarded as a civil event. The marriage of the Roman couple was assimilated to that of the emperor and his spouse. They were required to offer sacrifice before the statues of the emperor and empress, *ob insignem eorum concordiam*<sup>58</sup>. However, coronation did not figure in this ceremony.

Our first references to it are in the 4th and 5th centuries. According to Gregory of Nazianzus, it was the rôle of the parents to place a crown on the bride's head<sup>59</sup>. In the texts of John Chrysostom, it is not mentioned who imposes the crown, although it is quite clear what meaning is attributed to it<sup>60</sup>. The crown, for John Chrysostom, is the reward given to those who have triumphed over the flesh and maintained their virginity until marriage. This moral triumph, like that of the monk, who reaches the summit of the Heavenly Ladder of virtues, derives from Saint Paul's comparison of the Christian athlete striving for an imperishable crown with the ordinary athlete in the stadium<sup>61</sup>. Byzantine theology consistently attributes the same meaning to the marriage crown. The canonist Nicetas of Thessaloniki maintained, in the 11th century, that no crown should be imposed at a second marriage since it was a sign of virginity<sup>62</sup>. Symeon of Thessaloniki says, in the 15th century, that the crown is worn by virgins and by the pure<sup>63</sup>.

A confirmation of the early use of crowns by Christians is to be found in the 5th-century Syro-Roman Lawbook<sup>64</sup>.

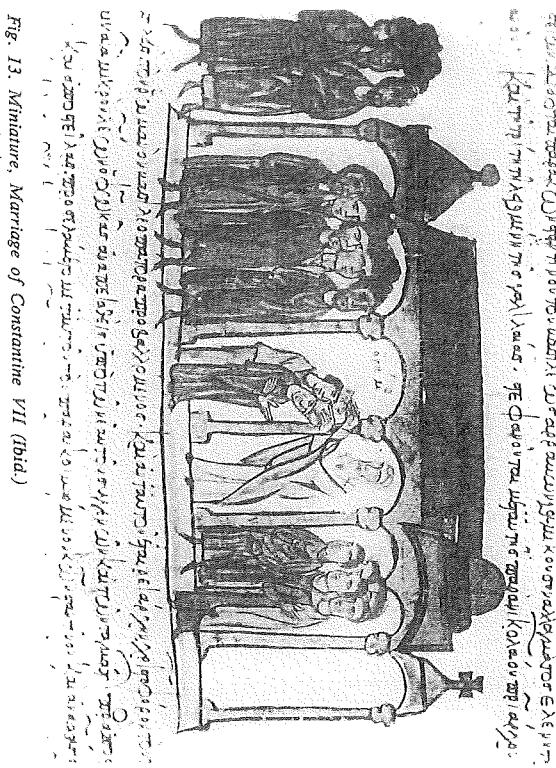


Fig. 13. Miniature, Marriage of Constantine VII (*Ibid.*)



Fig. 14. Miniature, Marriage of Michael IV (*Ibid.*)

The author, when treating unwritten marriages, says that it is sufficient that the brides give their free consent, and let them be crowned with the glorious crown of virginity. He does not, however, say who imposed the crowns. Nor is this clear in the Reply of Pope Nicolas I to the Bulgarians in 866. He says that the crowns were to be kept in the church, and, after the marriage rite, the couple left the church wearing crowns on their heads<sup>65</sup>. Only in the 10th-century Euchologija is the coronation of the bride and bridegroom by the officiating priest specifically mentioned<sup>66</sup>. From then on, the imposition of crowns in marriage is regularly attributed to the officiating priest in Euchologija.<sup>67</sup>

Our first detailed accounts of a Christian marriage ceremony occur in chronicles. The 7th-century writer Theophylact Simocatta describes the marriage of the emperor Maurice (583—602)<sup>68</sup>. The patriarch joined the hands of the emperor and empress, pronounced the nuptial blessing and placed the nuptial crown upon their heads. Then he celebrated the eucharistic liturgy and gave holy communion to the spouses. This is, of course, an imperial ceremony. However, for the actual solemnization of the marriage, it corresponds to the ceremony current for less exalted marriages, which was, indeed, to be extended to all classes of society<sup>69</sup>. The only difference for the solemnization of an imperial marriage was that the patriarch normally presided, and this in a palatine church — first in that of St Stephen, built by the empress Pulcheria in 428 but later in that of the Virgin of the Pharos, near the Chrysotriklinos, from the time of Leo VI (886—912).<sup>70</sup>

However, an imperial wedding was the occasion of other festivities besides the church ceremony, of which Constantine Porphyrogenitus gives us an account in his Book of Ceremonies. Unfortunately he begins only at the moment where the church ceremony ends, saying that the imperial couple left the church where they had been married wearing crowns<sup>71</sup>. He also records the acclamations prescribed for the occasion which include an allusion to coronation<sup>72</sup>. Other accounts, for example the Epithalamion for an unknown emperor and that in the History of John Cantacuzenus, tell us virtually nothing of the imposition of nuptial crowns.<sup>73</sup>

One reason for this lacuna is the fact that coronation to mark the conferment of the *basileia* was often closely associated with the imposition of nuptial crowns. For example

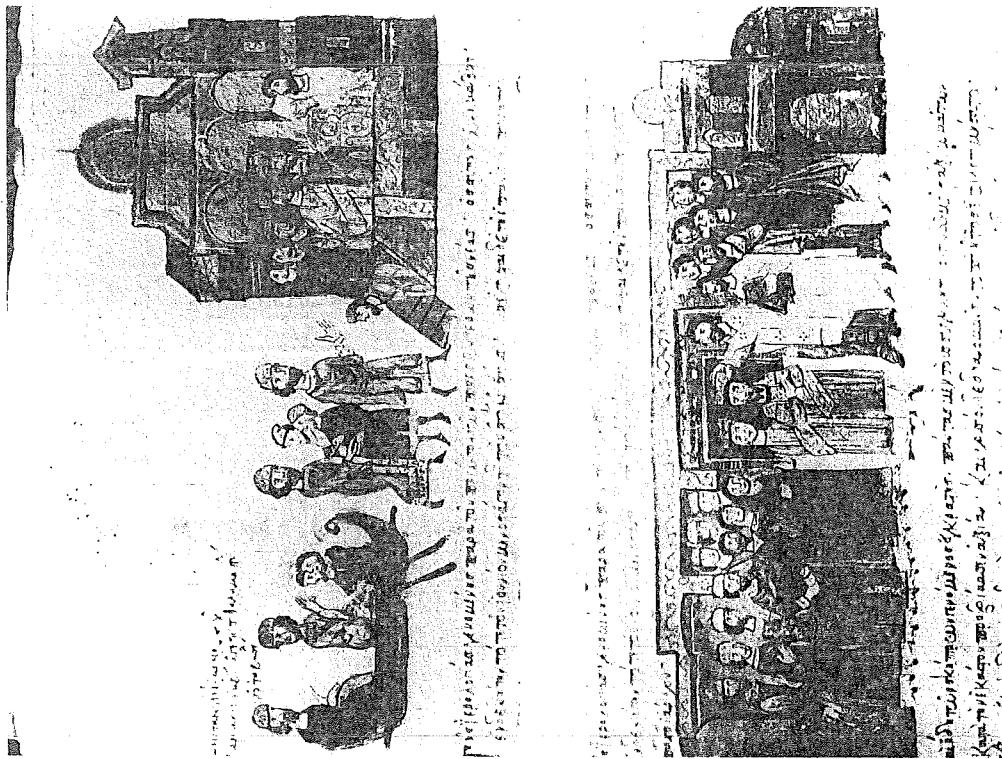


Fig. 15. a) Marriage of Constantine IX  
b) Coronation of Constantine IX

Heraclius (610—641) and Eudocia were crowned and married the same day<sup>74</sup>. The same is true for several of the marriages recounted by Skylitzes, to which we have already alluded. Generally, it seems, especially in the case of the bride, the *basileia* was conferred before marriage<sup>75</sup>. This was necessary, in order that she should be worthy of her imperial husband. But, equally, Theophobus and Basil are made patricians before receiving an imperial bride in marriage. This is not, however, the case, it seems, for Constantine VII and Romanus III, who were both married to their respective imperial bride before receiving the *basileia*. This was, no doubt, because it was their marriage which gave them the title to be crowned and to reign as emperor.

Thus, to conclude, coronation seems, in Antiquity, to have had a mainly festal significance. The crown is closer to a garland than a diadem. Its conferment, or the exchange of crowns, does not constitute the marriage. However, since the crown had associations with pagan rites, Christians were advised to refrain from wearing them at their wedding celebrations. It is not clear whether there was, in fact, a total cessation, in the use of crowns. They were certainly used by Christians in the 4th century, but with a triumphal significance, which they keep throughout the Byzantine epoch. Moreover, as the solemnization of marriages became exclusively the responsibility of the Church, it became customary for a member of the clergy to impose the crowns. In the case of imperial couples, this was normally the patriarch himself. But imperial weddings, often contracted for political or dynastic reasons were closely associated with the *basileia*. Therefore, we have to ask whether certain representations of the coronation of an imperial couple refer primarily to their marriage or to the conferment of the *basileia*.

### III. THE SIGNIFICANCE OF CROWNS IN MARRIAGE ICONOGRAPHY

The marriage crowns on gilded glasses have only a symbolical significance. We cannot affirm that they refer directly to a ceremony, any more than do the crowns offered to saints and martyrs, whether, again, on gilded glasses, or in monumental apse decorations. On the other hand, it is more difficult to be precise about the crowns offer by

a putto to Diana and Endymion. Either this is a »retake« of the Christian motif, or it is to be associated with the picture of Hymen wearing and holding a crown. In this case the crown would be an attribute of the god of love.

The cameo of Honorius is too early for us to see here a precise allusion to the triumphal crowns of Christian marriage ritual. If, as is possible, this cameo was made to commemorate his marriage, then we must suppose that the crowns are part of the festal dress of the imperial couple. In the Skylitzes miniatures where the imposition of a crown is definitely intended to signify the solemnization of marriage, there does not seem to be any specific distinction between the crowns conferred and the diadems worn by emperors in other miniatures.

In the cases of the marriage of Constantine VII with Helen and of Samuel the Bulgar with Asotes, there is no problem of interpretation, the more so that in the former case the word *γάμος* is inscribed by the scene. However, when the rite is represented frontally, as is the case with the marriage of Theophobus with the sister of the emperor Theophilus, we seem to be close to the model used for the ivory of Romanus — and Eudocia, as well as to the miniature of David and Michal in Vatican. Graec. 752. Now, with regard to the Romanus ivory, Dr Iola Kalavrezou-Maxeiner has recently rejected the notion that it represents the blessing of their marriage by Christ.

»Obviously«, she writes, »The notion of marriage is there, as it is with all coronations of couples, but it can be shown that marriage is less important as a theme in these representations than the imperial legal status conferred by the coronation«<sup>76</sup>

There is no need to repeat Dr Kalavrezou-Maxeiner's arguments here in detail. It suffices to recall that the theme of coronation was used plentifully by Romanus IV and Eudocia on works which are certainly to be attributed to them. The aim was to present Romanus IV, who owed his position to his marriage with Eudocia, as a legitimate ruler, not a usurper, while Eudocia maintained the position which she had enjoyed under Romanus's predecessor Constantine X. These arguments help to explain our two miniatures. In each case, a man of humble social origins is represented as ennobled and married to a royal princess. Theophobus is made a patrician before marrying the emperor's sister, while David, a shepherd-boy, marries Saul's

daughter and, in due course, succeeds him as king of Israël. Thus, although the artist had already represented David's coronation as co-emperor, he nevertheless used for David's marriage a modicū, which was associated more particularly with the conferment of *basileia*.

I am now in a position to add a precision to what I said earlier, on the occasion of the Symposium at Gračanica in 1973, about the double coronation of Milutin and Simonida. As in the imperial Byzantine pictures, the theme of *basileia* is predominant. However, while Milutin in no way owed his title to reign to his marriage with Simonida, except over the territories ceded to him as her dowry, nevertheless, in contracting this marriage, he was in the same position as David marrying Michal or Theophobus marrying the sister of the emperor Theophilus. A person of humbler social origins was being allied with an imperial bride. Thus, the painting of Milutin and Simonida at Gračanica should be more particularly associated with the group of representations of Christ crowning Romanus IV and Eudocia.

In conclusion, a few words about the relationship of marriage crowns to other coronation themes in iconography might well be appropriate. We may distinguish, in Antiquity, between the festive garland, the triumphal crown and the imperial diadem. Roman rulers receive triumphal crowns, and, in due course, this crown becomes combined with the imperial diadem, such that coronation, in Byzantine iconography, has the primary significance of conferment of the *basileia*; this is to be understood as a capacity rather than as a title to rule. In Christian religious iconography, the crown retains its triumphal sense and is used in a variety of contexts: the triumph of Christ over death, of the martyr over his persecutors, of the monk over his sinful proclivities. The garland, whose festive sense is evident in representations of weddings and Baccharals, seems to disappear in the Christian era. In Christian tradition it becomes a triumphal crown and thus persists, both in liturgical use and in art. However, the possibility remains open of using the crown or diadem in iconography with a primary and with a subordinate significance. This seems to be what has happened in the group of pictures which I have associated more particularly with that of Milutin and Simonida. Dr Kalařezou-Maxeiner has pointed out that the issue of coins by Romanus

IV and Eudocia on which they are represented being crowned is not strictly a marriage issue, because it was the principal issue of their reign. Their marriage alliance was the basis of government at Constantinople. If Milutin, in his old age, had himself represented, along with Simonida, being crowned by angels, might this not be in order to recall to the turbulent Serbian nobility that his alliance with an imperial princess placed him in a caste far superior to theirs?

## NOTES

This article enters into a series of studies of triumphal and other themes deriving from Byzantine imperial imagery: *The coronation of a co-emperor in the Skylitzes maitrensis*, Actes du 14<sup>e</sup> congrès international des études byzantines (1971), II, Bucarest 1975 (Cited: *Cō-empereur*); *The iconographical sources for the coronation of Milutin and Simonida at Gračanica*, Symposium »art byzantin au commencement du 14<sup>e</sup> siècle«, Gračanica 1973 (cited: *Milutin & Simonida*); *The triumph of Saint Peter in the church of Saint Clement at Ohrid and the iconography of the triumph of the martyrs*, Zografski 5 (1974); *Raising on a shield in Byzantine iconography*, Revue des études byzantines 33 (1975); *The significance of *unction* in Byzantine iconography*, Byzantine and Modern Greek Studies 2 (1976); *The Dextrarum junctio of Lencis Magna in relationship to the iconography of marriage* (Hommages Jean Lassus), Antiquités africaines 14 (1979) (cited: *Dexirarum junctio*). The first, fourth and fifth of these studies have been reprinted in my volume *Studies in Byzantine Iconography* (Variorum), London 1977.

<sup>1</sup> Walter, *Milutin and Simonida*, p. 183—200.

<sup>2</sup> The earliest recorded use of the word in this sense seems to be in the Letters of Theodore Studite (799—826), G.W.H. Lampe, *A Protristic Greek Lexicon*, Oxford 1961, p. 1258. Previously, the word signified a crown of victory. So *Methodius of Olympus*, *Concipitum Decem Virginum (Le Banguer)*, edited H. Musurillo, Sources chrétiennes 95, Paris 1963, p. 236 line 28 (= PG 18, 161a). Methodius was martyred in 311.

<sup>3</sup> M. Laskaris, *Vizantiske princze u srednjevjekovoj Srbiji*, Belgrade 1926, p. 57—68; G. Ostrogorsky, *History of the Byzantine State* (2nd English edition), Oxford 1968, p. 489—490.

<sup>4</sup> G. Pachymeres, *De Andronico Patriologo*, IV 6 (Bonn II, p. 286, line 3—4).

<sup>5</sup> L. Reekmans, *La dextrarum junctio dans l'iconographie romaine et paléochrétienne*, Bulletin de l'Institut historique belge de Rome 31 (1958), p. 32—37.

<sup>6</sup> Walter, *Dextrarum junctio*, p. 271—283.

<sup>7</sup> Cécile Morrisson, *Catalogue des monnaies byzantines de la Bibliothèque Nationale*, II, Paris 1970, p. 649—650, pl. LXXXIX; Édouard, *De Nicéphore II Phocas à Roman IV Diogène*, Bulletin du club français de la médaille 42 (1974), p. 83—87. See below, p. 85, 91.

- <sup>8</sup> A. Rossbach, *Römische Hochzeits- und Ehedenkästen*, Leipzig 1971, p. 21. He cites examples from Augustus and Livia to Trajan and Plotina.
- <sup>9</sup> O. M. Dalton, *Catalogue of Early Christian Objects... in the British Museum*, London 1901, № 304, p. 61—64; H. Busshausen, *Die spätösterreichischen Metallschränke und frühchristlichen Reliquiare* (Wiener byzantinische Studien 9), Vienna 1971, B 7, p. 210—214, fig. 21—26.
- <sup>10</sup> E. H. Kantorowicz, *On the Golden Marriage Belt and the Marriage rings of the Dumbarton Oaks Collection*, Dumbarton Oaks Papers 14 (1960), p. 1—16; Walter, *Dextrarum junctio* p. 279—280 & fig. 8.
- <sup>11</sup> R. Garrucci, *Storia dell'arte cristiana nei primi otto anni della chiesa, III, Pitture non cimieriali*, Prato 1876, p. 104—111, fig. 195. 11—12; 196 4; 197 6; 198 1—3. Dalton, *op. cit.*, № 613, p. 121.
- <sup>12</sup> C.R. Morey & G. Ferrari, *The Gold Glass Collection of the Vatican Library* (Catalogo del Museo Sacro IV), Vatican 1959.
- <sup>13</sup> Garrucci, *op. cit.*, fig. 181 1—6.
- <sup>14</sup> Garrucci, *op. cit.*, fig. 199 1—6.
- <sup>15</sup> Garrucci, *op. cit.*, fig. 195 11.
- <sup>16</sup> Garrucci, *op. cit.*, fig. 182 5.
- <sup>17</sup> E. Kitzinger, *Early Medieval Art in the British Museum*, 1955 (second edition), p. 4—5; idem, *Byzantine Art in the Making*, London 1977, p. 34—38.
- <sup>18</sup> W. F. Volbach, *Ehebeinarbeiten der Spätantike und des frühen Mittelalters*, Mainz 1952, № 66, p. 43 (second edition 1976, p. 57), pl. 21. For a general discussion of these pagan diptychs, see H. Graeven, *Antike Dipylchen*, Römische Mitteilungen 28 (1913), p. 198—304.
- <sup>19</sup> E. Coche de la Ferté, *Le camée Rothschild, un chef-d'œuvre du 4ème siècle après J.-C.*, Paris 1957. R. Debrueck, *Die Consulardiptychen und verwandte Denkmäler*, Berlin/Leipzig 1929, p. 258—260, pl. 66, and *Spätantike Kaiserporträts*, Berlin/Leipzig 1933, p. 206, pl. 105, had maintained that the emperor was Honorius, and that, in consequence, the cameo was executed about 398.
- <sup>20</sup> A. Goldschmidt & K. Weitzmann, *Die byzantinischen Elfenbeinskulpturen des X—XIII. Jahrhunderts*, II, Berlin 1934, № 34, p. 35. Their attribution to Romanus II was disputed by A.S. Keck & C.R. Morey in their review in the *Art Review* 17 (1935), p. 398—400; it is apparently rejected by A. Volbach, *Les ivories sculptés, de l'époque carolingienne au 13<sup>e</sup> siècle*. Cahiers de civilisation médiévale 1 (1958), p. 23. A. Grabar keeps an open mind, *L'empereur dans l'art byzantin*, Strasbourg 1936, p. 116, as does D. Talbot Rice, *Art byzantin*, Paris/Brussels 1959, № 97, p. 300. Ioli Kalavrezou-Maxine, *Eudokia Makrembolitissa and the Romanos Ivory*, Dumbarton Oaks Papers 31 (1977), p. 386—408.
- <sup>21</sup> See above, note 7. G. Zacos & A. Veglery, *Byzantine Lead Seals*, I, Basle 1972, № 93 a-d.
- <sup>22</sup> A. Grabar, *Quelques reliquaires de saint Demétrios et le martyrium du saint à Salonique*. L'art de la fin de l'Antiquité et du Moyen Âge, I, Paris 1968, p. 446—63 (= Dumbarton Oaks Papers 5 1950); Ch. Walter, *Saint Demetrios: The Myroblylos of Thessalonika*, Studies in Byzantine Iconography, London (Variorum) 1977, V p. 161—162 (= Eastern Churches Review 5 1973); *Mycennae Buzanuu g cobranuax CCCP* II, Moscow 1977, № 547, p. 85.

- <sup>23</sup> Goldschmidt & Weitzmann, *op. cit.*, 11, № 85; P. E. Schramm & Florentine Müterich, *Denkmale der deutschen Könige und Kaiser*, Munich 1962, № 73, p. 144, pl. 73.
- <sup>24</sup> One in the National Museum, Helsinki; the other, now lost, formerly in a private collection in Leningrad. Schramm & Müterich, *op. cit.*, № 74, p. 144.
- <sup>25</sup> Goldschmidt & Weitzmann, *op. cit.*, 1, № 123, p. 63, pl. LX.
- <sup>26</sup> Ch. Armanachvili, *Les époux de George*, Paris 1962, p. 100; Kl. Wessel, *Die byzantinische Kleinkunst*, Recklinghausen 1967, № 38, p. 117—121.
- <sup>27</sup> I. Spatarakis, *The Portrait in Byzantine Illuminated Manuscripts*, Leiden 1971, p. 107—118, fig. 70.
- <sup>28</sup> V. Magnien, *Le mariage chez les Grecs anciens. L'initiation nuptiale*, L'Antiquité classique 5 (1936), p. 115—138, especially p. 122.
- <sup>29</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 127.
- <sup>30</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 129; K. Schefold, *Die Wände Pompejis. Topographisches Verzeichnis der Bildmalerei*, Berlin 1957, p. 112. Reproduction: S. Reinach, *Répertoire des peintures grecques et romaines*, Paris 1922, p. 68.
- <sup>31</sup> B. Brenk, *Die frühchristlichen Mosaiken in S. Maria Maggiore zu Rom*, Wiesbaden 1975, p. 69—70, 80—81; pl. 50; Walter, *Dextrarum junctio*, p. 280—282.
- <sup>32</sup> In Vatican. The spouses, dextrarum junctio and the wedding feast: presentation of the spouses, dextrarum junctio and the wedding feast.
- <sup>33</sup> *Wealth of the Roman World* (catalogue of exhibition, British Museum, 1977) edited by J. Kent & S. Painter, London 1977, № 180, p. 105; Walter, *Dextrarum junctio*, p. 280.
- <sup>34</sup> J. Lassus, *L'illustration du Livre des Rois*, Paris 1973, p. 54.
- <sup>35</sup> E. De Wald, *The Illustrations in the Manuscripts of the Septuagint III. Psalms and Odes* 2, Vaticanus graecus 752, Princeton 1942, p. 4, pl. IV.
- <sup>36</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 41, pl. LIII; Walter, *Co-emperor*, p. 457 note 18.
- <sup>37</sup> I tentatively suggest this alternative interpretation of a fresco in the chapel of Saints Joachim and Anna at Kizil Cukur (Cavusin) in Cappadocia, although Nicole and M. Thierry (*Église de Kizil-Tchoukour chapelle iconoclaste, chapelle de Joachim et d'Anne*, Monuments et Mémoires 50 (1958), p. 126—128) and A. Grabar (*Christian Iconography. A Study of Its Origins*, London 1969, p. 129) interpret this scene rather as Anne pregnant, supported by two attendants.
- <sup>38</sup> Jacqueline Lafontaine-Dosogne, *Iconographie de l'enfance de la Vierge dans l'Empire byzantin et en Occident* I, Brüssel 1964, p. 167—168, 193, fig. 95; Tania Velimans, *Le tétraevangile de la Lavrentienne*, Paris 1971, fig. 10.
- <sup>39</sup> Athos Iviron 5, f. 363v (V. Lazarev, *Storia della pittura bizantina*, Turin 1967, fig. 379; *The Treasures of Mount Athos* II, Athens 1975, pl. 38); Vienna, Library of Mechitarist Congregation, cod. 242, f. 191v (Heide and H. Busshausen, *Die illuminierten armenischen Handschriften der Mechitaristen-Congregation in Wien*, Vienna 1976, p. 37, fig. 63); St Nicolas, Lubotzen (G. Millet and Tania Velimans, *La peinture du Moyen Âge en Yougoslavie* IV, Paris 1969, fig. 7—8); St Nicolas Orphanos, Thessaloniki (A. Xingopoulos, *Οι τουρκοπαπλού Αγίου Νικολάου Ορφανού*, Athens 1964, fig. 91, 178).
- <sup>40</sup> Sirarpi Der Nersessian, *L'illustration du roman de Barlaam et Josaphat*, Paris 1937, p. 79—82, fig. 287.

<sup>41</sup> *Ibidem*, fig. 26. Text: Migne PG 96, 1004c—1008a.

<sup>42</sup> Spatharakis, *The Portrait* (op. cit. note 27), p. 210—230, fig. 158—173.

<sup>43</sup> S. C. Estopañan, *Sculptures Matritensis*, Barcelona/Madrid, 1965 (cited hereinafter: Estopañan) № 133, p. 80—81; *Ioannis Scylitzae, Synopsis Historiarum*, edited I. Thurn, Berlin/New York 1973 (cited hereinafter: Scylitzes), p. 67 (= Bonn p. 120). N. Wilson, *The Madrid Scylitzes, Scriftura e civilità 2* (1978), p. 209—219, argues in favour of a date around 1160 for this manuscript.

<sup>44</sup> Estopañan, № 305, p. 132—133; Scylitzes, p. 209 (= Bonn, p. 293).

<sup>45</sup> Estopañan, № 481; Scylitzes, p. 342 (= Bonn, p. 451).

<sup>46</sup> Estopañan, № 491; Scylitzes, p. 374 (= Bonn p. 485).

<sup>47</sup> Estopañan, № 221; Scylitzes, p. 127 (= Bonn, p. 193).

<sup>48</sup> Estopañan, № 321; Scylitzes, p. 228 (= Bonn, p. 315).

<sup>49</sup> Estopañan, № 325; Scylitzes, p. 231 (= Bonn, p. 319).

<sup>50</sup> Estopañan, № 511; Scylitzes, p. 391 (= Bonn, p. 505).

<sup>51</sup> The use of a veil in marriage ceremonial, particularly for the bride is well attested in Western sources (R. Metz, *La conservation des vierges dans l'Eglise romaine*, Paris 1954, Appendix I, Le rituel de mariage, p. 388, 359, 383, 406, 408; P. Jouneil, *La liturgie romaine du mariage*, La Maison-Dieu 50 (1957), p. 37). For Byzantine use it is less clear. L. Bréhier (*La civilisation byzantine III*, Paris 1930, p. 8) speaks of the pantomimic hold a cloth over the head of the imperial couple during the marriage ceremony, but gives no adequate reference to the sources. G. Schlumberger (*L'épopée byzantine à la fin du 10<sup>e</sup> siècle*, Paris 1896, p. 79) tells an extraordinary story of John l'Zimmois being wrapped in the Virgin's maphorion on the occasion of his marriage, but he too gives no adequate reference to the sources. Unfortunately subsequent writers have repeated what these two distinguished scholars had said, without control. For lamps, the sources are clearer. The practice of carrying lamps at a wedding must go back to Jewish usage (compare the parable of the Wise and Foolish Virgins, Matthew 25, 1—13); it is mentioned by Symeon of Thessaloniki (*De Matrimonio*, PG 155, 509).

<sup>52</sup> Estopañan, № 548—549; Scylitzes, p. 422 (= Bonn, p. 542).

<sup>53</sup> Walter, *Milutin und Simona*, p. 185—198; K. Baus, *Der Kranz in Antike und Christentum* (Theophaneia 2), Bonn 1940, especially p. 93—112; R. Turcan, *Les guirlandes dans l'Antiquité classique*, Jahrbuch für Antike und Christentum 14 (1971), p. 92—139.

<sup>54</sup> *Dictionnaire des antiquités grecques et romaines* 3 (Paris 1904), ed. C. Daremberg and E. Saglio, 1648—1649 (Matrimonium).

<sup>55</sup> Magnien, *art. cit.* (note 28), p. 128.

<sup>56</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 128.

<sup>57</sup> J. Schrijnen, *La couronne nuptiale dans l'antiquité chrétienne*, Mélanges d'archéologie et d'histoire de l'Ecole française de Rome 31 (1911), p. 309—319; Baus, *op. cit.* (note 53), p. 98—99.

<sup>58</sup> Walter, *Dextrarum junctio*, p. 276.

<sup>59</sup> Gregory of Nazianus, *Letter 231*, PG 37, 373; L. Anné, *Les rites des fiançailles et la donation pour cause de mariage sous le bas-empire*, Louvain 1941, p. 156, who points out that it is not clear that this »coronation« forms part of the marriage ritual.

<sup>60</sup> John Chrysostom, *Homily 9 on I Timothy 2*, PG 62, 546. <sup>61</sup> *I Corinthians* 9, 24—25; Walter, *Milutin und Simona*, p. 189—190.

<sup>62</sup> A. Pavlov, *Сборник пеизажных памятников византийского церковного права*, СПб Петербург 1898, p. 30.

<sup>63</sup> *De Matrimonio*, PG 155, 505—508. But see also Theodore Studite (750—820), *Leters I* 50, PG 99, 1092—1093.

<sup>64</sup> K. G. Bruns and E. Sachau, *Syrisch-Römisches Rechtsbuch aus dem fünften Jahrhundert*, Leipzig 1880, p. 23, 26—27, 52—53, 59, 94, 128; H. J. Wolff, *Written and Unwritten Marriages in Hellenistic and Postclassical Law*, Havertford (Pennsylvania) 1939, p. 83—84; W. Seib, *Zur Bedeutung des Syrisch-Römischen Rechtsbuch*, 1964, 65 Nicosas I, *Responsa ad Bulgarorum Consulta*, PL 119, 979—980; Metz, *op. cit.* (note 51), p. 384.

<sup>65</sup> A. Dmitrievsky, *Omatiane autuρuηecktau ρukonocii II*, Еγ-χολόγια, Kiev 1901, p. 4 (Sinaït 958, f. 78v), etc.; cf. J. Ebersolt, *Etudes sur la vie publique et privée de la cour byzantine*, Mélanges d'histoire et d'archéologie byzantines, Paris 1917—1951, p. 31. See also (inferior editions), J. Goar, *Eukolόγιον*, Paris 1647, p. 385—390; P. Tremplas, *Mixpoy Eukolόγiou I*, 1950, p. 23—25, p. 55—59.

<sup>66</sup> Basic studies: J. Zhishman, *Das Ehrecht der orientalischen Kirche*, Vienna 1864, especially p. 156—160, p. 692—695; N. Politis, Πατριάρχαι σύμβολα, Δασοφέρας συμψεκτά β' (Δημοσιευματα λαογραφικού άρχειου 2). Athens 1921, especially p. 228—236 (summary in German in Jahrbuch für Liturgiewissenschaft 5 (1925), p. 208—209); M. Jugie, *Theologia Dogmatica Christianorum Orientalium III*, Paris 1930, especially p. 441—473; Ph. Koukoules, Βυζαντινῶν βίος και πολιτείας IV, Athens 1951, p. 70—147.

<sup>67</sup> Theophylact Simocatta, *Historia I* 10, edited De Boor, p. 57 (= Bonn, p. 51); Anne, *op. cit.* (note 59), p. 57.

<sup>68</sup> Rescript of Alexius Comnene I (1095) to the effect that the marriage of slaves must also be blessed by a priest, F. Dölger, *Regesten der Kaiserurkunden des oströmischen Reiches II*, Munich/Berlin 1925, № 1177, p. 43; text, Rhalli-Potli, *Syntagma II*, p. 500 (—K. Zachariä von Lingenthal, *Jus Graeco-Romanum III*, Leipzig 1857, p. 404), edited A. Vogt, Paris 1939, p. 6—10, 16—23 (—Reiske, Bonn I, p. 196—202, 207—216). For the churches, R. Janin, *Les églises et les monastères (La géographie ecclésiastique de l'empire byzantin)*, Paris 1969 (second edition), p. 473 (St Stephen), p. 232 (Pharos).

<sup>69</sup> Vogt, *ed. cit.* II, p. 6 (—Reiske, Bonn I, p. 196—197).

<sup>70</sup> *De ceremoniis* 91 (82). Vogt, *ed. cit.* II, p. 181 (—Reiske, Bonn I, p. 380; P. Maas, *Meinische Akklamationen der Byzantiner*, Byzantinische Zeitschrift 21 (1912), p. 40).

<sup>71</sup> J. Strzygowski, *Das Epithalamion des Paläologen Andronikos II*, Byzantinische Zeitschrift 10 (1901), p. 546—567; S. Papademetrios, Ο ἐπιθαλαμιος, Αὐδονίου II τοῦ Ιανουάριον, Byzantinische Zeitschrift 11 (1902), p. 452—460; H. Belting, *Das illuminierte Buch in der spätbyzantinischen Gesellschaft*, Heidelberg 1970, p. 26; Spatarakis, *op. cit.* (note 42). John Cantacuzenus, *Historia I* 41, Bonn I, p. 196—204.

<sup>72</sup> Theophanes, *Chronographia*, De Boor, p. 299 (—Bonn, p. 461).

<sup>73</sup> Ebersolt, *op. cit.* (note 66), p. 29.

<sup>74</sup> Kalavrezou-Maxine, *art. cit.* (note 20), p. 394—397.

PAPAL POLITICAL IMAGERY IN THE MEDIEVAL LATERAN PALACE

## 1. PRELIMINARY

In one of his Homilies Gregory of Nazianzen remarks that some emperors were not content merely to have their statues set up and adored in public places. They also liked to have pictures executed of their deeds: noble cities offering them gifts, magistrates adoring them in full regalia, barbarians prostrate at their feet and various scenes of slaughter. These pictures appealed to them not only as true accounts of their deeds but also for their artistic value. Political imagery — scenes like those taken from the official biography of the emperor — played a considerable role in the decorative schemes of the imperial palaces at Constantinople. This is abundantly clear in spite of the fact that the buildings decorated with such imagery have all disappeared. One has only to turn to the Byzantine chroniclers to find numerous though generally summary accounts of these pictures. In order to recall their character I cite here one or two examples<sup>1</sup>.

... in the vestibule of the church where were executed mosaic representations of Justinian's victories, scenes from the African and Italian wars and Belisarius presenting to Justinian and Theodora the kings which he had vanquished and the treasure which he had captured. The two sovereigns were also represented standing among the senators, all dressed in festal robes<sup>2</sup>. The emperor Maurice (582-602) had a series of frescoes executed in the Carina portico in the Blachernae region of the city. They set out the adventures of his life from his childhood till his accession to the throne<sup>3</sup>. In the Kainourion the emperor Basil I (867-886) had himself portrayed seated on a throne and surrounded by the generals who had shared the fatigues of his military campaigns. The generals presented him with the

1. *tauτην ταῦς εἰκόναν τίλιον μὲν ἀλλὰ τὸν βασικὸν προστάσιοντερόθαντον.* Οἱ πεντατέλεον τοῦ λαούστου διαπορεύονται, οἱ δὲ νυχτὸς τέττα μεγάλη στρεψονται· οἱ δὲ τοῦ ἐν τέλει προστάσιοντας, καὶ τοῖς ταῦς ἀριστερῶν προστάσιοντας, οἱ δὲ θηραπεύονται εἰκόνας· οἱ δὲ προσδόκων προτείνονται, καὶ τοῦ τοῦ μονήρου προσδόκων προτείνονται εἰκόνας· ημέραν, γάρ, οὐ διαβλέπει τὸν προτείνοντα μόνον· εἰσοδόν μέντοι, αὐτὰς καὶ τὰ τοτεῖν τιθέμενα (Gregory of Nazianzen, *Oration IV*, *Contra Julianum*, l. lxxv, PG 65, 605). Charles Diehl gives numerous examples of descriptions of such pictures in his *Manuel d'art byzantin*, Paris, 1925 (2nd edition), pp. 225 and 404; cf. also O.M. DALTON, *Byzantine Art and Archaeology*, Oxford, 1911, and New York, 1961 (photographic reprint), p. 261. (This article, on account of its length, is being published in two parts, the second of which will appear in the following number of the *Cahiers Archéologiques*. In this number will be found: I. Preliminary; II. Description of the Pictures; III. Analysis of the iconography; 1. The Tridinium of Leo III Mission and Investiture. There will follow in the next number: III. Analysis of the iconography; 2. The Audience Hall of Callixtus II and the Lateran Portico mosaic; Triumph and Concord; 3. The Coronation of Lotharius II; 4. Stator; V. Conclusion. I take the opportunity of expressing my gratitude to the staff of the photographic department of the Vatican Library for the photographs of copies of the pictures preserved in manuscripts of the Vatican.)

2. *προτείνονται, De Aeternis*, l. 10, edited J. HAURY, Leipzig, 1913, p. 341; R. JANIN, *Constantinople byzantine*, Paris, 1964, p. 110.

3. *THEOPHANES, Chronographia*, edited C. DE BOOR, Leipzig, 1883, p. 261, 1-15-16.

cities which they had conquered. In the same series of pictures were included the emperor's Herculean feats of arms, his principal deeds to bring happiness to his subjects, his battles and the victories which were granted to him by God<sup>4</sup>. In the palace which he had constructed in the region of the Blachernae the emperor Manuel Comnenus had represented all the exploits which he had performed against the barbarians and all that he had done for the good of the Romans<sup>5</sup>.

It is not difficult, whether by reference to antique models or to the bas-reliefs on the base of the Column of Theodosius or to the miniatures particularly in chronicles, to reconstruct the iconography of the scenes<sup>6</sup>. A very slight adaptation of antique imperial imagery made it suitable for the needs of Christian emperors, when they were to be represented as triumphing over the enemies of Christendom. At the entrance to the imperial Palace Constantine's victory over the enemy of the Church was, Eusebius tells us, sublimely portrayed; the enemy of the human race was represented under the form of a dragon; the emperor was surrounded by his sons; he trampled the dragon, transfixed it with a lance and threw it into the deep gulf of the sea; over the head of the emperor was represented the 'trophy of salvation'<sup>7</sup>. Similarly Constantine and Helena were represented as statues on top of the *Milion* holding up and presenting the Cross<sup>8</sup>.

The distinction between political or imperial and religious or ecclesiastical imagery is never hard and fast in Byzantine art<sup>9</sup>. The case of Constantine is also a special one. It is consequently not surprising to find scenes from his biography, as a saint of the Church, represented in churches. In the vault of the narthex of the church of Saint Polyeukios the princess Juliana Anicia had a series of scenes represented from the life of Constantine, among them his conversion and baptism<sup>10</sup>. In the room at the south west corner of Saint Sophia Constantine is included among the witnesses of Christ<sup>11</sup>. The *Milion* composition figures as a mosaic in the narthex of the church of Saint Luke in Phocid, and frequently in the churches of Serbia, where sovereigns of the Nemanja family may be associated with Constantine and Helena as protectors and promoters of Orthodoxy<sup>12</sup>.

In sum we may say that there is abundant evidence that in Imperial buildings at Constantinople triumphal scenes — of victory and of the submission of captives — and official groups of the Emperor and his court continued to be portrayed. These could be merely political or they could include a symbolical allusion to a religious triumph. In the case of Constantine, however, these scenes may receive additions concerning his title to sanctity and Constantine's life cycle may then become a suitable subject for representation in churches.

It would be natural to suppose that in the papal palace in Rome there would be similar decorative schemes. That such pictures did indeed exist in the West as early as the

4. THEOPHANES CONTINUATUS, *Life of Basil* (= CONSTANTINE VII, manuscript de Vercell), in *Cahiers Archéologiques*, XVIII, 1968, p. 106, note 29.  
R. JANN, *Life de la fin de l'Antiquité et du Moyen Age*, Paris 1968, p. 115-116.

5. Nicetas CHONIATES, *Life of Manuel Comnenus*, VII, 3, PG 139, 516B.

6. The fuller study is that of A. GRABAR, *L'empereur dans l'art byzantin*, Paris, 1936.

7. EUSEBIUS, *Life of Constantine*, III, 3, edited I.A. HÄRTEL, Leipzig, 1902, p. 78; PG 20, 1057; J. MAURICE, *Nomismatique constantinienne*, II, Paris, 1911, p. 505; A. GRABAR, *op. cit.* (note 6), p. 43;

R. JANIN, *op. cit.* (note 2), p. 110; P. COURCELLE, "Le serpent à face humaine dans la numismatique impériale", in *Mélanges A. Pigeot*, I, Paris 1966, p. 344.

8. Ch. WALTER, "Les dessins carolingiens dans un portraiture beside Constantine and Helena".

*IXth century is evident from a passage in the treatise of bishop Agobardus of Lyons, *De imaginibus sanctorum*, concerning particularly the representation of synods<sup>13</sup>. However, if such pictures no longer exist in the papal palaces in Rome, descriptions of them are known, and, thanks to the zeal of XVIth and XVIIth century archaeologists and antiquarians, some of these pictures have been copied and the copies are available to us. Most of these drawings and sketches are wellknown. They have been reproduced by Lauer and Wilpert in their monumental studies<sup>14</sup>. To these must be added the important series of drawings executed for Parvinus and published by Dr. Gerhard Ladner<sup>15</sup>.*

These are the principal examples of official papal imagery at the Lateran known to us by copies: the mosaics in the Triclinium of Leo III (795-816); the paintings in the Chapel of Saint Nicolas, begun by Callixtus II (1119-1124) and finished by the antipope Anacletus II (1130-1138); the paintings in a nearby Audience Hall of Calixtus III; the coronation of Lotharius II in a nearby room, commissioned by Innocent II (1130-1144); the mosaics of scenes from ecclesiastical history in the Portico of Saint John Lateran, commissioned by Alexander III (1159-1181) or Clement III (1187-1191). With these may be associated the restored mosaics of the apse of Saint Peter's, due to Innocent III (1198-1216) and the frescoes of Silvester and Constantine at the Quattro Coronati, a stone's throw the Lateran, dating from the pontificate of Innocent IV (1243-1254).

I made the acquaintance of these pictures while preparing a study of the iconography of councils in the Byzantine tradition. Professor André Grabar called my attention to the fact that, while the drawings of Parvinus in particular have been admirably published by Dr. Ladner, no full analysis of the iconographical sources of these pictures has been published. It is at his suggestion that I am attempting such an analysis in the *Cahiers Archéologiques*.

Unfortunately it is impossible to avoid a primary consideration of these pictures *en archéologie*. The reason is that since they no longer exist all depends upon how one interprets the copies and the descriptions in the written sources. It seems, particularly in the case of the mosaics of the Triclinium of Leo III, that art historians have engaged in discussion over the significance of a scene which may never have existed. I begin, therefore, with a brief description of these political scenes and of the elements composing them.

## II. DESCRIPTION OF THE PICTURES

### 1. The Triclinium of Leo III.

The *Liber Pontificalis* records that pope Leo III built two triclinia, both of which were decorated with mosaics<sup>16</sup>. In one there were various scenes of the apostles preaching

13. AGOBARDUS, *Liber de imaginibus sanctorum*, PL 104, 225: "Se causâ historiæ ad recordandum non ad colandam; ut verbo grata gesta synodus (...) iuxta memoriæ sui bestiam, sicut in multis locis videmus," Cf. A. GRABAR, *op. cit.* (note 1), p. 50.

14. Ph. LAUER, *Le palais de Lateran*, Paris, 1911; J. WILPERT, *Die römischen Monaden und Mauerzäune*, Freiburg im Breisgau, 1917.

15. *Vaticanus Barberinus latitans* 2738; cf. G. LADNER, "I mosaici e gli affreschi ecclesiastico-politici dell'antico Palazzo Lateranense", in *Rivista di Archeologia Cristiana*, XII, 1935, p. 265-92.  
16. Fecit autem et in patriarcho Lateranense triclinium maiorem super ornatus triclinios nomine suo inter magnitudinis decoratum, ponens in eo fundamenta firmissima et in circuitu laminis marmoris onavii, aequo maribus in exemplis stravit et diversis columnis (...).



FIG. 1. — Saint Peter invests pope Leo III with the pallium and the emperor Charlemagne with the vexillum. Triclinium of Leo III. (Drawing excised for Panvinius.)

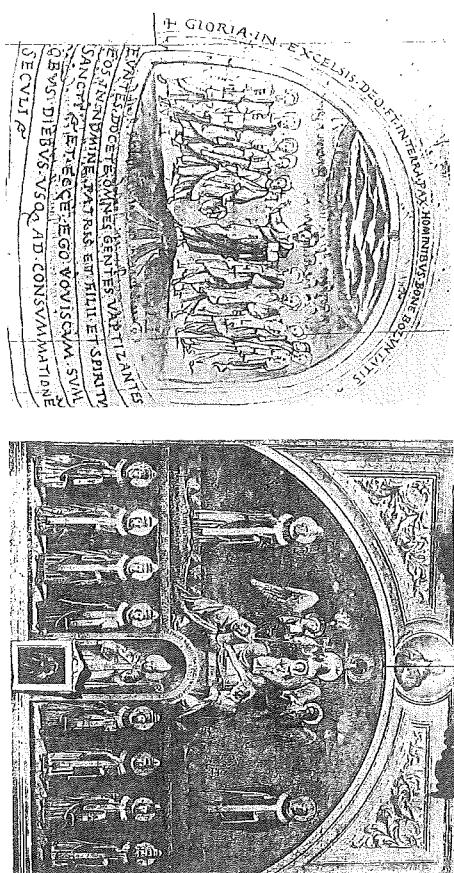


FIG. 2. — Mission of the Apostles. Triclinium of Leo III. (Grimaldi.)

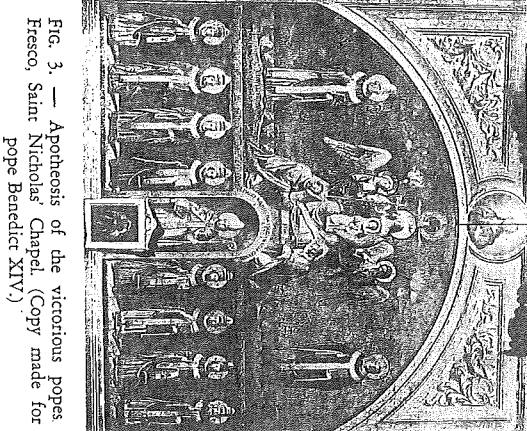


FIG. 3. — Apotheosis of the victorious popes. Fresco, Saint Nicholas' Chapel. (Copy made for Pope Benedict XIV.)

to the Gentiles; in the other the subject of the scenes is not indicated. The first triclinium abutted directly upon the Constantinian basilica; it is the second, therefore, which is described by Panvinius.<sup>17</sup> He tells us that Saint Peter was represented there enthroned. On his left was Charlemagne with the vexillum and on his right Leo III with the pallium (Fig. 1).

Since Panvinius was particularly concerned with portraits of popes, he only had this scene copied. However the apse mosaic still existed in part at the beginning of the seventeenth century, and was copied and described by Grimaldi<sup>18</sup> (Fig. 2). The Saviour stood on a hill, from which flowed the four rivers of Paradise. He blessed with his right hand and held an open book in his left hand. He was accompanied by the apostles. The nearest on his right was represented as elderly and holding a long cross. No other held an instrument of martyrdom. Below the mosaic were remains of an inscription: *Euntes, docete omnes...* Grimaldi drew up this description in 1617 and 1621. He adds a description of the mosaic of Peter with Charlemagne and Leo III, which was to the left (spectator's right) of the apse. As to the scene on the right Grimaldi says: *"In triangulo dextro apside erat imago sancti Pauli apostoli, sed corruat et manus totus est rotundus."*

In 1625 the mosaic was restored on the initiative of Cardinal Francis Barberini. He not only did this, but replaced the lost mosaic, relying on an earlier copy which restoration of the mosaics of Leo III's triclinium by Benedict XIV (1740-1758).<sup>19</sup> A group similar to that of Peter, Leo III and Charlemagne was placed in a corresponding position on the other side of the apse; one may still see it today. This time, however, it is Christ who bestows from his throne the vexillum on Constantine and the keys upon Silvester.

Such, at least, is what Alemann says. His identification of the kneeling pope was accepted by Lauer<sup>20</sup>, and subsequently by Schramm and by Ladner.<sup>21</sup> However an alternative identification of this person was proposed by Heldmann: the figure should be Peter and not Silvester.<sup>22</sup> Professor Déér has strongly supported this identification, although he is less

Et camera cum absida de musivo seu alias II absidas diversas stolas pingens super magnorum constructione patiter in circuito decoravit (*Liber Pontificalis*, edited I. DUCHESNE, Paris, 1955, II, p. 3-4). Itemque fuit in Patriachio Lateranense triclinium mire magnitudinis decoratum cum absida de musivo, seu et alias absidas decem dextra levaque, diversis stolis depictis apostolos genibus praedicantes, coheteres basilice Constantiniense (ibid., p. 11). Cf. ibid., nos 14, 52 and 53.

17. Aut magna cum cibis rimbis quam a Leone III conditore Leoninum autam veteres vocabant (...). Super est adhuc venustum e musivo emblemum circum absidam tribuna, in Postico aula, in quo sanctus Petrus sedens pictus est, qui Carolus Magno Imperatoris lava vexillum, Leonis vero Papae III dextra pallium ante se genuflexis portigit, cum hinc inscriptionibus... Text cited by Eugène Mürrz in his excellent article "Notes sur les mosaïques chrétiennes de l'Italie," VIII, Le triclinium du Latran — Charlemagne et Léon III" (*Revue archéologique*, 1884, p. 1-15). The article represents an extremely valuable research. Its main conclusions are perhaps more accessible in H. LÉCLERCQ's article "Charlemagne" in *Dictionnaire des dictionnaires et de leurs chrématomes*, III, 663.

18. In cura cura ipsius apostolis in medio est Salvator mundi, sans supra monum, unde quatuor. Paradisi flumina emanant, benedicentes dextra, pollici cum annulari

conjuncto, et sinistra tenens librum apertum, induitus colore castaneo, cum apostolis (...). Salvatoris dextræ proximior, in senili aetate, longam gestar crucem et caput Salvatoris exaltat. Signum Leonis papae tertiae (...).

In zoophoro apsidis Buntus doceat omnes (...). In triangulo dextro apside erat imago sancti Petri in throno sedentes (...). In triangulo dextro apside erat imago sancti apostoli, sed corruat et manus totus est rotundus (Quoted by MÜNZ in *art. cit.*, note 17, p. 7; cf. *art. cit.* by LÉCLERCQ, note 16, 664).

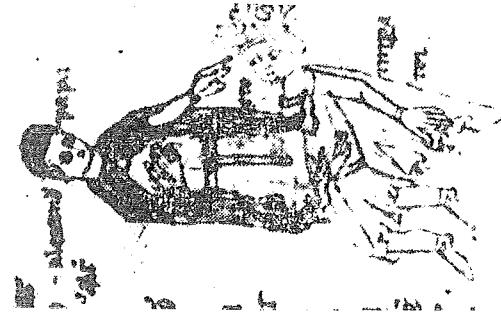
19. ALemann, *Der Lateranmosaik-parteinist*, Rome, 1625, p. 367, quoted by MÜNZ, *art. cit.*, note 17, p. 11.

20. MUNZ, *art. cit.*, note 17, p. 12.

21. PH. LAUER, *op. cit.*, note 14, p. 105-119.

22. P. E. SCHRAMM, "Das Herrscherbild in der Kunst des frühen Mittelalters," in *Vorträge der Bibliothek Würzburg*, 1, 1924, p. 162; *Idem*, *Die Zeigt-mässischen Bildnisse Karls des Großen*, *Bautage zur Kulturgeschichte*, 29, Leipzig-Berlin, 1928, p. 4-16; *Idem*, *Die deutschen Kaiser und Könige in Bildern ihrer Zeit*, Leipzig Berlin, 1928, p. 27-8 and fig. 4 a-n; G. LADNER, *art. cit.* (note 15), p. 267.

23. K. HELDMANN, *Der Kaiserstein Karls des Großen*, Weimar, 1928, p. 184. LADNER later round came to this view, cf. *op. cit.*, note 31, p. 118-21.



2. The Chapel of Saint Nicolas.

According to the *Liber Pontificalis* pope Callixtus II (1119-1124) built and decorated a chapel dedicated to Saint Nicholas at the Lateran.<sup>24</sup> The first testimony to these pictures is given by Peter Sabino.<sup>25</sup> Parvinus describes the chapel and its decoration.<sup>26</sup> According to him there were represented in the apse of the chapel all the popes from Alexander II (1061-1073) up to the time of Callixtus II; that is to say, besides Alexander II, Gregory VII (1073-1085), Victor III (1086-7), Urban II (1088-99), Paschal II (1099-1118), and Gelasius II (1118-9). To these were added two former popes, Leo the Great (440-61) and Gregory the Great (590-604) and Callixtus II himself at the feet of the Saviour.

This description may be completed from many sources (Fig. 3), for the paintings were copied, and the chapel only destroyed under Clement XII (1730-40).<sup>27</sup> At the centre of the

<sup>24</sup> J. DEEF, "Die Vorrechte des Kaisers in Rom" in *Schweizer Beiträge zur allgemeinen Geschichts*, 15, 1957, p. 37. According to DEEF, "Für die Deutung der Darstellung auf der Stirnwand links von der Apsiskrone ist der Umstand entscheidend, dass die zur Rechten Christi kniende Figur nur Petrus und nicht Papst Silvester I sein kann, da vom Himmel mit den Schlüsseln investiert wird, war bei einem Nachfolger des Abottentitels unverständlich, weil jeder ikonographische Tradition widersprach wäre".

<sup>25</sup> Peter CLASSEN, "Karl der Große, das Papsttum und Byzanz", in *Karl der Große, I. Periodizität und Geschichts*, edited H. BRÜMANN, Düsseldorf, 1965, p. 575, note 181.

<sup>26</sup> MÜNTZ, *art. cit.* (note 17), p. 11-12.

<sup>27</sup> MÜNTZ, *art. cit.* (note 17), p. 9.

<sup>28</sup> *Liber Pontificalis* (cf. note 16), II, p. 323, and Duchene's note 22, p. 325-6; *ibid.*, p. 378. It is not clear from either text whether the chapel as well as the audience hall were both painted under Callixtus II. However the decorative programmes are certainly complementary.

<sup>29</sup> Sabino copied the inscriptions which Duchene corrects: *Sustulit hoc primo templum Calixtus ab invir celebosis late Gallorum nobilitate; Praesul Anacens papatus culmine freatus/ hoc opus ornavit variisque modis decoravit (sp. cit., note 16, p. 325).*

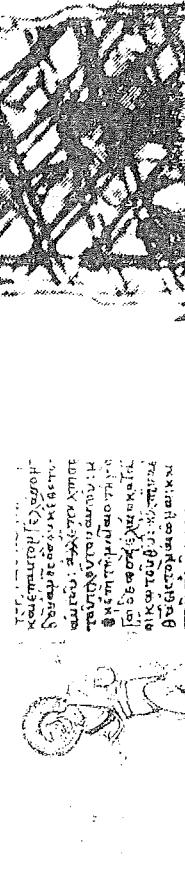
<sup>30</sup> Callixtus II (cf. note 29) aedificavit Catariorum sive aedicula in honorem S. Nicolai episcopi, pulchram et oblongam cum tecto ligneo imbutato, quam etiam rotundam pinxit, in cuius abside eos omnes Romanos pontifices qui ante se fuerint ab Alexandro II deinceps Pangi iussit. Hi fuere Alexander II, Gregorius VII, Victor III, Urbanus II, Paschal II, Gelasius II, Item his adiunxit ex antiquis sanctos Leonem et Gregorium. Magos et seipsum in absida testudine ad pedes Salvatoris (...). Haec aedificatio peculiari Romani pontificis usui ipse condidit (PANTINUS, *De praetextis Urbis Romae sensibus hec illis quas septem ecclesias vulgo vocant*, Rome, 1570, p. 153).

<sup>31</sup> See particularly, besides LAUR, *op. cit.*, note 14, p. 162 *et seq.* and fig. 62-66, and WILPERT, *op. cit.*, note 14, p. 162 *et seq.* and fig. 43, 46, G. LAMBERT, *Le rite des papes nell'Antichità e nel Medioevo*, Vatican, 1941, p. 202-213.

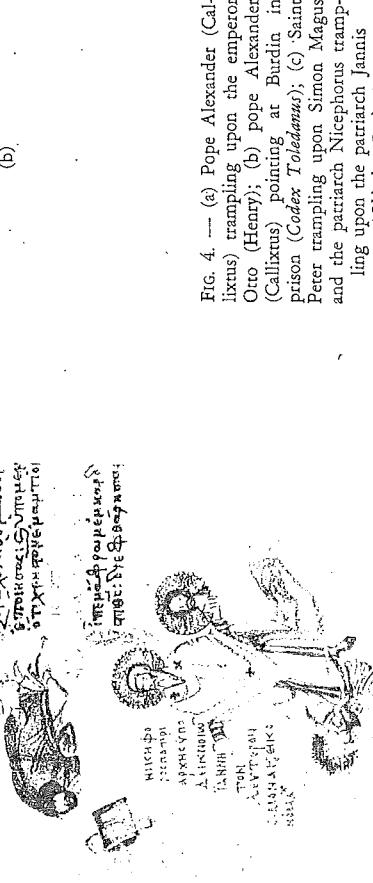
certain that the object presented to Constantine was a vexillum.<sup>28</sup> It now seems that opinion generally inclines in favour of this person being Peter.<sup>29</sup>

However none of these authors attempt to refute Müntz's theory that this subject was in fact never represented in Leo III's trichinium, although Schramm does indeed refer the reader to the article by Müntz which I have already quoted.<sup>30</sup>

To my mind Müntz's scepticism is entirely justified. He points out that the distinguished Prefect of the Vatican Library, Giuseppe Simonio Ascermani, had already expressed doubts as to the authenticity of the earlier copy of the lost mosaic, upon which Cardinal Barberini's reconstruction was based. The copy was, according to Alemanni, deposited in the Vatican Library; yet it has never been found again. Besides this negative argument from the absence of any evidence for the authenticity of the subject of the mosaic, there is also a positive argument. Grimaldi, a reliable antiquarian, reported a tradition that a subject embodying Saint Paul had in fact been represented there.<sup>31</sup> Such a subject would enter more aptly into the iconographical structure of the decorative scheme than that chosen by Cardinal Barberini, whether the kneeling Pope be Peter or Silvester. I shall return to this point later.



(b)



(c)

FIG. 4. — (a) Pope Alexander (Calixtus) trampling upon the emperor Otto (Henry); (b) pope Alexander (Callixtus) pointing at Burdin in prison (Codex Tolosanus); (c) Saint Peter trampling upon Simon Magus and the patriarch Nicephorus trampling upon the patriarch Jannus (Childerov Piater).

apse was the Virgin with the Child Jesus, with saints Silvester and Anastasius to their left and right. Besides Callixtus II there was at the feet of the Virgin the antipope Anacletus II (1130-38), who was responsible for completing the decoration.<sup>32</sup>

This representation of the apotheosis, as it were, of the popes who triumphed over the emperors and their antipopes in the Investiture struggle offers an evident analogy with the representation of the Iconodule patriarchs in the room at the south west corner of Saint Sophia.

### 3. The Audience Hall of Callixtus II

The same texts of the *Liber Pontificalis* attribute to Callixtus II two other rooms near to the Chapel of Saint Nicholas.<sup>33</sup> The paintings in one of these rooms, which was used as an audience hall, attracted far more attention than those in the chapel. There are at least four allusions to them by Medieval writers.<sup>34</sup> Arnulf of Lisieux saw them during the pontificate of Innocent II (1135-43), as did John of Salisbury in 1153. Suger of Saint-Denis also knew them. The significance of these paintings was not lost upon them: the Catholic Fathers of the Church were using schismatics as a footstool. Suger of Saint-Denis even says specifically that Callixtus II was trampling upon Burdin.

A further allusion to these pictures or at least to one of them occurs in an account

A minute allusion to these pictures, or at least to one of them, occurs in an account of an incident at the Fourth Lateran Council in the *Codex Toledanus*.<sup>35</sup> Rodrigo, archbishop of Toledo, had launched a complaint against the archbishops of Braga, Compostella, Tarra- gona and Narbonne for refusing to acknowledge the primacy of his see. He evoked the

32. This transpires from Duchesne's restoration of the inscription, *vid. sup.*, note 29.  
33. *Vid. sup.* note 28.

34. "Porro schismata haec in ecclesia Romana frequentissima accidere etiam Taterensis palatio nichil rara.

quenam accusare eum lacrimatus pacati pueri  
demonstrari, ubi catholicorum patrum pedibus pro  
scabello schismati praesumprotes adscripti sunt, ubi  
superborum et sublimium colla sapientia propria virtute

conterit et conculet. Quod sane ea ratione factum est, ut sanctis patribus cedar ad gloriam victoriae tectis ascriptio, in qua praesumptores illi vel compressionis

poenam sustinet per presumpcionem veniam depescantur. Unde et sancti Apostolatus vestri cathedra sine scabellu esse non debuit, sed nobiliori scabello debuit illustrari. Neque enim interca vobis est aut longiuscua victoria. Amatis et retinetis fratres. 21 Peter. Eccliesia Amatis.

Anacletus II. This letter is addressed to pope Alexander III, who at the time was engaged in a struggle with the antipope Victor IV. He expresses his hope that Victor IV may soon serve Alexander III as a *scabellum*.

as the anthropes depicted at the Lateran had served his predecessors. "Quis Teutonicos constituit judices nationum? Quis haec brutis et imperiosus hominibus autoritatem constituit ut pro arbitrio principem statuans

super capita filiorum hominum? (...) (Teutonicus) id enim  
agebat, ut in quinque denuntiatis inimicis mate-  
rialem gladium imperator, in eundem Romanus pontifex  
spiritualem gladium exeret. Non invent adhuc qui

and fig. 3).  
33. The *Codex Toledanus* (*Mauritius sive 1535*) was compiled in 1525 and 1523 (Raymond FOREY, *Larren I., II., III. et Larren IV.*, Paris, 1965, p. 264; *Idem*, "Iconographie du XIIe siècle occitanique" in *Mémoires René Crozet*, II, Poitiers, 1966, p. 1125-6).

Personality of a former archbishop of Braga, Maurice Burdin, who under the patronage of the emperor Henry V (1098-1125) became the antipope Gregory VIII (1118-1121). After recalling his history and ultimate downfall, he insisted that the case was the same for the present archbishop of Braga. The session was taking place in Callixtus II's audience hall, so that it was possible for Rodigo then to point dramatically at the picture on the wall of Burdin's downfall and finish with the words: "Si quis astutum bac de re dubiat, rollat oculos ad praetemiti bius loci partem, et videbit kypriandi historiam picturam."<sup>26</sup>

The passage in the *Codex Toledanus* gains in interest from the fact that in the margin there are two drawings, one of Alexander (an error for Callixtus) trampling upon the emperor Otto (an error for Henry V), and the other of Burdin in prison, with his mitre and crozier reversed, while Alexander (again an error for Callixtus) points at him. Could these drawings be very free copies of the original paintings? It seems unlikely, for there is no allusion in the texts to a representation of a Pope actually trampling an emperor; the conquered enemy is rather the antipope. Further, although Siger refers in his account to the imprisonment of Burdin, he does not specifically say that there existed a picture of Burdin in prison<sup>27</sup> (Fig. 4). Examination of this manuscript in Madrid in August 1970 revealed to me the distressingly poor quality of the photograph. Burdinus is chained by the neck and the wrists. Besides the upturned mitre and crozier to the left there is also an upturned bonnet to the right; it is coloured red and similar to that which the pope above is wearing.

Inere 1

executed in the sixteenth century. According to Panvinius's account all the more important

schisms which had arisen in the cause of establishing the liberty of the Church were recorded. Alexander II with Cadolus of Parma, Gregory VII, Victor II, and Urban II with Guibert

of Ravenna, and Pascal with three other antipopes. Finally there was the peace which Callixtus made with the emperor Henry V. To this Callixtus added the privilege conceded

by the emperor, inscribed on a large plaque. Parvinius adds that the pictures in his time were hardly visible. Under the picture of Alexander II, in which he was portrayed with his

cardinals trampling upon Cadolus, there was still legible an inscription.<sup>38</sup> These drawings having already been published in a scholarly and exhaustive manner

by Dr. Gerhardt Ladner,<sup>39</sup> it will be sufficient here to recapitulate briefly his conclusions.

the same iconography. The pope in question sits on a throne wearing the pallium and a tiara: he holds a book in his left hand and blesses with his right hand. The antipope over

<sup>36</sup> The account given by MANI (22, 1073), does however, like MUNOZ & VILLALBA, see above, note 35, that the three tribus adulterinis were established by RAVENNAE ET PASCHALIS CUM TRIBUS ADULTERINIS ALIIS PONIT.

not, according to Mie Foreville (cf. note 35), give an exact transcription of *Mart. Vetus*, 15-3, f. 22 *et seqq.* Mansi's version contains: "Emitte autem oculos, quibus postrem pacem qua ipse cum Henrico V Imperatore eiusque imperatoris privilegiis in tabula magna declarare adiunxit: que adiuc verutate excolentia pene

omnia ut dixerat, videbunt, et dominii Tolecani subtiliter et pertinaciam collaudantes, coopererunt tum admiratores non solum in domine Renerius fortis inter-  
cene possunt. Sub Alexandri inque II tabula, in qua ipse precius est cum cardinalis pedibus Cadolus concutunt sunt huicmodi: versus (...). Privilegi porro

“Intra omnia vero in genitivo esse  
dicit, que magno juan erat rubore perfusa.”  
37. Cf. also 34.  
38. “Tuxa quam idem Pontifex duo coniuncta concilia-  
bantur. Henricus V a Calixto II concessi quod adhuc (quangum  
excessus multo picum tunc exemplum sequens est:  
Ego Henricus, invictissimus, auctoritate, *ad annos, bachelis, etc.*  
*de Calixto,* etc. *in patre, embrori,*

Via sive cubicula, sub quibus vesturam, in ea est gar-  
robam, dividit; constructa Cubicularum, vero unum  
iconibus pictis exornavit quod audientiae et rebus  
publicis didicit. In apsidam enim schismat  
concepit. Causulis operatis, cibos in una  
presence concedit. Hec omnia in priori cubiculo  
annata sunt. Alterum vero cubiculum huc proximum  
et variis bicoloris ornatum particularibus Pontificum

*lūcūs trānscurus. illi quoq[ue] p[ro]p[ter]a d[omi]nū s[ecundu]m quæ eccl[esi]æ illustris asp[er]cione claus exhortarunt, annasr[ic]i: ut Al[ex]andr[us] II cum Card[inali]o Parmentone, Gregor[ius] VII: Victori[us] III: Urbani II: ghiberto*

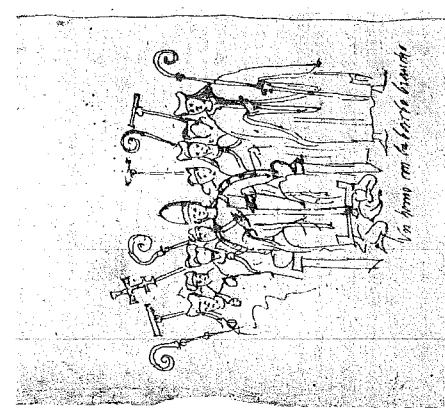


FIG. 5. — Pope Alexander II with the antipope Cadolus as *scabellum*. Audience Hall of Callixtus II. (Drawing executed for Panvinius.)

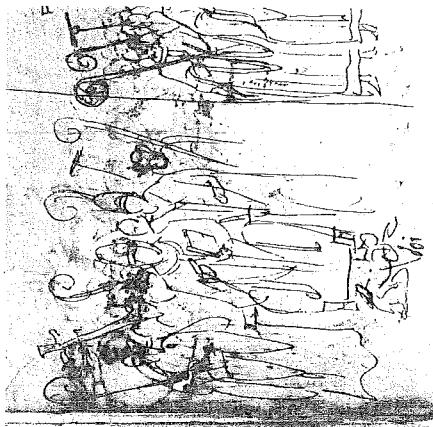


FIG. 6. — Popes Gregory VII, Victor III and Urban II with an antipope as *scabellum*. Audience Hall of Callixtus II. (Drawing executed for Panvinius.)

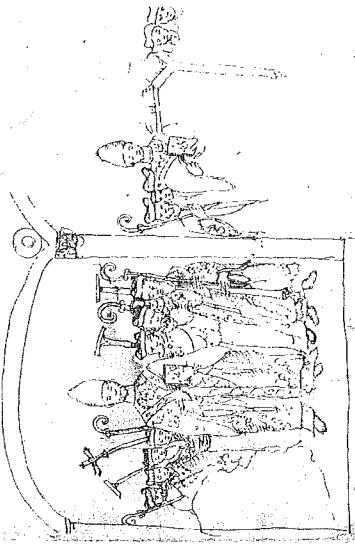


FIG. 9. — Pope Alexander II. Audience Hall of Callixtus II. (Drawing executed for Panvinius by another hand.)

whom he has triumphed crouches at his feet. To left and right of the pope stand bishops in mitres and holding croziers. In the background stand other figures holding processional crosses.

This description applies exactly to the picture of Alexander II triumphing over Cadolus (f. 104) and to Paschal II (f. 105 v). The copy of the triumph of Gregory VII shows another figure, apparently standing, in a papal tiara to Gregory's left. If, in fact, as Panvinius says, this fresco represented together Gregory VII, Victor III and Urban II, then presumably the figure to Gregory's right would also have been enthroned and wearing a tiara. It is likely that the frescoes were already in too poor a condition in Panvinius's time for the details to be clear.

The picture of Callixtus II's triumph (f. 104) is rather different, because, while Burdin is under his feet, Callixtus sits to the left of the members of his retinue. On his right stands the emperor Henry V, wearing a short tunic, a mantle and a crown and holding in his left hand an indeterminate object. Between the pope and the emperor is an unrolled document, which the pope holds with his left hand and the emperor with his right. In the drawing half a dozen lines of text are indicated on the document by dots. This document is the Concordat of Worms; possibly it is the *tubula magna*, to which Panvinius refers, upon which the *imperioris privilegium* was inscribed, but it seems more likely that only the beginning of the text would have been inscribed on the document in the picture, and that the *tubula magna* would have been elsewhere in the Audience Hall.<sup>40</sup>

A drawing by another hand in Panvinius's sketch book (f. 103 v) (Fig. 9) shows that the frescoes were framed by an arcade with a rosette over each column. Ladner argues that this is authentic by pointing to the analogy of the frescoes of Saint Alexis in the church of San Clemente, executed between 1080 and 1090, and framed with similar arcades and rosettes.<sup>41</sup>

The frescoes were accompanied by inscriptions: "Regnat Alexander Cadolus cedit et

<sup>40</sup> *Vid. sup.*, note 38.

<sup>41</sup> *Arr. cit.* (note 15), p. 277.

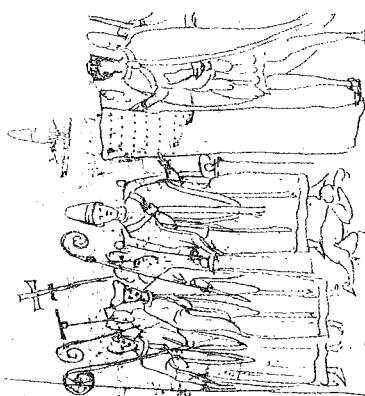


FIG. 8. — Pope Callixtus II with Burdin as *scabellum* holding jointly with the emperor Henry V the text of the Concordat of Worms. Audience Hall of Callixtus II. (Drawing executed for Panvinius.)

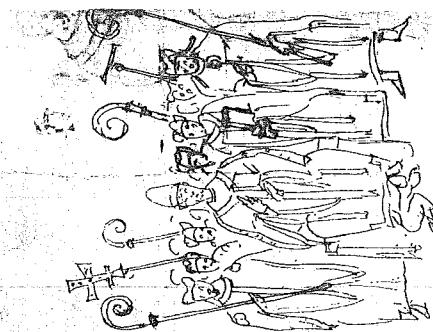


FIG. 7. — Pope Paschal II with an antipope as *scabellum*. Audience Hall of Callixtus II. (Drawing executed for Panvinius.)

*superatur / . . . nibilatur.” “Gregorius Victor Urbanus cathedrali tenuerunt / Giberius cum suis iandem deituci fuerunt.” “Ecclie decus Paschalis papa secundus / Albernum damat Mabinulum Theodosium.” “Ecce Calixtus honor patrie decus imperiale / Buridum nequam dannat pacemque reformat.”*

We find, therefore, in these pictures two major iconographical themes: one is triumph over a vanquished enemy, the other the proclamation of a concordat.

### 3. The Coronation of Lotharius III.

According to the *Liber Pontificalis* Innocent II (1130-1143) built two new rooms at the Lateran.<sup>42</sup> In one of these rooms Innocent II had painted a series of scenes concerning the coronation of Lotharius III (Fig. 10) in 1133. They were accompanied by an inscription: “*Rex sicut (or venit) ante fore, invans prius Urbis honores, / Post (or sic) homo fit papae sumit quo dante coronam.*”<sup>43</sup> The pictures with their inscription were to be the occasion of misunderstanding between Frederick I and Hadrian IV (1154-59). On the first occasion in 1155 Frederick, who had come to Rome to be crowned, made a *proskynesis* before Hadrian IV and kissed his foot. However he refused to render to the pope the service of *marescallus* — the *officium stratoris et strophae*, and consequently the pope was unwilling to give him the ceremonial kiss, for he had refused to make an act of veneration to Saints Peter and Paul.<sup>44</sup>

An account of this incident is given by Boso in the *Liber Pontificalis*, and it is corroborated by Gerhoh von Reichersberg, who explains the reluctance of Frederick to perform this office. He was aware of the fact that, according to the text of the *Constitutum Constantini*, the emperor Constantine had performed this office for pope Silvester. But it had never been maintained, whether in words or pictures, that Constantine was Silvester's *marescallus*. He was therefore somewhat astonished that such a picture should now exist of an emperor of the Romans. The allusion would seem to be to a picture of Lotharius as Innocent's *marescallus* and to the inscription: “*Homo fit papae*”. However, when it was explained to Frederick that the office in question was an antique custom which in no way implied that the emperor was the pope's man, he performed it joyfully.<sup>45</sup>

42. *Liber Pontificalis* (cf. note 16), p. 384 and Dr. chesne's note 5. “In Palatio Lateranensi duas camerae a fundamento constructae sunt.” The versions of this inscription vary slightly; cf. LADNER, *art. cit.* (note 15), p. 28.

43. Eduard EICHMANN, “Das Officium Stratoris et Strophe”, in *Historische Zeitschrift*, 1932, 1930, p. 32. This article criticizes certain points taken up by R. HÖRTMANN in his study *Der Kaiser als Marescallus der Päpste. Eine Untersuchung zur Geschichte der Beziehungen zwischen Kaiser und Papst in Mitteleuropa*, Heidelberg, 1928. Holzmann replied to these critics in an article “Zum Strator und Marescallens” in the same review, 1932, p. 301-50. The chief point of issue seems to be whether the service of *marescallus* differs from that of *strator*. Holzmann maintains that it did, that it implied a feudal commendation, and that it is to be connected with the *officium jurepate*, to the *officium stratoris*, the Zügel- und Bügel-

44. “Beatus papa Silvester ab augusto Constantino regali magnificente honoribus prestatus non se hono- rarent in honore patrum ei pro sui humilitate semel stratoris officium exhibuerit, non tamen eum sumum est marescallum vel duxi vel scripti vel picti. Sed et multi post ipsam catholicorum leguntur Imperatores monachum tenentes fusse, quorum quis fuit mares- callus dicitur domini pape non inventimus. Immo certum tenamus, quod Romani pontifices et imperatores invicem se honore prevenentes pacifice vivent (...). Valde mirantur unde nova pictura haec emerserit, qua Romani pontifices pinguntur marescalli.” Gerhoh von Reichersberg, *De quarta sigilli noctis*, 12, in *Archiv für die Geschichtskunde des Mittelalters*, XI, p. XII (1880, p. 95). The text of the letter is given by Otto of Freising (*Gesta Friderici Imperatoris*, III, 9, 4423; Long before Panvinius' drawings were rediscovered, Dutchesse rejected Rasponi as fanciful).

45. Cf. for example the *Adventus* of Constantius II, p. 420. Cf. also the *Adventus* of Constantius II, p. 421. Cf. R. FORELIVILLE, *op. cit.*, note 35, p. 113-47. “Innocentius II Papa in pectoris parte Lateranensis partitarchi duo alia cubitula a fundamentis fecit,

46. “Eodem tempore inter dominum apostolicum Adrianum aque imperatore Fredericum graves contro- versiae ori cepuerunt quae huiusmodi causam habuisse fecerunt. Papa Innocentius, cuius nomis secundum Rome quondam in muro pingitur, fecerat se ipsum quasi in sede pontificale residentem, imperatorem vero Lotha- riū complicitus manus diram se incinctum, coronauit, et superius quae variis picturis ornavit, in quorum uno coronationem Lotharii Imperatoris ab se in basilica Lateranensis consecrato pinxit. In cuius tabula prima pars pictus est Rex qui ante portas basilicae Lateranensis iurauit Romanis se conservandum constitutas suas, post a Papa suscipiunt, amplecturque, deinde coronatur. Cui picturam hi versus suppositi fluunt...” (Panvinius, *op. cit.*, note 30, p. 177).

47. Rasponi, *De Basilia et Patriarche Lateranensi*, quibus inter alia hoc continebatur: “Beneficium corone- rum pontificum, quod utrumque pontificis etiam pontificis, hoc verbum feedo interpres cesarii retro aediculam S. Nicolai, ea parte que frontem basilicae Lateranensis respicit (haec adhuc semirupta superius) quae variis picturis ornavit, in quorum uno coronationem Lotharii Imperatoris ab se in basilica Lateranensis consecrato pinxit. In cuius tabula prima pars pictus est Rex qui ante portas basilicae Lateranensis iurauit Romanis se conservandum constitutas suas, post a Papa suscipiunt, amplecturque, deinde coronatur. Cui picturam hi versus suppositi fluunt...” (Panvinius, *op. cit.*, note 30, p. 177).

48. Rasponi, *De Basilia et Patriarche Lateranensi*, Rome, 1656, p. 203; cf. LADNER, *art. cit.*, note 15, fig. 11. Rasponi commissioned drawings of all these frescoes during the pontificate of Alexander VII (1655-1667); they are to be found in *Vaticana barbarini Lat- eranensis Historia*, 1880, p. 95. The text of the letter is given by Otto of Freising (*Gesta Friderici Imperatoris*, III, 9, 4423; Long before Panvinius' drawings were rediscovered, Dutchesse rejected Rasponi as fanciful).

49. Cf. for example the *Adventus* of Constantius II, p. 420. Cf. also the *Adventus* of Constantius II, p. 421. Cf. R. FORELIVILLE, *op. cit.*, note 35, p. 113-47. “Innocentius II Papa in pectoris parte Lateranensis partitarchi duo alia cubitula a fundamentis fecit,

Two years later in 1157 there was a further clash between the emperor and the pope's legates at Besançon.<sup>48</sup> Issue was taken over the use of the word *beneficia* in a brief of Hadrian IV, which was given by the emperor a feudal interpretation as if, by conferring benefices rather than benefits, the pope was again implying that the emperor was his man. The issue of offensive pictures was again raised but this time in a slightly different form, for, according to the description, what moved Frederick to anger was that Lotharius should be represented inclined before the seated pope in order to receive the imperial crown.

This description does not agree exactly with that of Panvinius, nor with his drawing.<sup>49</sup>

For in each case there is a series of scenes. Lotharius is first shown at the entrance to the Lateran basilica, swearing an oath that he will maintain the privileges of the Romans; then he is shown inclined before the seated pope who embraces him; finally he is crowned at the altar by the pope who is standing. Further there is no allusion to or representation of the emperor as the pope's *marescallus*.

I do not propose to discuss these frescoes here, but in a later study in relation to Byzantine coronation scenes. However I should like to raise again the question already put by Ladner whether a picture of Lotharius as *marescallus* ever in fact existed. Ladner refers to an engraving of Rasponi's where Lotharius is shown on horseback approaching the gates of the city of Rome, from which the pope emerges, his arms outstretched.<sup>50</sup> He compares Innocent's gesture in this engraving with that which he makes in Panvinius's drawing. Rasponi's reconstructions tend to be fanciful. Ladner therefore supposes that Rasponi's picture derives from the accolade scene as Panvinius has transmitted it. However Rasponi's picture (Fig. 11) has in common with a scene of a *marescallus* performing his office only the presence of a figure on horseback. For the rest it corresponds so exactly to the antique iconography of an *Adventus* that it must have had such a scene for its principal model.<sup>51</sup>

These are added reasons for agreeing with Ladner that there is no direct archaeological evidence that a *marescallus* scene ever existed. However the indirect evidence furnished by Gerhoh von Reichersberg seems too explicit to be set aside. Such a picture must, to my mind, have existed, and presumably it was destroyed, together with the offensive inscription, possibly between 1155 and 1157, since no allusion was made to either at Besançon. After the second disagreement the pope presumably considered it sufficient to explain that he had

50. Cf. R. FORELIVILLE, *op. cit.*, note 35, p. 113-47. “Innocentius II Papa in pectoris parte Lateranensis partitarchi duo alia cubitula a fundamentis fecit,

51. A. GRABAR (*Ciceroniana Iconography*, Princeton, 1968, fig. 124).



FIG. 10. — Coronation of Lotharius III. Room built for Pope Innocent II at the Lateran.  
(Drawing executed for Parinius.)

not used the word *beneficia* in a feudal sense; he certainly did not destroy the remaining pictures.

The presence of such a scene in a coronation series can be easily explained, for, according to the *Liber Censuum*, it was part of the coronation ceremony that the emperor should hold the stirrup of the pope's horse in the coronation procession from Saint Peter's to the Lateran.<sup>50</sup> In fact when Lotharius met Innocent at Lüttich in 1131 he performed this service for him.<sup>51</sup>

The significance of this ceremony could be ambiguous. The *strator* led the horse by the reins, while the *officium strepae* involved rather holding the stirrup, once this came into general use, and helping the rider to mount and dismount. But in Saxon law the *officium strepae* was, it would seem, the obligation of a vassal towards his lord.<sup>52</sup> It was, presumably, this aspect of the office which made Frederick I refuse to act as Hadrian IV's *mariscalcus* at Sutri in 1155, and to resent the implication that he was the pope's man at Besançon in 1157. There are, moreover, indications that the coronation rite was given in Rome at certain times a sense of feudal commendation. For instance under Gregory VII a formula was proposed: "Per manus meas miles sancti Petri et illius (sc. Patris) officiar."<sup>53</sup>

But since no copy of this picture of Lotharius as the pope's *mariscalcus* is known to us, one may only conjecture how it appeared, starting from the analogous thirteenth century picture of Constantine as Silvester's *mariscalcus* in the Chapel of Saint Silvester by the church of the Quattro Coronati.

#### 4. The Donation of Constantine in the Portico of the medieval Lateran Basilica.

In the Middle Ages the front of the Lateran basilica had attached to it an open portico, the architrave of which was divided horizontally into three narrow sections.<sup>54</sup> It may be conceived by analogy with the portico of the Duomo at Civita Castellana, the work of Jacopo di Lorenzo and Cosma and finished in 1210. The architrave was decorated with mosaics, already largely lost by Ciampini's time. They are known from Ciampini's engravings and from a series of water colour copies in the *Vaticani Barberini lat.* 4423<sup>55</sup>. Among the scenes represented were not only ones figuring the persecutions of the saints, such as Saint John the Evangelist being tortured and boiled in oil and the martyrdom of Saint John the Baptist, but also more properly historical ones, such as the Roman fleet under Vespasian on its way to Palestine and Jerusalem besieged by Titus. To these were added scenes from the biography of Silvester: Silvester triumphing over a dragon, baptizing Constantine and

50. "Cum dominus papa venerit ad equum, Imperator tenet strapham et coronetur et intret in processione (...). Imperator descendit, et tenuit strapham domino papa descendente, deposita prius corona." *Ordo coronacionis*; in *Le Liber Censuum de l'Ufizie romane*, edited Paul HABERE, I, Paris, 1905, p. 6. According to Fabre (*op. cit.*, p. 1, n. 1) this is the most ancient *ordo coronacionis* in its complete form; he supposes it to have been composed either for the coronation of Henry III (1046) or for that of Henry VI (1191); he inclines to the earlier date.

51. EICHMANN, *art. cit.*, note 44, p. 22.  
52. *Ibid.*, p. 18; he cites the *Sachsenriegel*, *Lehen-rebbl.*, art. 66, para. 5.  
53. *Ibid.*, p. 23.

54. A.L. FROTHINGHAM, "Notes on Christian Mosaics, II, The Portico of the Lateran Basilica," in *American Journal of Archaeology*, II, 1886, p. 41-23. He attributes the mosaics to the pontificate of Alexander III (1159-81); LAUBR., *op. cit.*, note 14, p. 184, suggests rather the pontificate of Clement III (1187-90). WILBERT, *op. cit.*, note 14, I, p. 210, prefers Frothingham's attribution.

55. CIAMPINI records the inscription which accompanied the mosaic of the Donation of Constantine: *Ex scriptura Sylvestro dat iura sua. His engraving of this subject is reproduced by LAUBR., *op. cit.*, note 14, fig. 71, along with the water colour in *Vat. Barb. Lat.* 4423, f. 14 (fig. 72). Cf. CIAMPINI, *De Sacris Adiuticiis a Constantino Magno constructis*, Rome, 1693.*

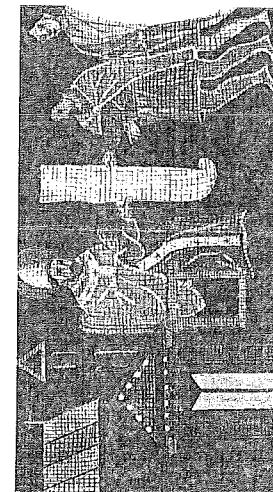


FIG. 12. — Donation of Constantine. Portico of the Lateran Basilica. (Painting in *Barberinus latinus* 4423, f. 14.)

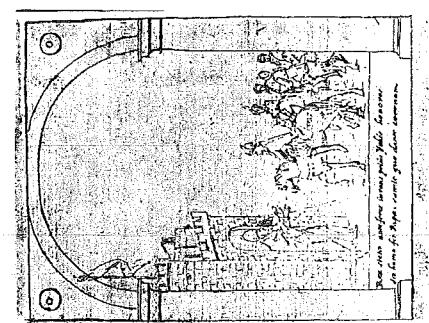


FIG. 11. — Coronation of Lotharius III. Room built for Pope Innocent II. (Drawing executed for Rasponi.)

receiving the Donation (Fig. 12). The presence of historical scenes is worth stressing, for it brings them into line with the decoration of the Byzantine palaces. The theme of the trials and struggles of the Church before its triumph under Constantine is analogous to that of the feasts performed by emperors before attaining the throne.

On the left of the copy in the Barberini manuscript may be seen a schematic representation of the Lateran basilica. Only the doorway and the campanile correspond to the Lateran basilica in Panvinius's drawing of the coronation of Lotharius III. In Panvinius's drawing, however, we probably see the open portico of the basilica, before which pope Innocent II enthroned is embracing Lotharius. In the copy of the Lateran mosaic pope Silvester, with halo, tiara and pallium, is enthroned to the right of the basilica. With his right hand he blesses; with his left he receives the document, which is presented to him by Constantine. The emperor wears a short tunic and mantle; he has no halo. Beside him stands a courtier. The concave extremities of the mosaic suggest that between each scene there was a round panel of marble. These mosaics must, then, have been unusually small, and have taken the place in normal Cosmatesque decoration, such as that on the architrave of the cloister at San Paolo fuori le Mura, of other marble panels.

### III. ANALYSIS OF THE ICONOGRAPHY

#### 1. The Triclinium of Leo III: Mission and Investiture.

As an instrument of propaganda the two triclinia which Leo III built at the Lateran are as significant as the basilica built by Constantine four centuries earlier. By making it his responsibility to provide suitable meeting places for the Christian assembly Constantine proclaimed that Christianity was the official religion of the Empire.<sup>56</sup> By building two triclinia on a princely scale Leo III proclaimed the independence of the Papacy with regard both to the Byzantine emperors and to the Frankish kings. It was necessary that the decorative programmes of these basilicas should underline the notion implicit in their architecture.

The independence of the Papacy could be conceived in both temporal and spiritual terms. The popes based their claims to primacy in spiritual matters upon the apostolic origin of the see of Rome. This notion is, of course, explicit in the writings of Gelasius. For example in a letter to the bishops of Dardana Gelasius claims the right of the Roman see to execute the decisions of general councils 'because of its principate, which Blessed Peter the Apostle obtained through the word of the Lord and which it has always retained and continues to retain'.<sup>57</sup>

It was, however, quite alien to the spirit of the times for a claim to temporal authority for the pope to be based upon the fact that he was the successor of Peter. In fact it was axiomatic that temporal authority passed with the *imperium*, so that, if a pope was

<sup>56</sup> R. KRAUTHEIMER, "The Constantinian Basilica" in *Dumbarton Oaks Papers*, 21, 1968, especially p. 127-30.

<sup>57</sup> GELASIUS, *Letter* 13 to the bishops of Dardana, PL 59, 63; cf. F. DWORAK, *The Ideas of Apostolicity in Byzantium*, Harvard, 1958, p. 117 and *Idem*, *Early Christian and Byzantine Political Philosophy*, Washington, 1966, p. 804 et seqq.

from the time that the emperor was Christian there fell upon him the office of protector of the Church against its enemies. This office was the subject of the mosaic of Constantine triumphing over the enemies of Christendom at the entrance to the Imperial Palace at Constantinople.

The memory of Constantine was evoked from time to time in the West during the eighth century. Pope Hadrian I (772-95) addressed a letter to Charlemagne in May 778, inviting him to be a new Constantine and to conquer back for the Papacy the territory which the most pious emperor had bestowed upon it.<sup>58</sup> Charlemagne did not repudiate the comparison, for in 794 he was using a copy of Constantine's portrait on his seal and coinage.<sup>59</sup> But, more important than this, there existed legends and traditions which gave an explicit account of Constantine's delegations to the Papacy of privileges and authority. It seems that there is in Hadrian I's letter to Charlemagne an explicit reference to the document known as the *Constitutum Constantini*. It is to this and to the *Legend of Saint Silvester* that one must turn particularly for the ideas current in the eighth century of the spiritual and temporal status of the see of Rome. Moreover, directly or indirectly, the positions stated in the *Constitutum* are an issue in many subsequent controversies on the authority of the Papacy. For this reason also it is worth recapitulating the contents of these documents.

The *Legend of Saint Silvester* contains two parts, a prologue and a second book recounting the deeds of Silvester and Constantine.<sup>60</sup> The second book and the latter part of the prologue are taken up with controversies with the Jews. The prologue begins with an account of the childhood of Silvester, of his succession to pope Melchiades and his flight to a cave in Mount Soracte when the edict was published that all Christians must sacrifice to idols. Interest then passes to Constantine, his leprosy, the proposed cure by a bath in the blood of infants and the vision of Saints Peter and Paul. Constantine seeks out Silvester, recognizes their portraits on an ikon and asks for baptism. After performing penance, avowing belief in Christ the Son of God and promising to suppress the cult of idols, Constantine receives Baptism. While he is in the font there is a sensational theophany; Constantine leaves the font cured of his leprosy.

During the succeeding days Constantine confers various privileges upon the Christian Church, among which was the jurisdiction of the Roman Church. Finally, at the end of seven days, he takes off the white robe of a neophyte, and makes a solemn visit to the tomb of Saint Peter. He provides for churches to be built there and in the Lateran Palace.

<sup>58</sup> *Codex Carolinus*, 60, *Epistola Mercuvigii et Karolini Aevi I—Episcoporum Ternae III, Monasteria Germaniae Historiae*, Berlin, 1917 (second photographic edition), p. 587: 'Et scut temporibus beati Silvestri Romani pontificis a sanctae recordationis Constantio Magno imperatore per eum laigatum sancta Dei catholica et apostolica Romana ecclesia elevata aquae exaltata est et postea in his Hispanie pertibus lagari dignatus ita et in his vestris felicissimis temporebus aquae nostris id est beati apostoli (...) ambius quam ampius permanens, ut omnes gentes quae haec audienter edere valent: "Domine salvum fac regem Roma e Progne," VI, 1913, p. 332-67 ('Il testo greco della Bios di S. Silvestro attribuito al Menestrante').

<sup>59</sup> P. GRUNWALD, 'Money and coinage under Charlemagne,' in *Karl der Große* (cf. note 25), p. 519 and plates I-IV.

<sup>60</sup> For the *Legendam Sancti Silvestri* there is only the text edited by MONBARTRON, *Sanctorum seu viae Sanctorum*, Milan, 1480, republished by the monks of Solemes, Paris, 1910 (second edition) II, p. 508-31. Cf., however, the critical observation of W. LARSON, 'Konstantinische Schenkung und Silvesterlegende, in *Studia Iustiniana*, 38, 1924 (= *Mittelalter Pr. Et. Brie.* II), p. 159 et seqq.

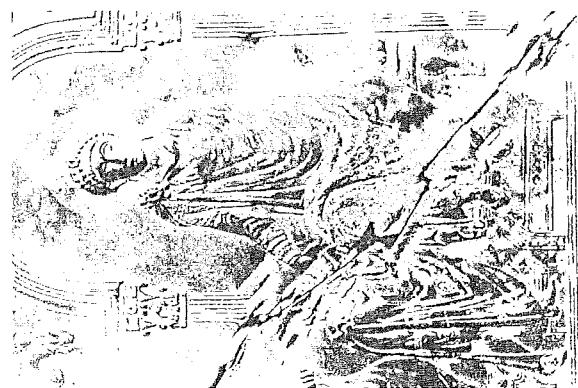
A Greek version, not earlier than the Xth century and omitting many details of the privileges conferred by Constantine upon Silvester, has been published in *Roma e Progne*, VI, 1913, p. 332-67 ('Il testo greco della Bios di S. Silvestro attribuito al Menestrante'); cf. also the article by P. SCHASOLSKY, 'La leggenda ecclesiastica apostolica principi Petri lagari dignatus est'; EGEN EWIG, 'Das Bild Constantins des Grossen in den ersten Jahrhunderten des abendländischen Mittelalters,' in *Historisches Jahrbuch* 75, 1955, p. 36;



FIG. 13. — "Traditio legis." Sarcophagus, Ravenna.



FIG. 14. — (a) Investiture of an imperial functionary. Plate of Theodosius II, Historical Museum, Madrid; (b) Investiture of Saint Paul. Sarcophagus, Ravenna.



The *Legend* only mentions the spiritual privileges which Constantine was reputed to have conferred upon the Church of Rome, and these are evidently related to the intervention of Saints Peter and Paul. The general theme of the *Legend* is, therefore, the recognition by Constantine of the spiritual status of the Roman see as derived from its holder's claim to be the successor of Peter. Further, although Silvester exercises an important role in the *Legend*, it is a secondary one.

At first sight the *Constitutum* has the appearance of merely presenting under the form of a decree a more developed version of the passages of the *Legend* concerning the privileges conferred by Constantine upon the Roman see.<sup>61</sup> This is, indeed, partly the case. There is the same emphasis on the role of Saints Peter and Paul, supported by quotation of the Petrine text (*Matthew* 16). The superiority of Rome to the four other patriarchal sees is explicitly stated. The clerical orders are assimilated to court orders, and the right of Silvester and his successors to legislate for the clergy is recognized. But the *Constitutum* differs from the *Legend* in the important respect that it also confers temporal power on the Pope. Thus not only does Constantine build a basilica at the Lateran but the imperial palace becomes the papal residence; the Pope's status is assimilated to that of the Emperor, with the right to wear besides the crown the *superbaenale* (pallium) and *omnia imperialis iumenta*. Constantine crowns Silvester himself (with the *frigium*, since the crown was too rich for the fisherman's successor), and performs the service of *strator*. Finally — and this is the most important difference between the *Legend* and the *Constitutum* — Constantine confers the sovereignty of the West upon Silvester and his successors.

The simple procession to the tomb of Saint Peter now becomes a more solemn ceremony. The text of the decree is laid by the emperor on the tomb. The document ends with a solemn warning that anyone who goes against it is going against Saints Peter and Paul. It is clear, then, that a double theory of the status of the Papacy is expounded in these documents. Its spiritual status is derived from the apostles, and acknowledged and confirmed by the authority of the State. Its temporal status, was conferred by Constantine, out of respect for the apostles, as a free but irrevocable gift. Are these theories of the status of the Papacy manifested in the decorative programmes of Leo III's triclinia?

Of one we know only that it was decorated with various scenes of the apostles preaching to the Gentiles.<sup>62</sup> The other also had as its central motif a scene concerning the apostles. Below the mosaic was the text from *Matthew* 28.19, conferring on them the mission of making disciples, baptism and instruction (Fig. 2). Leo III's conception of the

and R. CESSI, "Il Costituto di Costantino," in *Encyclopedie Italiana*, XI, 606-7. For monographs, besides C.B. COLEMAN, *Constantine, the Great and Christianity*, New York, 1914 and G. LARER, *Die konstantinische Schenkung*, Berlin, 1926, the principal studies are by H. FUHRMANN, "Konstantinische Schenkung und Silvesterlegende in neuer Sicht," in *Deutscher Archiv für Erforschung der Mittelalters*, 15, 1929, p. 523-40 and by the late Werner OHNSORGE, "Das Constitutum. Constantini und seine Ersetzung," in *Konstantinopol und der Okzident*, Darmstadt, 1906, p. 93-162. Fuhrmann criticizes Ohnsorge's position in "Konstantinische Schenkung und abendländisches Kaiserum," in *Deutscher Archiv für Erforschung des Mittelalters*, 22, 1966, p. 103-20. R.H. JENKINS summarizes Ohnsorge's position in *Dumbarton Oaks Papers*, 21, 1968, p. 237, note 10 ("A Cross of Michael Cerularius").  
62. *Vid. insp.*, p. 157.

Church's mission is therefore directly derived from that of the apostles; as successor Peter he is responsible for the continuation of the apostolic ministry. The elements of the scene below this text, as described by Grimaldi, are extremely familiar in early Christian art: Christ on a hillock from which the waters of Paradise flow, a book in his hand, while with the other he blesses; the apostles either side of him, one of whom holds a long cross.<sup>63</sup>

The iconography is, in fact archaic (Fig. 13). It is directly based upon models established two or three centuries earlier. Christian artists had then been in the habit of taking elements from imperial scenes of investiture or of an *allotio* or *liberatio*, and, by combining them with others taken from groups where a philosopher instructs his disciples, they could define the relationship between Christ and his apostles.<sup>64</sup> It is true that the exact significance of these scenes is not always easy to fix, owing to ambiguities in both the iconographical language and in the themes which it was to express. A scroll, for example, may represent a doctrine which is being passed on or the title to an appointment. The teacher normally sits to give his instruction, while the emperor stands to make an *allotio*. Christ's position, therefore, and a document in his hand do not determine unambiguously the sense of a scene.<sup>65</sup> Similarly the 'law' which Christ confers on Peter in the so-called *Traditio legi* scene may be a doctrine, a moral law or an office. It seems, however, that the surest way of identifying these scenes, when this is possible, is to start from the central figure, Christ.

In this particular case Christ, who is standing, must be making an *allotio*, the text of which is indeed inscribed below the scene. It is, in fact, the most general statement possible of Christ's authority and of the delegation which he makes of it to his apostles.

The following century the theme of the Mission of the Apostles, like other themes concerning their life and ministry, was increasingly used in Byzantine art.<sup>66</sup> This increase is no doubt to be related to the development of Byzantine missionary activity among the Slavs. The scene in *Parisinus graecus* 510, f. 426v, has the same text inscribed, taken from Matthew 18.19. Christ stands upon a hillock from which the four rivers flow, the apostles

<sup>63</sup> *Vid. sib.*, p. 159; J. DÉFR., *art. cit.*, note 24, p. 36, writes of an investiture scene in the couch of the apse, where Christ invests Peter with the keys, the insignia of binding and loosing, and of the primacy of the Roman Church. But this description of the scene does not correspond to Grimaldi's texts and drawing.

<sup>64</sup> Besides A. GRABAR's general studies (*L'empereur et l'art sacré*, Genève, 1924, p. 6 and p. 107), cf. also note 6, p. 200-2 and *Christian Iconography*, cf. note 49, p. 42-3; cf. J. KOHLWITZ, "Christus als Lehrer und die Gesetzeübergabe an Petrus in der konstantinischen Kunst Roms," in *Römische Quellenkunde*, 1916, p. 196; W.N. SCHRAMM, "Dominus legem dat," in *Römische Zeitschrift*, 1929, p. 1-39 and "Eine römische Apokrisikomposition," *ibid.*, p. 137-202; Y. M.-J. CONAK, "Le thème du don de loi: dans *Nouvelle Revue Théologique*, 84,

<sup>65</sup> The first two scenes resemble an *allotio*, the third

<sup>66</sup> éternelle. Tel est le contenu du mot *legi* (...) dans l'idéologie de l'époque constantinienne" (p. 93).

<sup>67</sup> Two cases are known where a standing Christ hands to Saint Peter a scroll upon which are inscribed the words "Dominus legem dat" (Santa Costanza, Rome and the Baptistry of S. Giovanni, Naples); cf. M. VAN BRECHT and E. GLOZONI, *Mosaïques chrétiennes du IVe au Xe siècle*, Genève, 1924, p. 6 and p. 107). But cf. also a sarcophagus at Arles where Christ, seated with his apostles, holds a book inscribed: "Dominus legem dat."

<sup>68</sup> The variations in the scenes without an inscription are so many that it is probably fallacious to suppose that artists sought in pictorial imagery an exact equivalent to the verbal concepts of their time. It is only at the level of the general idea of the transmission of his discourses by Christ or of an office that words and images exactly correspond. The sarcophagus at Arles is illustrated by J. WILPERT, *Die sarcophage christianae*, Rome, 1929, plate XXXIV.3).

<sup>69</sup> Cf. the Barberini Faience, *Vaticanus barb.*, gr. 372, f. 20

<sup>70</sup> Cf. the Theodore Faience, *L'art de la fin de l'Antiquité et du Moyen Age*, Paris, 1968, 160-3. A useful

<sup>71</sup> Cf. the Onesti sarcophagus, Santa Maria in Porto

<sup>72</sup> Cf. H. LECLERCQ, "Pallium," in *Dictionnaire d'archéologie chrétienne et de liturgie*, XIII, 931-9.

<sup>73</sup> J. DÉFR., *art. cit.*, note 24, p. 223. The patriarchal vestments may be found in *The Church of Hagia Sophia at Trebizond*, edited D. TALBOT RICE, Edinburgh, 1958, p. 172-7.

are grouped each side of him, while the one nearest to Christ on his left makes an inclination towards him with arms outstretched.<sup>67</sup> A similar scene of Western provenance is to be found on a silver coffer dating from the pontificate of Pascal I (817-24)<sup>68</sup>. This time, however, the assimilation of Christ to the Emperor is even clearer; for the apostle making an inclination has his hands covered.

The particular interest of the miniature in the *Parisinus graecus* 510 is that it is accompanied by twelve scenes of the apostles baptizing; that is to say they are shown exorcising the office conferred on them in the principal scene. A similar example occurs in the *Chludov Psalter*; the apostles are represented teaching all nations, while the scene of them receiving their mission is here presumed.<sup>69</sup> The same relationship between the reception of a mission and its exercise is present in the Triclinium of Leo III. Here, however, it is a question rather of transmitting authority. In the subsidiary scene which has survived Peter, enthroned and invested with the pallium, transmits the authority which he has received.

We have, in fact, an investiture scene. But here a slight breakaway from tradition is evident. In the investiture scene of imperial art, for example on the plaque of Theodosius at Madrid, the enthroned emperor places the *codicilli* in the covered hands of the official receiving his appointment, who makes a slight inclination towards the emperor.<sup>70</sup> We find the same iconography for Saint Paul on a sarcophagus at Ravenna.<sup>71</sup> This is perhaps the most 'imperial' example of the investiture of an apostle. And since Saint Paul in fact received his commission individually it does not cause any particular difficulty that he should be represented singly. In the scene on the wall of the triclinium, however, the pope and the emperor are kneeling. This non-classical position may be taken from contemporary forms of ceremonial (Fig. 14).

The significance of the bestowal of the pallium upon Leo by Peter is quite clear.<sup>72</sup> The mosaic serves as a public proclamation that the authority given by Christ to the apostles is now exercised by him. The significance of the bestowal of the vexillum upon Charlemagne is, however, less clear, and only a tentative explanation can be advanced. It must no doubt be related to the policy of the eighth century popes to look for protection to the Frankish kings rather than to the Byzantine emperors. It has been suggested that the vexillum which Charlemagne receives in this mosaic is that of the city of Rome, which Leo III sent to Charlemagne. But Professor Schramm has produced a parallel example of the Patriarch of Jerusalem sending Charlemagne a vexillum; it would be equivalent to the contemporary practice of conferring the freedom of a city upon a distinguished person.<sup>73</sup> He also makes the point that it would be unlikely, as Professor Schramm has suggested, that Leo III would have set up an official picture of Charlemagne as emperor (*ein neues frankisches*

<sup>67</sup> H. ONONT, *Fac-simile des miniatures des plus anciens manuscrits grecs de la Bibliothèque nationale*, Paris, 1907 and 1929, plate XVI.

<sup>68</sup> Ph. LAURE, *Le trésor de la Sancta Sanctorum. Monuments et Mémoires Eugène Piot*, XV, Paris, 1906, p. 67-71 and plate IX.

<sup>69</sup> Cf. W.L.M. BURKE, "A bronze stupa in the Museo Nazionale, Rome," in *The Art Bulletin*, XII, 1930, fig. 3.

<sup>70</sup> Cf. the Barberini Faience, *Vaticanus barb.*, gr. 372, f. 20

<sup>71</sup> Cf. the Theodore Faience, *L'art de la fin de l'Antiquité et du Moyen Age*, Paris, 1968, 160-3. A useful

<sup>72</sup> Cf. H. LECLERCQ, "Pallium," in *Dictionnaire d'archéologie chrétienne et de liturgie*, XIII, 931-9.

<sup>73</sup> J. DÉFR., *art. cit.*, note 24, p. 223. The patriarchal vestments may be found in *The Church of Hagia Sophia at Trebizond*, edited D. TALBOT RICE, Edinburgh, 1958, p. 172-7.

<sup>74</sup> Pierre spécialement; il donne au monde, par et dans l'Église, la réalité et la règle du salut ou de la vie

Herrscherbild') in a triclinium intended to bear witness to Papal sovereignty.<sup>74</sup> Ladner, in fact, interprets the *imperium* conferred by Leo III on Charlemagne as involving additional rights and duties, not territories and populations, and particularly 'the protection of the Universal Church, and especially' the Roman Church'.<sup>75</sup>

It seems that here again Leo III's choice is highly traditional. Charlemagne, like Constantine, receives a lance with which to transfix the enemies of the Church. For there was, of course, in this iconography of imperial origin no implication that Constantine's *imperium* derived from his option for the cause of Christianity; it was rather that he received the additional office of Protector of the Church. This was conferred upon him directly by Christ, but in the trichinium mosaic Charlemagne receives his office from Peter. But there could be only one person who made Peter's options known, his successor as bishop of Rome. The implication is that the Church of Rome henceforth chooses its protector itself.

Curiously, then, there does not seem to be any direct allusion in these mosaics to the Papal claims, as set out in the *Constitutum Constantini*, to temporal authority in the West.<sup>76</sup> The most that can be said is that in both the *Constitutum* and the mosaic the pope's spiritual authority was made manifest. Moreover any allusion to Constantine is only implicit in the office represented by the vexillum. The case would be different if the investiture of Constantine had originally been represented the other side. But such a hypothesis seems fraught with difficulties. The theme and symmetry of the monument seem to require that the scene which is the counterpart of Peter investing Leo and Charlemagne should represent an apostle exercising the mission received in the central scene. If Christ is represented investing either Silvester and Constantine or Peter and Constantine the symmetry is destroyed. A scene, however, involving Saint Paul would not only be symmetrical but, given the status accorded to him at Rome, extremely apt. Saint Paul is not to my knowledge represented elsewhere investing another person with authority. But he is represented teaching and baptizing. Either of these subjects would fit the case, the more so as such scenes were certainly represented in Leo III's other triclinium.

<sup>74</sup> *Ibid.*, note 61). However, although some do not see an evident reference to the *Constitutum* in the letter addressed by Pope Hadrian I to Charlemagne in 778 (*vid. sap.*, p. 171), as apparently Fuhrmann (*cf. art. cit.*, 'Konstantinische Schenkung...'), note 61, p. 121), the notions are so similar that there can be no doubt that the *Constitutum* simply puts in legal form ideas already current in the VIIIth century. It therefore remains an unsolved puzzle why Leo III in a monument intended to set forth the independent status of the papacy restricted himself to a title based uniquely upon the apostolic succession.

<sup>75</sup> G.B. LADNER, 'Aspects of Medieval Thought on Church and State,' in *Review of Politics*, IX, 1947, p. 406.

<sup>76</sup> If Ohnsorge is right that the *Dispositio* — the part distinguishing the *Constitutum Constantini* from the *Legend of Saint Stephen* — was not composed till 804, and if the mosaics of the triclinium had already been executed by then, it is less surprising that their iconography contains no explicit reference to the ideas contained in the *Constitutum* (*cf. OHNSORGE*,

### PAPAL POLITICAL ICONOGRAPHY IN THE MEDIEVAL LATERAN PALACE

#### III. ANALYSIS OF THE ICONOGRAPHY

##### 2. The Audience Hall of Calixtus II and the Lateran portico mosaic: Triumph and Concordat.

###### a) Triumph.

Since the series of pictures in this audience hall proclaimed at once the triumph of the orthodox popes over the antipopes and the achievement of a concordat between the Papacy and the Holy Roman Empire, they had necessarily a solemn ceremonial setting. A similar presentation may be seen in the fresco of the Translation of the relics of Saint Clement in the narthex of the underground church of San Clemente<sup>77</sup> (Fig. 15 a). The pope is surrounded by clergy and in the background may be seen banners, crosses, croziers and palms. The fresco dates from about 1100 when work probably began on the upper church.

But this kind of scene derives ultimately from the official art of the Roman Empire. We may see, for example, two enthroned emperors on a bas-relief of the Arch of Galerius, surrounded with their courtiers (Fig. 15 b). They are, in fact, represented as universal sovereigns, and the allegorical persons under their feet surrounded with a cloak represent the universe. Although there is no question here of trampling a captive, the notion of domination is nevertheless implicit. The same iconography was used for the universal sovereignty of Christ on the sarcophagi of Junius Bassus in the Vatican Grottoes and on another in the former Lateran Museum.<sup>78</sup> It was not reserved to scenes of the sovereignty of Christ, but remained in the official repertoire of the Byzantine emperors. A good example may be

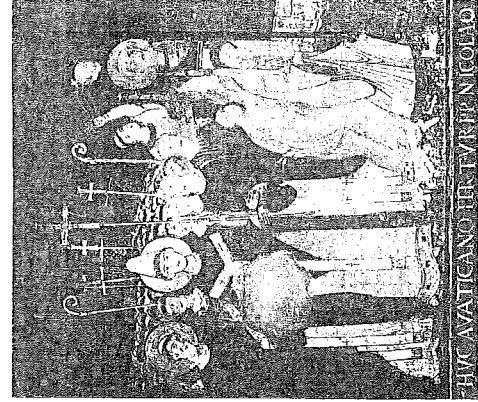


FIG. 15 a. — Translation of the body of Saint Clement (détail), Church of San Clemente, Rome.

77. The numbering of the notes and the illustrations is continuous throughout this article, of which the first part appeared in the previous number of the *Cahiers Archéologiques* (XX, 1970, p. 155-176). It contained the following: I. Preliminary; II. Description of the pictures III. Analysis of the iconography. I. The Triclinium of Leo III. Mission and Investiture. In this number will be found: III. Analysis of the iconography. 2. The Audience Hall of Calibius II and the Lateran portico mosaic des Hautes Eudes. The text has benefited from the valuable criticisms made then. Professor J.M.C. Toyabé was kind enough to read my manuscript and to give me useful bibliographical information particularly about British funeral steles. J. WILFERT, *Die römischen Macrizen und Alaricianos*, Freiburg im Breisgau, 1917, III, p. 256 and pl. 239, 1918; P. 43 and plates 108-111.

78. A. GRABAR, *Christian Iconography*, Princeton,

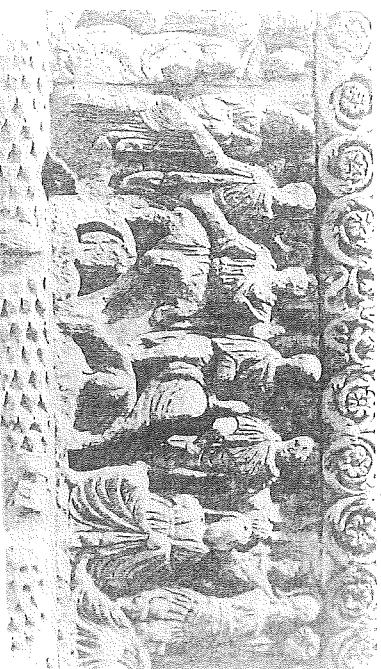


Fig. 15 b. — The emperor Theophilus surrounded by his court.  
Arch of Galerius, Thessaloniki.

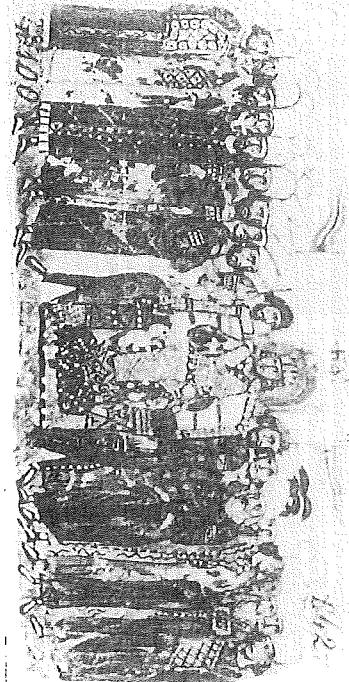


Fig. 15 c. — The emperor Theophilus surrounded by his court.  
*Skyllitzes maritensis*.

seen in the Madrid *Skyllitzes*, portraying the emperor Theophilus (829-42) (Fig. 15 c); he is enthroned in the centre of the composition with guards behind the throne; to his left and right stand courtiers and in the background may be seen two banners<sup>79</sup>.

The general setting for each representation of a triumphant pope was that which had been used in official iconography in Antiquity and which continued to be used at Byzantium whenever the sovereign dominion of the emperor

79. *Skyllitzes maritensis*, I, edited S. CRAC ESTOPRÁN, Barcelona-Madrid, 1963, number 100, p. 72 and 257.

80. Cf. CA XX, 1970, p. 162, n. 34.

was to be particularly emphasized. We must see if the specific elements of these pictures — the humiliation of an adversary and the signature of a concordat — are also to be found in antique and in Byzantine iconography.

It would be well to examine more closely the language in which the Medieval observers of the frescoes described them<sup>80</sup>. Arnulf of Liseux speaks of the *schismatis praesumptores* found in antique and in Byzantine iconography.

John of Salisbury's descriptive language is less rich. He speaks only of *schismati* being a *scabellum* for the pope, and he interprets the scene as triumphal. Suger of Saint-Denis uses only one expression: *Burdinus sub pedibus domini pape conculcatum*. Otto of Freising's *Chronicle* only records the inscriptions, which have a more moderate language: Alexander overcomes Cadolus, condemns him and restores peace. On the other hand the artist of the *Codex Tolentinus* records a definite recollection of a trampling scene, although no actual description of the picture of Burdin's downfall appears in the text. Nevertheless on the basis of Arnulf of Liseux's account alone a search for the origins of this iconography in Antiquity is justified.

One must begin by a consideration of the

*praetumponiti nemiam deprecatur*. The special interest of this passage is the variety of expressions which Arnulf uses. The notion of the *scabellum* is, of course, biblical, recalling *Psalm 110* (109): *Sede a dextris meis, donec ponam inimicos tuos scabellum pedem tuorum, Maledicere et terram corpus tuum et quasi viam transversibus*. A reference to the practice of trampling upon the neck of an enemy is made by the prophet *Burin* (4.25): *Super cervicem ipsius aspergendo. All these passages, which I have deliberately quoted from the Vulgate, could well have been known to Arnulf of Liseux. They would seem to provide evidence for supposing that he read into the frescoes an allusion to the triumph of the Messianic king, prolonged in the triumph of the popes. They do not, on the other hand, completely explain his allusion to a *poena compunctionis* and a *deplicatio venie*.*

John of Salisbury's descriptive language is less rich. He speaks only of *schismati* being a *scabellum* for the pope, and he interprets the scene as triumphal. Suger of Saint-Denis uses only one expression: *Burdinus sub pedibus domini pape conculcatum*. Otto of Freising's *Chronicle* only records the inscriptions, which have a more moderate language: Alexander overcomes Cadolus, condemns him and restores peace. On the other hand the artist of the *Codex Tolentinus* records a definite recollection of a trampling scene, although no actual description of the picture of Burdin's downfall appears in the text. Nevertheless on the basis of Arnulf of Liseux's account alone a search for the origins of this iconography in Antiquity is justified.

victor rather than of his captive, for it was the victor who commissioned the picture, and whose tastes had to be satisfied. There were two motifs which particularly appealed to Antiquity. The first shows the victor standing in the posture of a hero. It probably dates back to the Hellenistic epoch, when it was adopted by the kings who divided among themselves the empire of Alexander. A late example may be seen in two paintings of Theseus, one from Herculaneum and one from Pompeii, in the Museo Nazionale at Naples<sup>81</sup> (Fig. 16).

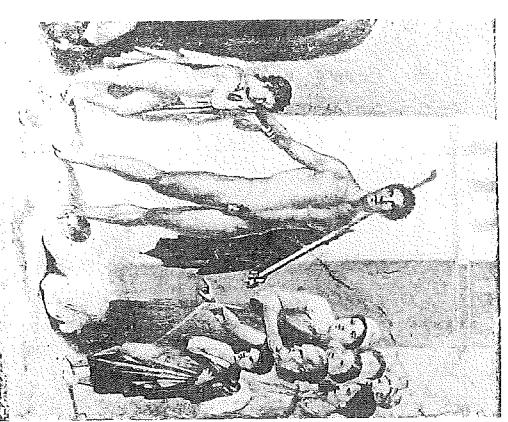


Fig. 16. — Theseus and the Minotaur (detail). Fresco from Pompeii, Museo Nazionale, Naples.

81. Cf. I. CORINNEAUX, 15.27 and *Ephesium*, 1.2.2. The tradition that the Persian King Sapor used the emperor Valerian as a mounting block was also known through Lactantius and the hagiographers, to whom this humiliation undergone by a persecutor was a source of satisfaction: Nam tec Persicus Sapor, is qui eum cepere, si quando liberar aut veliculum ascenderet, ut equum, inclinare Romanum tubacat, ac terga probabat, imponebat super dorsum eius. Illud esse verum dicunt, exprobant ei, cum non quid in tabulis aut parvibus Romanus progenitus, De moribus pereneorum, V. 1, ed. J. MOREAU, *Sources chrétiennes*, 39, Paris, sd., I, p. 83; cf. II, p. 223.

82. R. BIANCHI BANDINELLI, *Storia della pittura classica*, Florence, 1950, fig. 169 and 170.

Theseus, naked in the heroic tradition, stands in the centre of the scene, holding a club on his shoulder. To his right is the dead Minotaur, while to his left stand those whom he has



Fig. 17 a. — Victor trampling his defeated enemy.  
Sigillum Neuwid.

delivered from the Minotaur; one of them is prostrate of Theseus's feet.

Theseus is not actually trampling the Minotaur in this scene, and the person prostrate at his feet has been not conquered but liberated. The standing victor actually tramples his conquered enemy upon the disc of a *signum* at Neuwid<sup>83</sup> (Fig. 17 a). Either side of the prostrate figure are piles of booty. The presentation of Trajan with his foot planted upon a personification of Armenia and the gods of the Tigris and the Euphrates either side is less crudely triumphal<sup>84</sup>. With the passage of time

83. S. REINACH, *Répertoire de reliefs grecs et romains*, II, Paris, 1912, p. 83, number 2.  
84. M. BERNHARDT, *Handbuch zur Münzkunde der römischen Kaiserzeit*, Halle, 1936, pl. 84.2, Cf. A. GRABAR, *L'empereur dans l'art byzantin*, Paris, 1936, p. 43-4.  
85. J. MATRICE, *Nominaire des conservateurs*, Paris, 1911, II, p. 358-359 and pl. XII 1.  
86. M. BERNHARDT, *op. cit.* (note 84), pl. 23.1, 6, 10, 12, 16 and 24.3 (trampling a prisoner); pl. 23.3 (trampling a lion); pl. 23.13, 15, 17, 18 (trampling a serpent); P. COURCÉLE, 'Le serpent à face humaine dans la numismatique impériale du ve siècle,' in *Mélanges André Picard*, 1966, I, p. 343-353. This article is concerned with series of Vitellius' coins which have on their reverse side a standing emperor holding a long cross in his right hand and a globe surmounted by a victory in the left; his right foot is placed on the head of a serpent with a human face. Under the emperor Glycerius (473-4) a *scabellum* replaces the serpent, although the emperor is represented standing; Professor Courcélle suggests that there is implicit an allusion to Psalm 110 (109). A. GRABAR, *L'empereur* (cf. note 84), p. 45-9.

symbolism or borrowings from ceremonial further modified this iconography. On a coin issued at Sirmium in 320 a personification of Victory treads upon a personification of Germany. A lion, a serpent or even — the most abstract form — a *scabellum* may be substituted for the actual victim, while to the crowning Victory may be added a vexillum marked with the Christmon<sup>85</sup>. Through all these representations the emperor retains his heroic stance (Fig. 18 a-d).

The second motif used to represent a victor in Antique art showed him on horseback<sup>86</sup>. Apart from actual battle scenes, such as those portrayed in the bas-reliefs of the Arch of Galerius and equestrian statues, of which that of Marcus Aurelius at the Capitol has

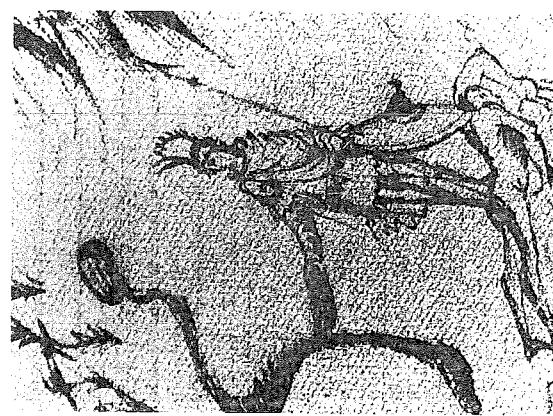


Fig. 17 b. — Victor trampling his defeated enemy.  
Utrecht Psalter, f. 64v.

alone survived, there is a small group of funeral stiles which are perhaps less well known. A well preserved example in the City Museum of Colchester is the stele of Longinus of the

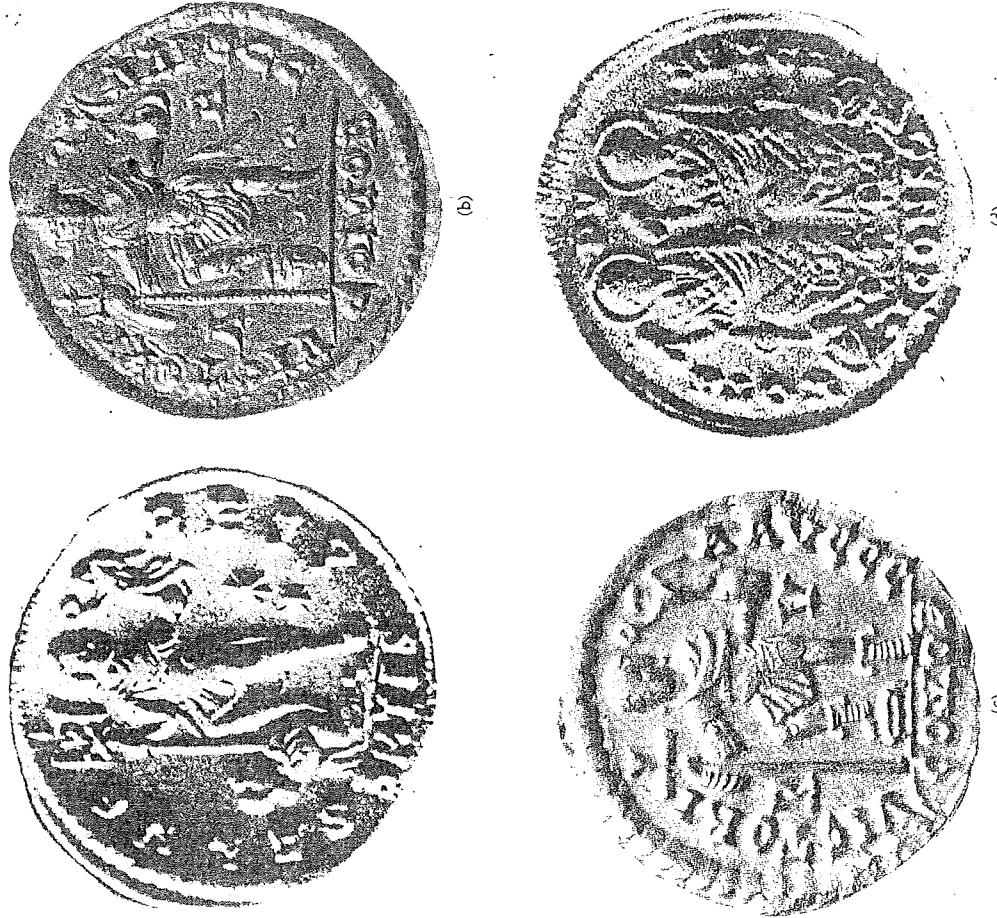


Fig. 18. — Triumphal imagery on coins:  
a) Valentinian II;  
b) Severus III; c) Glycerius;  
d) Valentinian III.

first Thracian squadron (Fig. 19). Longinus, wearing a cuirasse, is seated upon his horse; at his feet is prostrated a conquered Briton. Curiously this particular version of the conqueror on horseback has mainly been found in Britain and on the German frontier; it is quite unknown in Rome or Italy.<sup>88</sup>

The funeral stèle of Dexileos, who fell in the Battle of Corinth (394 B.C.), the only fully comparable earlier instance of this composition on a tombstone that Professor Toynebee has found elsewhere, is quite different in spirit.<sup>89</sup> Dexileos is on a prancing horse and about to strike a blow, from which the enemy, down on one knee, seeks to shield himself. Longinus's stele is rather of the genre of the equestrian statue, a static, formal monument. Dexileos's stele is more like the narrative scenes of actual battles. The motif can be seen on a medallion of Theodosius I, where the figure on horseback drives his spear into a fallen enemy.<sup>90</sup>

A third motif, which does not seem to have been used earlier than the reign of Theodosius I, shows the victorious emperor enthroned<sup>91</sup>. In a bas-relief on the base of his obelisk in the Hippodrome at Constantinople Theodosius is seated surrounded by his courtiers. Barbarian captives, down on one knee, present him with crowns. This is an evident adaptation of an official scene, such as the *Liberatio*. It differs from the previous ones in that, far from taking

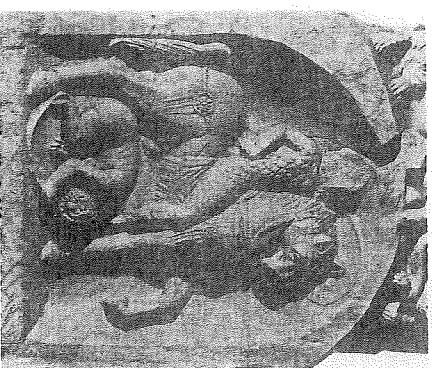


FIG. 19.—Funerary stèle of Longinus.

a heroic statue or a battle scene as its model, it clearly records a ceremony. It falls into the category of the celebration of a Triumph such as one frequently finds in the iconography of the rites of the State religion.<sup>92</sup> It is possible that the ceremony of the offerings was also

represented in the mosaics of Justinian's victories.<sup>93</sup> This ceremony was obsolete by the time that Constantine Porphyrogenitus wrote the *Book of Ceremonies*. He describes, however, a more brutal one which had been developed meanwhile.

Before turning to the way these themes were treated in Byzantine art, it would be well to consider them from the point of view of the trampling of Hades.<sup>94</sup> The normal way of representing the Resurrection in Byzantine iconography, it was also used in the West, and an example may be seen in the lower church of San Clemente in Rome. Here, however, as often in Byzantine art, Christ, although trampling Hades, is represented not in a heroic position but rescuing Adam. The same iconography was also used for King David triumphing over his enemies. In the *Theodore Psalter* (London, Ad. 1352) f. 18<sup>v</sup> David is represented with a foot upon the head of each of two prostrate enemies. The text illustrated (Psalm 17 (18) 35) runs: 'I smote my enemies in one of these ways. For the sense is that they could not rise, they fell beneath my feet. Twice in the *Lichaden Psalter* David is represented in the same way'.<sup>95</sup> But an alternative formula existed for representing the submission of a captive: the *proskynesis*; it illustrates the Byzantine tendency to tone things down. So in the frontispiece to the *San Marco Psalter*, the conquered Bulgarians are not trampled; they make a *proskynesis*. This be-

the Universe under the sovereign's feet; this is to indicate the extent of his rule, not of his conquests.

The position in which captives are represented may also be considered from another point of view. They are special cases of a general way of representing an inferior. The most ordinary way of doing this is by the *proskynesis*.<sup>96</sup> This is not peculiar to Hellenistic tradition. For example on the Black Obelisk of Shalmaneser III, king of Assyria, now in the British Museum, Jehu, king of Samaria, or his deputy is represented making a *proskynesis* before Shalmaneser.<sup>97</sup> In 842 B.C. he had invaded Damascus and forced Jehu to pay tribute. The *proskynesis* is therefore used as a means of showing that Jehu is a tributary of and hence inferior to Shalmaneser. In the painting of Theseus one of those delivered by him from the Minotaur is represented making a *proskynesis*. Here the gesture implies that Theseus is of a higher order, a divine person. Similarly, as he was later to be depicted in the *Joshua Roll*, Joshua prostrates himself before the angel of the Lord (*Joshua* 5.14).

We may find all these motifs, both of the conqueror and of the conquered, in Christian art. The heroic position is used particularly for the Anastasis. It is may be combined with the trampling of Hades.<sup>98</sup> The normal way of representing the Resurrection in Byzantine iconography, it was also used in the West, and an example may be seen in the lower church of San Clemente in Rome. Here, however, as often in Byzantine art, Christ, although trampling Hades, is represented not in a heroic position but rescuing Adam. The same iconography was also used for King David triumphing over his enemies. In the *Theodore Psalter* (London, Ad. 1352) f. 18<sup>v</sup> David is represented with a foot upon the head of each of two prostrate enemies. The text illustrated (Psalm 17 (18) 35) runs: 'I smote my enemies in one of these ways. For the sense is that they could not rise, they fell beneath my feet. Twice in the *Lichaden Psalter* David is represented in the same way'.<sup>99</sup> But an alternative formula existed for representing the submission of a captive: the *proskynesis*; it illustrates the Byzantine tendency to tone things down. So in the frontispiece to the *San Marco Psalter*, the conquered Bulgarians are not trampled; they make a *proskynesis*. This became, indeed, the regular Byzantine way of expressing inferiority in many different iconographical themes, whether of the Emperor, Christ's vicegerent, before the enthroned Lord of the Universe, or again of the Emperor of the Empire, or again of the Emperor of the Empire.

<sup>88</sup> For a general study, cf. the chapter on Submission in R. BOULAKI'S study: *Gestore et Rank in Roman Art*, New Haven (Connecticut), 1963.

<sup>89</sup> J. PRESSIS, 'Babylone et la Bible, in *Dictionnaire de la Bible, Supplément*, 1, 784.

<sup>90</sup> Tunc rex glorie maiestate sua concutans mortem (Gospel of Nicodemus VI, in *Bangala Apocrypha*, ed. C. DE TISCHENDORF, Leipzig, 1873, p. 400). This is presumably an embroidery of 1 Cor. 15.27.

<sup>91</sup> S. DER NERSENSEN, *L'illustration des peintures grecques*, Paris, 1970, p. 22 and pl. 12, fig. 32;

<sup>92</sup> Cf. R. BOULAKI'S study: *Gestore et Rank in Roman Art*, New Haven (Connecticut), 1963.

<sup>93</sup> Cf. M. BENHARST, op. cit. (note 84), p. 121-2, and pl. 87-9 for similar representation on a coin of Galenus Maximus.

<sup>94</sup> A. GRABAR, *L'empereur*, p. 54, and pl. XII. 2; cf. the *Liberatio* of Constantine, pl. XXI. These official scenes in Constantinian art may have supplied the model for the later ones figuring captives. Cf. J.M.C. TOYNEBEE, 'Roman Medallions', *Nazismatic Studies* No. 5, American Numismatic Society, New York, 1944, 172, 175 and 188; pl. V, VI and XXXIX.

<sup>95</sup> L. SCOTT KIRK, *Rites of the State Religion in Roman Art*, American Academy in Rome, Memoirs, XXII, 1955, p. 141-62 and pl. LIV-LV.

<sup>96</sup> Cf. CA XX, 1970, p. 155.

<sup>97</sup> WALTER, *art. cit.*, note 99, p. 44-5. For the *Utrecht Psalter* of E.T. DE WALD, *Illustrations of the Utrecht Psalter*, Princeton, 1932, f. 64<sup>v</sup>, pl. CI, etc., and, in this article, 'Heetens in Byzantine art', in *Eastern Church Review*, III, 1970, p. 48-41.

<sup>98</sup> 100. Cf. CA XX, 1970, p. 161, fig. 4c; A. GRABAR, *Iconographie byzantine*, Paris, 1957, p. 218, fig. 122; Moven, *Agg. II*, p. 808 and III, fig. 150 a.

<sup>99</sup> Ch. WALTER, *L'iconographie des dévouements dans la tradition byzantine*, Paris, 1970, p. 25-256; J. WALTER, 'Heetens in Byzantine art', in *Eastern Church Review*, III, 1970, p. 48-41.

<sup>100</sup> Cf. CA XX, 1970, p. 161, fig. 4c; A. GRABAR, *Iconographie byzantine*, Paris, 1957, p. 218, fig. 122.

<sup>101</sup> J. WALTER, *art. cit.*, note 99, p. 44-5. For the *Utrecht Psalter* of E.T. DE WALD, *Illustrations of the Utrecht Psalter*, Princeton, 1932, f. 64<sup>v</sup>, pl. CI, etc., and, in this article, 'Heetens in Byzantine art', in *Eastern Church Review*, III, 1970, p. 48-41.

<sup>102</sup> Cf. J. WALTER, *art. cit.*, note 99, p. 44-5. For the *Utrecht Psalter*, the soldier placing his foot upon the adopted son of Thomas preparing to cut off his head may recall scenes of David decapitating Goliath.

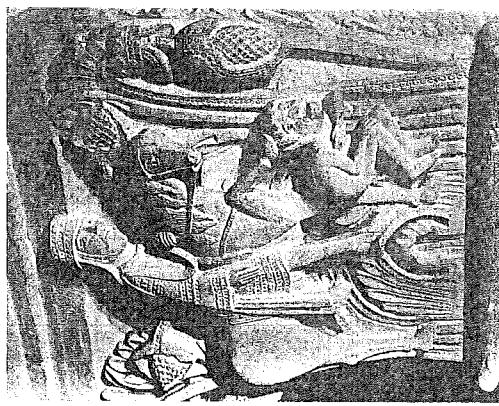


Fig. 20. — Constantine trampling Maenetus (?). Capital, cathedral Autun.

Arles and in the cathedral of Autun (Fig. 20). The same iconography was also used for a number of warrior saints.<sup>101</sup> When, however, we consider the third and

101. A. GRABAR, *L'empereur*, cf. note 6, p. 47, note 6; R. CRAZEN, "Nouvelles remarques sur les cavaliers sculptés ou peints dans les églises romanes," in *Cahiers de civilisation médiévale*, I, 1958, p. 236 and fig. 1. 102. *Sybillæ Mairitenses*, f. 37 (*ad. cit.* note 79), no. 84, p. 68 and p. 251; f. 136 (no. 343, p. 143 and 338). The first shows Michael II placing his foot upon the neck of Thomas, a Slav who proclaimed himself emperor and who fell into Michael II's hands in 823 (G. OSTRROGORSKY, *History of the Byzantine State*, Oxford, 1958, p. 205). This is the passage of the Chronicle of the *Sybillæ Mairitenses*: Ο δέ τοι δύσκωντα τοις ιδίοις ἐλόνει γερούτον τελεῖσθαι εἰς διδόσας αὐτὸν τοὺς πόδας τοῦ αὐτοῦ τοντον στρέψαν (PG 121, 973). The second shows Michael II, the cousin of Saifid-Daullah, who had been taken prisoner by Leo Phocas in 916, undergoing the same treatment by Constantine VII (A.A. WASILIEV, *Bizans et les Arques*, II, *Le double martyre*, edited by Marius CAVANAU, Brussels, 1958, p. 358). This is the passage of the Chronicle illustrated by the miniature: Οὐ δέξετο αὐτὸν βασιλεῖσθαι εἰς πολεμούσαν τοντον τοὺς πόδας τοῦ βασιλέως Κονσταντίνου οἰλούσθων νομίζας καὶ τοὺς τρομαγόντας τρυπάνεις τοὺς τε καὶ διογκότας ἐπιλογοντορο (PG 122, 65 A). Cf. the account of the ceremony for the tonsure of an Emir in the *De ceremoniis*, II, 19, of Constantine Porphyrogenitus (ed. J.J. RASKKE, Bonn, 1859, I, p. 610). The ceremony took place on the steps of the Column of Constantine in the Forum. The emperor placed his right foot on the head and the end of his lance on the neck of the Emir καὶ μετεῖπεν τῷ βασιλέως εἰπεν τὴν κεφαλὴν τῷ βασιλεῖ τῷ δεῖπνῳ.

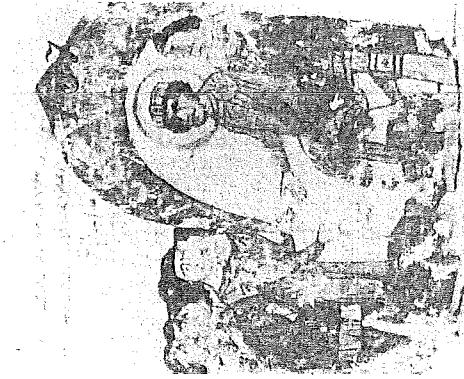


Fig. 21. — Tραχελοφός or *cælatio collis*, Constantine VII and Abul Asir. *Skylitzes mairitensis*.

later theme of the victorious emperor enthroned, we find that we are dealing with an iconographical subject which departs from the norms of Antique art. In the nature of things it is not easy to trample a person when one is in a seated position. It was therefore usual for submission to be manifested in an enthroned person by kneeling, as on the base of the Column of Theodosius, or by a *proskynesis*, as in the case of heretics submitting to the orthodox bishops at a general council. The only exception to this rule in Byzantine art, as far as I know, occurs in the *Skylitzes Mairitensis*, where twice a person is represented with the enthroned emperor placing his foot upon his neck.<sup>102</sup> This is clearly a ceremonial action: the emperor placed his foot and his lance upon the neck and shoulder of his conquered enemy, but he did not actually trample him (Fig. 21).

In Western art, rather more liberty was

used, particularly for illustrating the triumphal texts in the *Psalm*: *Psalm* 91 (90) 13 was indeed chanted at Constantinople while the emperor Justinian II, enthroned, subjected Aspinar prostrate at his feet. To my mind the case for Professor Ševčenko's hypothesis is greatly strengthened by the fact that the miniature does not in fact portray a *cælatio collis*,



Fig. 22. — Enthroned Christ trampling a lion and dragon. Pignatta sarcophagus, church of San Francesco, Ravenna.

is rarely portrayed enthroned with his feet upon these animals as a simple illustration of the text of the *Psalm*. Usually there is some added significance, Trinitarian or apocalyptic. It is necessary always to seek the explanation of a change in iconographical practice in the first place within the tradition of art.

103. The account of Theodosius (*Chronographia*, ed. J. CLASSEN, Bonn, 1839, I, p. 574; ed. Ch. DE BOOR, Leipzig, 1883, p. 375) would have been accessible in the West in the translation of Anicius Bibliothecus: *Foro Apstinum aquæ Leonum vincere per urbem pomps fecit dehonens. Cumque iudi equites agerentur, pasque in seculo residetur, duci sunt publice tract et projecti proni ad pedes eius quoniam illi colla usque ad solutionem primi bravi calcavit, universa plebe clamante: "Super aspidem et basilicam ascendit et concavatam leonem et draconem". Ex ita hos destinatos in vivario animalium capituli minutiæ versione punivit (D.S. BOOR, op. cit., p. 239). Cf. the parallels from earlier and later practice cited by REISKE (*op. cit.*, note 102, II, p. 722-3). For this incident cf. also OSTRROGORSKY, *op. cit.*, note 102, II, p. 722-3. For this incident cf. also*

WOLFSEY SCHEFFER, *The Drawings of Matthew Paris*, XIV, 1956, p. 143, p. 26 and pl. XXI. Curiously Matthew Paris also portrays Alexander the Great enthroned with his feet resting on a lion and a basilisk in his *Historia major*, p. 24 (Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, codex 26; cf. *ibid.*, no. 3, p. 4 and pl. I). The apocalyptic version may be seen on a bronze door at Novgorod, where Christ is seated on a bronze lion with his feet on an asp and a basilisk (cf. A. GOLESCHAUER, *Die Bronzestatuen von Novgorod und Greben*, Marburg, 1952, pl. II 38). In this miniature the patriarch Nicéphorus is enthroned with the emperor Leo V and the patriarch Theodosius prostrate at his feet. To my mind the case for Professor Ševčenko's hypothesis is greatly strengthened by the fact that the miniature does not in fact portray a *cælatio collis*, cf. F. SAXL, "The Ruthwell Cross," in *The Journal of the Corcoran and Warburg Institutes*, VI, 1943, p. 12, note 7.



FIG. 23.—The Father and the Son with the devil as *trahelium*: a) Utrecht Psalter, f. 64<sup>r</sup>; b) Coton Psalter, f. 75<sup>v</sup>, British Museum, London; c) Seal of Godwin, British Museum, London.

Official art is, of its nature, closely linked to ceremonial since both seek to express a meaning by significant gestures. In antique art we find representations of mounted or standing persons trampling an enemy; however, the more brutal action of trampling was replaced by a ceremonial action of placing the foot on the captive's neck. We also find representations of a figure crouched in a position resembling a mounting block and an allusion in a text to the practice of representing a captive in this way in Roman art. However, when an enthroned figure has a person under his feet, this is to indicate that he rules over the earth and the heavens. The develop-

ment of the ceremonial of the *τραχελιός* at the Byzantine court explains how it came about that the antique iconography for the representation of a victor and his vanquished enemy came to be modified in illustrating the *Skylitzes matritensis*.

On the other hand, so far as I know, the Byzantines never used the *τραχελιός* as a model for illustrating *Psalm 110 (Sede a destris mei, donec ponam inimicos tuos scabellum pedum tuorum)*. The explanation must be their respect for iconographical tradition (Fig. 23, a, b, c). In the West, where there was more flexibility, Christ was already represented seated

105. The principal representations of Christ with a human person as *scabellum* occur in the *Utrecht Psalter* and its derivatives (cf. S. DURENNE, "Les copies anglaises du Psautier d'Utrecht," in *Scriptorium*, XVIII, 1964, p. 185-97); *Utrecht Psalter*, f. 64<sup>r</sup> (E.T. DE WALT, *Illustrations of the Utrecht Psalter*, Princeton, 1932, pl. CII); London, British Museum, Harley 603, f. 56, dating from about 1000; *Eadwine Psalter*, Trinity College, Cambridge, codex R. 17.1, f. 19<sup>r</sup>, dating from about 1150 (M.R. JAMES, *The Canterbury Psalter*, London, 1935); *Parisinus latiens* 8846 (H. OMONT, *Psautier illustré XIIe siècle*, Paris, 1906) has illustrations only for the first 98 Psalms. The theme also appears on the annex of the Seal of Godwin in the British Museum (O.M. DALTON, *Catalogue of the Ivory Carvings of the Christian Era in the British Museum*, London, 1909, no. 31, p. 32-3; D. TALBOT RICE, *English Art*, 87-100, Oxford, 1932, p. 165 and pl. 36C), where a single unstruck person serves as a *scabellum* for both Christ and God the Father. In the *Ornate Psalter* (Oxford, Bodley's Library, MS. Douce 366, f. 147<sup>r</sup>) Christ enemies make a proskynesis and do not serve as a *scabellum* (cf. E.H. KANTOROWICZ, "The Quality of Winchester," in *The Art Bulletin*, XXIX, 1947, fig. 9). In the Offices of Westminster, London, Mardon Museum, MS. f. 27, Christ has his feet placed on the shoulders of two crouching figures (*ibid.*, fig. 4). In a Xith century Psalter (British Museum Lansdowne 383, f. 108) Christ holds an orb and is seated beside his Father on a rainbow with three prostrate figures at their feet. Two of them wear crowns. There has evidently been contamination from the apocalyptic version described earlier in this note. Finally there is the curious version in British Museum Coton Psalter (MS. D. xxvi, f. 75<sup>v</sup>) with its Chronological overtones. In this drawing *trahelium* in der deutschen Buchmalerei, Leipzig-Berlin, 1909, fig. 355. Two Western examples, both executed at Echternach in the first half of the Xith century, have a particular interest. In the first, Abbot Gerhard, who is standing, presents an open book to Saint Peter, who is enthroned. Peter, Bibliotheque nationale, Ms. 2196, f. 2, an Evangelist dated about 1040; cf. J. PROCHÁZKA, *Der Schreiber und Deazar, Hoftulpen des Gregor-Nazianzenus*, Princeton, 1969, fig. 355. In the second a standing abbot presents to the enthroned King Henry II an open book upon which is inscribed a text (Bremen Staatsbibliothek, cod. B. 21, a lectionary dated between 1039 and 1043; cf. *ibid.*, p. 50\*).

with his feet upon a prostrate figure in the *Utrecht Psalter*<sup>105</sup>. The *scabellum* motif was therefore well established in the West before the time of Callistus II. He could adapt an iconography hitherto reserved to Christ to express the triumph of the popes, certain that the point would be taken. This is in itself noteworthy. But Arnulf of Lisieux's description shows that he not only divined the pope's intention; he knew of analogous representations of *depreatio venie* (proskynesis) and of *poena compunctionis* (*τραχελιός*), and understood the iconographical tradition to which these pictures belonged.

#### b) Concordat.

The final picture in the triumphal series differs somewhat, as I noted, from the others, since it represents not only the defeat of an antipope but also the promulgation of the Concordat of Worms<sup>106</sup>. The concordat had ended — at least so Pope Callixtus hoped — the long struggle over Investitures. It was therefore fitting that a representation of it should end the series of pictures of the popes

F. WORMATE, *English Drawings of the Xth and XIth centuries*, London, no. 33, p. 69 and pl. 16a).

106. Cf. CA XXX, 1970, p. 165.

107. *Ibid.*, p. 165, n. 38.

108. For these themes in imperial and Christian art cf. A. GABRIEL, *L'empereur, especially p. 54-57*; 88-89, 98-122, pl. XL and XVI. There does not seem to have been a specific formula for the bestowal of a privilege. It was conceded after the model of an investiture. Cf. representations of Moses receiving the Law (C.K. MOREY, "Notes on East Christian Manuscripts," in *The Art Bulletin*, XI, 1929, fig. 40, 43, 51 and 52). Scenes where a message is given to or received from a messenger are curiously similar. Cf. the examples in *Séville, matritensis*, f. 75<sup>v</sup> (cat. no. 171) and *Vaticana*, I, 493, 1<sup>o</sup> (cat. no. 171) (G. LAMBERT, *Manuscripts of the Middle Ages in the Vatican*, 1941, pl. XXIV).

Dr. Florentine Mucherlich also kindly drew my attention to dedication pictures in certain manuscripts. These also resemble the iconography of an offering or the bestowal of a privilege. Normally these pictures show the author offering his work, in the form of a closed book or an unrolled roll, to his patron, whether a Prince or a saint.

For a fine known Byzantine example cf. Dionysios, cod. 61, f. 1<sup>o</sup>, where Gregory of Nazianzus offers his nomilia to a prince (G. GALAIS, *Les Illustrations de l'évangile Homiliae de Grégoire Nazianze*, Princeton, 1969, fig. 355).

Two Western examples, both executed at Echternach in the first half of the Xith century, have a particular interest.

In the first, Abbot Gerhard, who is standing, presents an open book to Saint Peter, who is enthroned. Peter,

who had been involved in the struggle. But the concordat was also something new in political and ecclesiastical history; it consisted in a mutual recognition of the respective rights of pope and emperor in the appointment of bishops. Consequently although a certain superiority is given to the pope by the fact that he is enthroned while the emperor Henry V remains standing, it is clear that both lend their authority to the document which they hold together. Upon this painted document were, apparently, inscribed the first words of the concordat, while the whole text was painted on the wall elsewhere in the audience hall.<sup>107</sup>

Can one situate the iconography of this representation of a concordat relative to an existing tradition in political imagery, or was it a new departure?

In official representations of the emperors there is hardly any distinction between on the one hand the conferment of a privilege or of an office and on the other hand the presentation of an offering<sup>108</sup>. For example the emperor Theodosius I is enthroned in each case. On the base of the obelisk in the Hippodrome at Constantinople captives on their knees present an

offering. On the *misericordia* at Madrid the official inclines his head to receive the *codicilli*. The representation of the analogous theme where the emperor makes his offering to the church differs somewhat in the two earliest examples known, those in the churches of San Vitale and Sant'Apollinare in Classe at Ravenna. However in the later examples in the church of Saint Sophia at Constantinople there is a close resemblance to the picture executed for Callixtus II of the Concordat of Worms. In the vestibule mosaic Constantine and Justinian offer respectively the city of Constantinople and the church of Saint Sophia. In the two mosaics of the south gallery, the emperor and the empress offer gifts and charters of privileges. In all these cases they stand before the enthroned figure of Christ or the Virgin.<sup>109</sup>

<sup>109.</sup> Cf. A. GRABAR, "Quel est le sens de l'offrande de Justinien et de Théodora aux mosaïques de Saint-Vital," in *L'art de la fin de l'Antiquité et du Moyen Age*, Paris, 1968, I, p. 461-468; O. DBAUS, "Zu den Apis-mosaiiken von Sant'Apollinare in Classe," in *Labirinth der österrömisichen Byzantinistik*, 18, 1965, p. 229-238; TH. WARTHMORE, *The Monasteries of Saint Sophia at Istanbul*, The Mosaics of the Southern Vestibule, Oxford, 1926, and *The Imperial Portraits of the South Gallery*, Oxford, 1942.

<sup>110.</sup> V.J. ĐURIĆ, "Portraits des souverains byzantins et leurs chrysobulle," in *Recueil des travaux de la Faculté de philosophie (Belgrade)*, VII, 1, 1965, p. 251-272.

<sup>111.</sup> The same is, of course, true of dedication pictures. Cf. Mühl's church art Studien (R. HAMANN-MAC LIAN und H. HALLENSLEBEN, *Die Monumentalmosaike in Sizien und Makedonien*, Giessen, 1905, fig. 246 and 249).

<sup>112.</sup> A. GRABAR, "Le portrait en iconographie paléochrétienne," in op. cit. note 109, p. 59-60; *Idem, Iconoclasmus*, in op. cit. note 100, p. 47-50 and pp. 60-61. For portraits of council fathers of my study (op. cit. note 99) especially p. 61-57 and fig. 29-30 (*Vat. lat. 1339*) and my article, *P. de la Nantes*, in *Names of the Council Fathers at Saint-Sauveur, in Revue des Études byzantines*, 28, 1970, p. 189-206. Cf. also the remarkable varioύa scene, in which Christ seated on a throne, holds an unrolled scroll, upon the so-called *Sarcophagus of Agilbert*. Bitter side of Christ are standing figures in the position of *Orantes*. We have here an evident adaptation of a promulgation scene (B. BRENK, "Magistratus zum sog. Sarkophag des Agilbert in Jouraine," in *CA XIV*, 1964, p. 95-107). Breuk argues that it cannot be later in date than the early VIII century. 113. *Art. cit.*, note 110.

<sup>114.</sup> After describing the position of the emperor and empress relative to the Virgin, Clavijo continues: a los pies de la imagen de Santa María estaban figurados treinta castillos e ciudades, escribieron los nombres de cada uno de cuatro sellos que estaban colgados unos privilegios que solían ser des sentidos de aquella iglesia, que las hubiera dado un emperador, e que la doto, que habiera nombre Romano, a que alii yera enterrado a los pies de aquella imagen; e que estaban colgados unos privilegios de cuatro sellos con sellos de cera e de plomo, que decían eran los dichos privilegios que aquella iglesia hubiera de las dichas ciudades e castillos (cf. S. CIRAC ESTOPASAN, "Tres monasterios de Constantinopla visitados por Epiphanes en el año 1403," in *Revista de Estudios Byzantinos*, XII, 1961, p. 374-5; V.J. ĐURIĆ, *art. cit.*, note 110, p. 261 and R. JANIN, *Géographie ecclésiastique de l'empire byzantin*, Paris, 1969, p. 220-224).

This same iconography was to be used for the miniatures which were attached to Byzantine and Serbian chrysobulls.<sup>110</sup> Now, as Dr Đurić has pointed out, these miniatures have a common characteristic: the sovereign in question does not present the gift or privilege to a member of the clergy but to the patron of the church or monastery, whether it be Christ, the Virgin or a saint.<sup>111</sup> It is therefore evident that there is a basic difference between this type of scene and the one in Callixtus II's Audience Hall: no Byzantine sovereign would be represented standing and presenting a charter of privileges to a seated member of the clergy. The presence of a portrait of the person who promulgated a document at the head of the text recalls the antique custom of representing the author at the head of the manuscript containing his treatise. The original idea in both cases would have been to offer a guarantee of the authenticity of the text. The practice was copied by Christian artists, who represented king David as frontispiece to the Psalter, an Evangelist at the head of his gospel, Saint John Chrysostom at the head of a liturgical roll and so on.

In the same way portraits of the emperor and the council fathers offered a guarantee that the doctrine promulgated under their portrait was orthodox. These portraits occur not only in monumental painting but also in manuscripts containing a brief résumé of the history of the ecclesiastical councils.<sup>112</sup> Dr Đurić has called attention to similar examples concerning gifts to churches.<sup>113</sup> Those at Žiča and Manasija are later than the frescoes of Callixtus II, but they must derive from earlier Byzantine models, such as the one which Clavijo describes.<sup>114</sup> In the church of the monastery of the Peribleptos at Constantinople, the founder Raymond III Argyrus (1028-34) was represented at the side of the Virgin in a way which recalls the mosaics of Saint Sophia. Beneath the Virgin were represented the thirty castles (estates?) and cities which the emperor had conferred upon the monastery, together with their names and a list of the monastery's privileges inscribed on metal and accompanied by seals of wax and lead. The introduction of the text changes a picture which originated as an *ex voto* into a deed of foundation; it has become a legal document placing publicly on record what are

the monastery's possessions and privileges. The two themes have therefore been combined. Professor Đurić also calls attention to the representation at Subiaco of a privilege conferred on the monastery by pope Innocent III.<sup>115</sup> The resemblance to Byzantine and Serbian pictures of the gift of a privilege is sufficiently evident for it to be likely that the artist had seen a Byzantine chrysobull (Fig. 24 a). However there are one or two peculiarities. Firstly

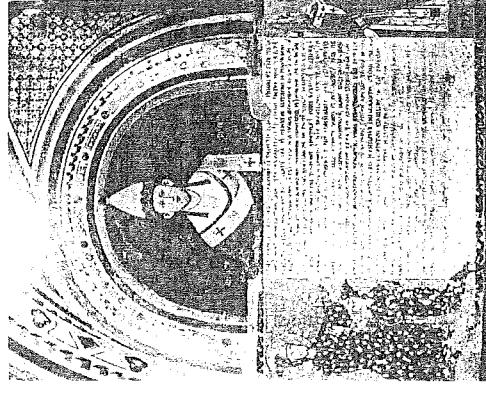


FIG. 24 a. — Privilege of Subiaco. Fresco, Subiaco.

the second is that the other model would have been the representation of the Concordat of Worms in Callixtus II's Audience Hall.

I would also suggest that this picture marked a new departure in political imagery. While the scene of the Concordat of Worms resembles the conferment of a privilege and the promulgation of a document, it does not strictly enter into either category; for it is in fact the record of a contract.

It seems that this point was missed by the artist responsible for the miniature in Alexander Laicus's *Commentary on the Apostolical* (Cambridge University Library MS.Mm. 5, 31, f. 144v) (Fig. 24 b). Pope Callixtus II sits enthroned on the right with his clergy

<sup>115.</sup> V.J. ĐURIĆ, *art. cit.*, note 110, p. 264; F. HERMAN, *Le monastère de Subiaco, siège officiel Rome, 1904*, p. 462-5 and 472; R. FORESTIER, *Latens I, II, III et Latens IV*, Paris, 1905, p. 288, note 12; cf. D. ĐURIĆ, *art. cit.*, note 110, p. 3 and 14; although later than the Subiaco privilege, they certainly continue a pre-existing tradition.

<sup>116.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Le Territoire des Tôtes (Taurica = Sardes, Sardina),* the *Territoire des Clercs* drafted and signed the document confirming the privilege of the picture is Blasius, archbishop of Taurica, 1873, p. 859 and L. JANIN, *Dictionnaire théologique de Tôtes*, in *Dictionnaire théologique et de géographie ecclésiastique*, IX, 70, then the presence of the bust of Innocent III above would present no anomaly; he would be confirming and guaranteeing the privilege accorded by the Curial official papal. However, there are traces of a square halo which make the pope more likely; further, the letters INN can be deciphered on the dark band above the bishop's head.

<sup>117.</sup> The text of the privilege on the fresco conforms

<sup>118.</sup> The text of the privilege on the fresco conforms

<sup>119.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>120.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>121.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>122.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>123.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>124.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>125.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>126.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>127.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>128.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>129.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>130.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>131.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>132.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>133.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>134.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>135.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>136.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>137.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>138.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>139.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>140.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>141.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>142.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>143.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>144.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>145.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>146.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>147.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>148.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>149.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>150.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>151.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>152.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>153.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>154.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>155.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>156.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>157.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>158.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>159.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>160.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>161.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>162.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>163.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>164.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>165.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>166.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>167.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>168.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>169.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>170.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>171.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>172.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>173.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>174.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>175.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>176.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>177.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>178.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>179.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>180.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>181.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>182.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>183.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>184.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>185.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>186.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>187.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>188.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>189.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>190.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>191.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>192.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>193.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>194.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>195.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>196.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>197.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>198.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>199.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>200.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>201.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>202.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>203.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>204.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>205.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>206.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>207.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>208.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>209.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>210.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>211.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>212.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>213.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>214.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>215.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>216.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>217.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>218.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>219.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>220.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>221.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>222.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>223.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>224.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>225.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>226.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>227.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>228.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>229.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115, p. 280;

<sup>230.</sup> Cf. N. FORESTIER, *Op. cit.*, note 115

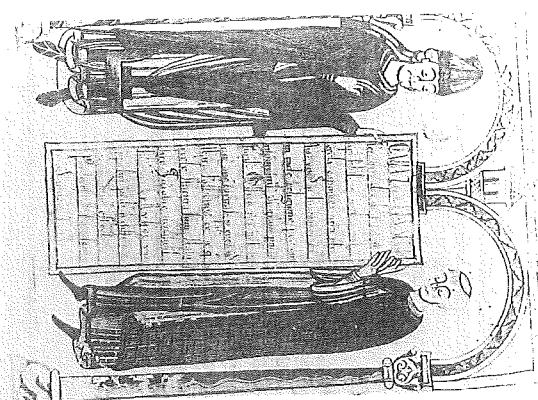


FIG. 24 c. — Privilege of Marbach. *Codex Guta-Sintram*, f. 2, Grand Séminaire, Strasbourg.

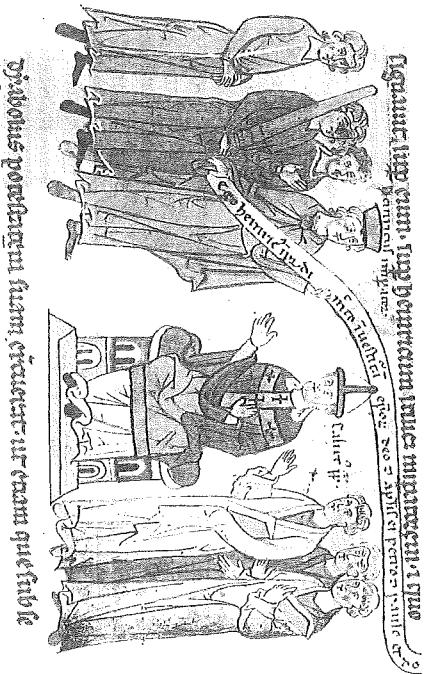


FIG. 24 b. — Concordat of Worms. MS Mn. 5. 31, f. 144v, University Library, Cambridge.

beside him. The emperor Henry stands to the left of the scene with his *spanbaria* and two courtiers. Like the Lateran fresco, it is therefore an official scene. However although the emperor holds an unfolded scroll upon which are inscribed the opening words of the Concordat, the pope does not hold it jointly with the emperor.

On the other hand there are examples of official pictures which one may reasonably suppose to be modelled upon the Lateran fresco. There was a need for an official imagery to portray a contract or the conferment of a privilege binding to both, the giver and the receiver (Fig. 24 c). One such picture would be the Privilege of Marbach, which, conferred by Calixtus II himself, was represented in the middle of the XIIth century.<sup>115</sup> It also seems likely that this fresco served as a model for the mosaic of the *Constitutum Constantini* in

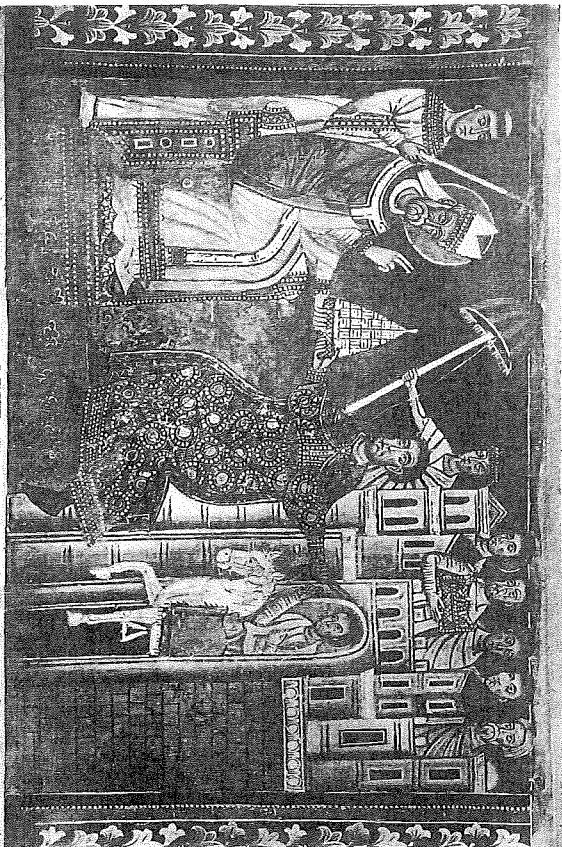


FIG. 25. — Constantine bestowing the *frigium* on Sylvester. Chapel of Saint Sylvester, church of the Quattro Coronati, Rome.

the portico of the Lateran basilica. Again the pope is enthroned while the emperor stands; and again they hold together an unrolled document. It would then follow that the *Constitutum Constantini* was conceived in XIIth century Rome as a contract analogous to the Concordat of Worms: the pope and the emperor in both cases recognize mutually their respective rights.

It seems therefore that these frescoes commissioned by Calixtus II, while based on established traditions in official imagery, were not slavishly modelled upon a pre-existing repertoire. So far as the triumph over the antipopes was concerned, the pope was ready to be represented, along with his predecessors, after the model of the victorious Christ in Messianic imagery. For the relations between Church and Empire, he accepted a new formula, which, while giving a certain superiority to the pope and following the model of Christ as Emperor, nevertheless admitted the possibility of a contract between the Vicar of Christ and the terrestrial emperor.

### 3. The Coronation of Lotharius II: *Sutor*.

As I stated in the first part of this study, I incline to the view that there was at one time in the room which pope Innocent II had decorated in the Lateran Palace a picture of the emperor Lotharius II performing for the pope the office of *matricularius* or *sutor*.<sup>116</sup> However, in the absence of any description of this picture a reconstruction is necessarily hypothetical. It can only be based upon other pictures of an emperor performing the office of *sutor* for the pope.

<sup>115</sup> *Utafassung (Vaticanus batk. lat. 2724, f. 34v)* must also derive from the fresco of the Concordat of Worms. An enthroned cleric receives an unfolded, inscribed roll from the standing king. On the other hand the forged Donation of Pachal I is represented as the conferment of a privilege. The enthroned pope holds an unfolded scroll (*ibid.*, f. 102). The earlier miniatures in this manuscript were, in fact, added afterwards and date from later in the century (cf. *LAMBERT, I ritratti*, op. cit., nos. 108, 232, 249, and fig. 156).

<sup>116</sup> Cf. CA XX, 1970, p. 167. To the bibliography of the *offizielles Stadtrecht (Italia)*, p. 166, note 44, add O. TREITINGER, *Die autonome Kaiser und Rechtsritter*, Jena, 1938<sup>1</sup> and Darmstadt, 1956<sup>2</sup>, p. 225-227.

120. R. FOSSVILLE, op. cit., note 80, p. 80. The Privilege of Marbach was granted by Calixtus II on October 30th, 1119, but the miniature in the *codex Guta-Sintram* (Strasbourg, Grand Séminaire), f. 2, was only executed in about 1154. The Pope is represented on the left and Geronsus, protonost of the Canons Regular of Marbach, on the right of the picture. Inscribed on the document which they hold are the first phrases of the private confirming an exemption granted by Urban II and Pachal II. For the full text cf. PL 163, 1120. The picture in the *Liber Lectionum Regum* of bishop Don Petrus in Oviedo cathedral and dating from about 1120 (cf. P. DE PALOL and M. HIRNER, *L'art en Espagne*, Paris, 1967, p. 164, and fig. xxvi) records a gift rather than confirms a contract. The enthroned king hands to a censured, halberd-cleric a document inscribed TESTAME. A miniature of



Fig. 27. — Alexander III with the emperor Frederick I and the doge Sebastiano Ziani  
as stratores. Palazzo della Signoria, Sienna.

is not followed in every detail. For example, while in the narrative of the *Constitutum*, Constantine actually crowns Sylvester (*ziu;* *sacratissimo vertici manus nostris impeditus*), in the fresco Constantine stands before the enthroned Sylvester and presents him with the tiara<sup>122</sup> (Fig. 25). One may, on the analogy of the representation of the *reçygelorós*<sup>123</sup>, suppose that the narrative has been modified in order to conform with ceremonial. At the coronation of a pope, the archdeacon received the tiara from the *mejor strator*<sup>124</sup>. It will be observed that in this picture a groom stands behind the principal figures holding the horse's bridle, which Constantine also holds in his left hand. The correspondence between the picture and the ceremonial is therefore close but not exact.

In the actual representation of Constantine as the pope's *strator*, Sylvester, wearing pallium and tiara, is seated upon the horse; his left hand is raised in blessing. Ahead of him rides a deacon carrying a cross and entering the gates of the city of Rome; next comes Constantine's *spatbarius*, while Constantine himself walks

122. A. MUÑOZ, *Il restauro della Ciborio e del Chiostro dei SS. Quattro Coronati*, Rome, 1914, p. 103 and fig. 143-4. According to an inscription in the Chapel of San Silvestro was built and dedicated in 1246. Cf. also WILPERT, *op. cit.*, note 77, p. 1012 and pl. 259.  
123. *Constitutum Constantini, Fons et iuri Germaniae Historiae*, edited by ANTONIUS X. MONUMENTA GERMANIAE HISTORICA, edited by H. FURTHMANN, Hanover, 1908, p. 91. For other editions, cf. CA XX, 1970, p. 172, note 61.  
124. See above, p. 118.

125. *Celebatur missa descendit (sc. bissa) ad locum ubi est equus petatis ornatus, et ibi arthribucorum rectis friguum a magno stratori de gno propon coronat; et sic per medium urbem dicens ad palatum Lateranense coronamus. (From the papal coronation ceremonial, cf. Gestae papaveris scholarii Albiini XI, 3, in *Le Liber Censum de l'Église romaine*, edited by PAUL FRÈRE, Paris, 1905, p. 1246.) I have not seen J. TÄNGER'S study: *Der reitende Papst. Ein Beitrag zur Ikonographie der Papsttituli*, Munich-Zürich, 1970.*

pope's feet outside the church of Saint Mark in Venice. The next day he performed the office of *strator* for the pope. On October 15th Alexander III left Venice for Rome<sup>125</sup>.

In Spinello Aretino's picture the Venetian galley may be seen in the background (Fig. 27). On the right are the walls of a city, presumably Rome. A figure richly dressed walks beside the pope's horse, rendering him the *officium strepe*. Ahead of the pope's horse walk the emperor Frederick I and the doge Sebastiano Ziani, rendering him the *officium stratoris*. This picture is perhaps the more interesting

126. *Constitutum Constantini*, *ed. cit.*, note 123, p. 92.  
127. C. RICC, *Il Palazzo pubblico di Siena e la Nostra Patria* (see above 1904, p. 17).  
128. J. ROUSSEAU DE PENA, "La Politique italienne d'Alexandre III et la fin du schisme," in *Histoire de l'Eglise*, IX, 2, Paris, 1953, p. 143-156.



Fig. 26. — Constantine as Sylvester's strator. Chapel of Saint Sylvester, church of the Quattro Coronati, Rome.

beside Sylvester's horse, holding its bridle. Behind Constantine is an attendant holding an *ombrilemma*; three bishops on horseback bring up the rear. This scene corresponds, therefore, more closely to the text of the *Constitutum: lenentes frenum equi ipsius pro reverentia B. Peri stratoris officium illi exhibimus* (Fig. 26).

The later example is to be found in the Palazzo della Signoria at Sienna. It is in the Sala di Balia and forms part of the biographical cycle of the Siennese pope Alexander III<sup>127</sup>. It was executed in the XVth century by Spinello Aretino. Frederick I did not respect the Concordat of Worms. However in July 1177, having failed to sustain his opposition to pope Alexander III, he was forced to come to terms. On July 24th he prostrated himself at the

of the two, since it represents in a schematic form a number of genuine but disconnected historical events. But in both cases it is clear that the artist is working within an established tradition of political imagery. For the picture of Constantine as pope Sylvester's *sutor*, Dr Kantorowicz has already suggested an origin in the classical theme of the *Adventus*<sup>12</sup>. The *Adventus* is the ceremonial arrival of a victorious emperor either at the city of Rome



FIG. 28. — *Adventus* at Milan of Constantine.  
Médal Schinner des médailles. Paris.

or at the city which he has conquered. He might arrive on horseback or on foot. Both kinds of *Aleuans* are represented in official imagery; here however we are only concerned with the emperor's arrival on horseback. A number of variations in detail are possible. The emperor may be accompanied by a standard bearer and a personification of Victory holding a crown and a palm branch,<sup>130</sup> (Fig. 28). A conquered barbarian may crouch before the emperor's horse; the conquered city may be represented with its *Tribus* emerging to greet the victorious emperor; alternatively a crowd may be gathered at the city gates. The theme persisted in Byzantine tradition, as for example in the curious fresco in the Church of Saint Demetrius in Thessaloniki,<sup>131</sup> (Fig. 29). However, I think that it may be said categorically that in antique representations of the *Aleuans* there is *never* a person leading the victorious emperor

The reason is simple: in imperial ceremonial this office did not exist. It is true that the office of *strator* was known to the Greeks and Romans<sup>133</sup>. However he was simply a groom, who looked after his master's horses and helped his master to mount and dismount. If his master owned numerous horses, he might appoint a *tribunus stabuli*; the equivalent of the later *protostrator*. Obviously in a society where the

horse, whether for racing, hunting or battle, had occupied a privileged place, the *strator* had opportunities for recommending himself. Bury recalls that the future Basil I passed from the stables of Theophilites, whose *protostrator* he had been, to the imperial stables.<sup>154</sup>

The *protostrator* did become an increasingly important person at Constantinople from the VIII century. Nevertheless his functions did not include that of leading the emperor's horses on ceremonial occasions any more than in ancient Rome.<sup>155</sup> Only much later at Constantinople do the ceremony and the office become united. Thus we read in the *De Officiis* of the Pseudo-Kodinus that 'the Count of the Imperial Horse would bring a horse and hold it while the emperor was going to mount. When the emperor had mounted the *protostrator* took three bridle and led the horse'.<sup>156</sup> It is hard to believe that this ceremony did not come to the Byzantine court from the West.

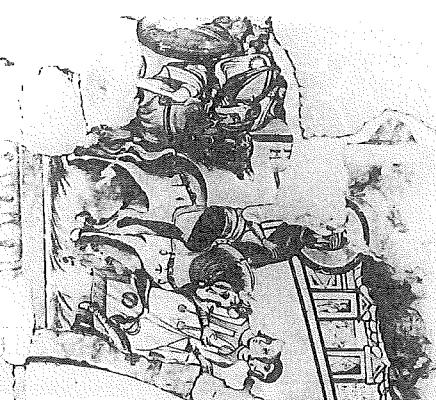


FIG. 29.—Scene modelled upon the *Adventus*. Fresco, Church of Saint Demetrios, Thessaloniki.

angels, the front one of which leads the ass <sup>was</sup> Christ; it is not, however, certain that this is a representation of the Entry to Jerusalem. The Entry into Egypt, an apocryphal development of the Gospel account of the Flight to Egypt, sometimes appears as an *Adventus*. For example in the miniature in the *Monologion of Basil II* the personification of Egypt emerges from the city as conceived after the model of a *Tyche*; the figure's hands are covered, a would be the case in Imperial ceremonial where greeting a royal person. In this picture, unusually for Byzantine representations of the Flight to Egypt, Joseph is leading the mount<sup>129</sup>.

However since the presence of a groom is not authenticated in antique representations of an *Adventus* and is unusual in Byzantine scenes derived from the *Adventus*, we must seek the origins of the *strator* in iconography elsewhere. A groom sometimes figures in triumphal processions leading the horses which draw the

134. J.B. DURY, *The imperial administrative systems in the 13th century*, London, 1911, p. 117.

135. R. GUILLARD, "Etude de la statutaire et de la prosopographie byzantines. Le Prostator," in *Revue des Etudes Byzantines*, 7, 1949, p. 156-192.

136. PERIOKO-KONNUS, *Traité des Officers*, edited by J. VEREAUX, Paris, 1966, p. 168. It would seem that Eichmann was right if E. FROHANN, "Das Romane Staat und der Strope," in *Historische Zeitschrift*, 112, 1907, p. 201 in reflecting Holzmann's view that "der Statutarstaat aus Byzanz" (cf. H. ULMER, *Der Kaiser als Marcellus der Pagani. Eine Untersuchung zur Geisteshaltung der Beziehung zwischen Kaiser und Pagus in Mittelalter*, Heidelberg, 1928, p. 22).

137. A. GRABAR, *L'empereur*, p. 234-236; R. LUCchesi PALLI, "Dirige in Ierusalem," in *Reaktionen auf byzantinischen Kunst*, II, 1951, p. 11.

138. A. GRABAR, *L'empereur*, p. 235; *Idem, Christian Iconography*, op. cit., note 8, p. 45 and pl. 123; J. BECKWITH, *Coptic Sculpture*, 300-1500, London, 1963, p. 29 and pl. 126.

139. *Il Mandylion de Baitio II*, edited by C. STORANIA, 1910. Vat. Urb. 1907, f. 75, II, f. 274. There is no reference to the Flight to Egypt in the original text of the *Proto-Gospel of Simeon* (cf. below, p. 122, the note 154), which was apparently the best known of the apocryphal gospels in the East. In primitive Cappadocian iconography Joseph's son invariably leads the Virgin's moom.

chariot of the victorious emperor. In the bass-relief on the Arch of Titus the quadriga is conducted by *Roma* (or *Victoria*) carrying a tall *rexillum*. In the scene on the Arch of Septimius Severus at Lepcis, probably commemorating his victories of 203 A.D., the quadriga is led by a tunica-clad figure, for whom various identifica-

horse, whether for racing, hunting or battle, had occupied a privileged place, the *strator* had opportunities for recommending himself. Bury recalls that the future Basil I passed from the stables of Theophilites, whose *protostotor* he had been, to the imperial stables.<sup>24</sup>

The *protostotor* did become an increasingly

tions have been proposed (Fig. 30). In both cases the person leading the chariot is generally given an allegorical identity.<sup>340</sup> Moreover the triumphal procession in a chariot does not seem

to have continued either in ceremonial or in official imagery.

Representations of a person holding his own mount by the reins are relatively common in both classical and Byzantine art. Such a person may figure in a genre scene. For example in one of the mosaics at Piazza Armerina two young men in short tunics hold their horses by the bridle while a third offers incense before the statue of Artemis Agrotera.<sup>41</sup> Similarly Amazons are represented leading their horses on the diptychs of Anastasius.<sup>42</sup> But a representation of Constantine holding his own horse by the bridle cannot, to my mind, be cited as evidence of a traditional iconography of Constantine as *strator*.<sup>43</sup> The model for such a representation would have been some famous rider of Antiquity with his steed: Alexander with Bucephalus, Bellerophon with Pegasus, or — most likely of all — one of the Diocuri (Fig. 31 b).

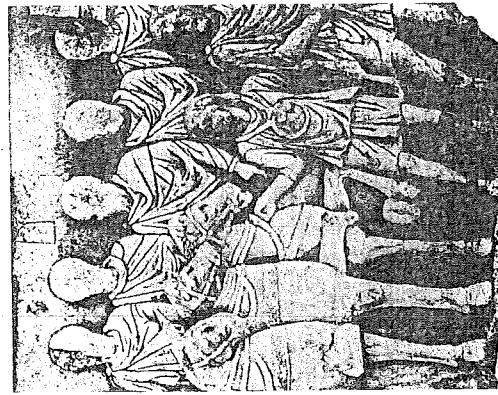


FIG. 30. — Triumph of Septimius Severus (detail).  
Triumphal arch Lepcis Magna.

140. Inez SCOTT RYBERG, *Rites of the State Religion in Roman Art*, American Academy in Rome, *Memoris*, Vol. XXII, 1925, p. 146 and 160; Plate III, fig. 79a and b. Scott Ryberg is unfortunately disposed to accept the identification of the traitor in the Lepcis relief as a *tireensis* of Lepcis (*ibid.*, p. 160, note 57).

I know of no analogous scene in Byzantine art. However, the Theophanes relief shows how four *patrioi* led the emperor Irene's golden chariot drawn by four horses in the Easter procession of 798: *πατροί τε διάβασαν ἡγέταις τοῦ πολυού* (...). *εἰπόντες οὐδὲν* (τοῦ πολυού) *τεραῖον λευκὸν αὐτούντον* (THEOPHANES, *Chronographia*, ed. Ch. De BORO, Leipzig, 1883, p. 47).

141. M. Vittorio GASTELLI, *La Villa Ercolano di Piazza Armerina*, I, *Mosaic Art*, Rome, 1st, pl. XVII.

142. R. DELBUSSO, *Die Constantiniarken und verwandte Denkmäler*, Berlin-Leipzig, 1929, p. 75 and 125.

143. W. VÖLGBACHER, *Eichenbaum der Spätantike und deren fränkische Musterbilder*, Mainz, 1952, numbers 17-22, p. 27-28.

There seems to me to be a deliberate intention of burlesque in the representations, which in themselves derive from a more serious iconographical tradition. Cf. note 144.

144. J. KARTOPOWICZ, *art. cit.* in *Mallay*, note 129, p. 187 and Pl. X, c. d.

145. K. WEINTRAUB, *Greek Mythology in Byzantium*, Art, Princeton, 1951, p. 102, et seq., fig. 110 (was released to the Capitoline Museum, Rome) and fig. 228 (was released to the Pegeus and Bellerophon on a sarcophagus in the National Museum at Athens); "Dioscuri"; phainges in *Dictionnaire des antiquités grecques et romaines*, edited

to have continued either in ceremonial or in official imagery.

Representations of a person holding his own mount by the reins are relatively common in both classical and Byzantine art. Such a person may figure in a genre scene. For example in one of the mosaics at Piazza Amerina two young men in short tunics hold their horses by the bridle while a third offers incense before the statue of Artemis Agrotera.<sup>43</sup> Similarly Amazons are represented leading their horses on the diptychs of Anastasius.<sup>42</sup> But a representation of Constantine holding his own horse by the bridle cannot, to my mind, be cited as evidence of a traditional iconography of Constantine as *strator*.<sup>43</sup> The model for such a representation would have been some famous rider of Antiquity with his steed: Alexander with Bucephalus, Bellerophon with Pegasus, or — most likely of all — one of the Diocuri (Fig. 31 b).<sup>44</sup>

A groom in Byzantine iconography is, it would seem, simply a groom. He has no ceremonial function. Thus in the *Sacra Parallela* Ephraim is represented leading his concubine on an ass.<sup>45</sup> In the *Skylitzes matritensis*, a group escorts the emperor Michael III in one miniature; in another a groom conducts Abulfazir, who had been taken prisoner, to the emperor at the Bibliothèque Nationale the Levite of Ephraim is represented leading his concubine on an ass.<sup>46</sup> In the *Skylitzes matritensis*, a group escorts the emperor Michael III in one miniature; in another a groom conducts Abulfazir,

by C. DAREMBERG and E. SAGLIO, Paris, 1877-1910, II, 1.  
p. 264, fig. 2448 and 2449; *idem*, in *Encyclopédie dell'arte antica*, III, p. 174 and fig. 155 (IIIrd century sarcophagi in the Palazzo Mattei, Rome).

These themes pass into early Christian and Byzantine art. Bucerothas is represented in illustrated manuscripts of the Alexander Romance of the Pseudo-Marcianites, cf. WENTZELSKY, *op. cit.* above, particularly in *Marcellinus et Baius graecorum* 47, f. 8, according to fig. 108. Pegasus and Bellerophon figure upon ivory caskets with genre scenes, although the person holding a horse by the bridle on the Veroio casket is not Bellerophon. Cf. D. TAZZI-RICCI, *Art Byzantina* Parigi-Berlino, 1929, p. 302-303 and pl. 108-109. The same artist, for portraits of F. WIRTH, *Römisch-Byzantinische Skulpturen*, Berlin, 1929, p. 302-303 and pl. 108-109. The assimilation of a Christian sarcophagus at Arles, cf. E. LE BLANT, *Études sur les sarcophages chrétiens antiques de la ville d'Arles*, Paris, 1878, number XXXI, p. 36, 41 and pl. XXII, and upon another at Tortosa; cf. J. WILPERT, *Iconographia christiana antiqua*, Rome, 1929, p. 349 and fig. 217. The Diocletian would also have served as models for portraits of F. WIRTH, *Römisch-Byzantinische Skulpturen*, Darmstadt, 1908, pl. 12. The assimilation of a triumphal emperor or a victorious jockey with Antiochus Diocletian would be entirely in accordance with Amazonian tradition. Similarly a bucerothas representation of Amazon with their mounts (cf. above, note 142) would be in accordance with the traditions of Hellenistic genre art.

145. *Antinous graecor* 923, f. 377 illustrating *Indo-Greek*, *Antinous*, Berlin, 1919, 25-28; cf. KARWATZKAYN, "Zur Frage des Einflusses jüdischer Bildwerke auf die Illustration des Alten Testaments," in *Mnemosyne* (cf. note 129), p. 408 and pl. 16A.

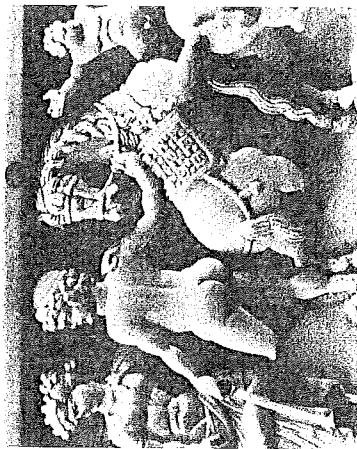


FIG. 31b. — Rider and mount. Detail of Veroli casket.  
London, Victoria and Albert Museum.



FIG. 31 a. — Sarcophagus of M. Myrius Lollianus. Louvre, Galerie Mollien.



卷之三

FIG. 31 C.—Journey to Bethlehem. Detail of Throne of Maximian. Ravenna, Museo Arcivescovile.

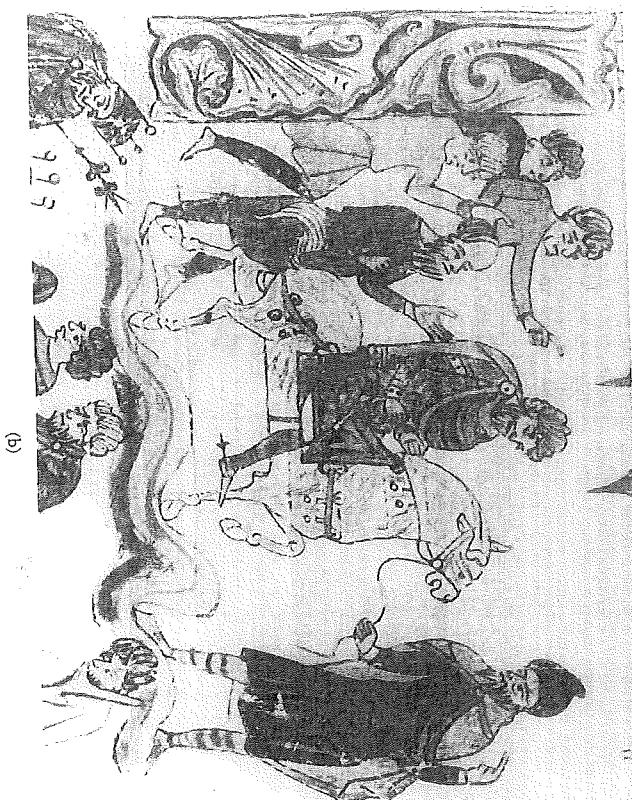


FIG. 32. — Aman and Mordecai: a) fresco (detail), synagogue, Dura-Europos;

b) Parfa Bible, *Vaticanus latinus* 5729, f. 319v.



FIG. 33. — Sarcophagus of T. Flavius.

Byzantine emperor<sup>146</sup>. Earlier still in the synagogue of Dura-Europos Haman is represented leading Mordecai through the streets of Babylon (Fig. 32a, b). Dr Kraeling remarks that "in introducing at the right of the rider the man who leads the horse, the artist has made his most significant departure from the traditional composition of scenes of imperial triumph"<sup>147</sup>. It seems, however, clear that the Hebrew text of the *Book of Esther* countenances this departure from the traditional of Imperial iconography; perhaps it is significant that the Greek Septuagint text does not say explicitly that Haman actually leads Mordecai through

<sup>146</sup> *Syriacus marianensis*, f. 78 recto, cit. note 79; no. 198; cf. PG 122, 1062; *Ibid.*, f. 136 (ad alio no. 343; cf. here note 102). For examples of a groom holding a beast without a rider cf. Joseph's son leading a pack-mule in the Return from Egypt in the *Karne Diani* (P.A. Underwood, *The Karne Diani*, New York, 1966, p. 105 and pl. 202); and the young man holding the horses of the Magi in the Adoration scene in Saint Nicolas' Orphéos, Thessaloniki (T. VELMAN, "Les fresques de Saint-Nicolas Opheos," in CA XVI, p. 167, fig. 24).

<sup>147</sup> C.H. Kraeling, *The Excavation at Dura-Europos, Final Report, VIII, 1, The Synagogue*, New Haven, 1956, p. 131, *et seqq.*, especially p. 154, pl. XVII and LXIV.

<sup>148</sup> *Ester*, 6, 11. The sense of the Hebrew is: "bring on horseback, faire chevauchier". The text, however, of the Segond is: "veillez faire entrer tout le troupeau dans l'arceau".

<sup>149</sup> Cf. *Vulg. Lat.*, 3729, f. 519v (*The Repell or Farta Bible*) which dates from the first half of the Xth century. In this example, besides Haman leading Mordecai's mount, there are three figures on the left with an arm raised in a gesture of acclamation (W. NÜTZSCH, *Die kaukasischen des Lureccles*, in *Revue des études anciennes*, LXII, 1922, pp. 126 and p. 102).

the street<sup>148</sup>. I know of no illuminated Byzantine text of the *Book of Esther*; I cannot therefore say how this scene would have been interpreted at Constantinople. However, in two Western manuscripts Haman is represented, as at Dura-Europos, leading Mordecai's horse. The better example is in the Parfa Bible<sup>149</sup>.

In one or two cases there may be seen in Roman funerary art a scene in which a groom is leading a mounted horse (Fig. 33). There, for example, the sarcophagus of T. Flavius Verus, formerly at the Lateran Museum, and that of an unidentified person upon a relief in the Termi Museum<sup>150</sup>. The relationship be-

<sup>150</sup> "ultimo viaggio nell'arte sepolcrale romana," in *Atti della conferenza Accademia romana di archeologia, Rendiconti III*, 1924-1925, 61 et seq., and *I sarcophagi cristiani antichi*, III, *Supplemento*, Rome, 1936, p. 18 and pl. CCLXXXIII, 8, and by D.E.L. HAYNES (*Mots en Victoria*, in *Papers of the British School of Rome*, XX, 1939, p. 27-33) as the journey beyond the Tomb. Haynes also cites two other sarcophagi now lost and known only from drawings. Unfortunately it does not seem possible to accept Poincaré's identification, nor, by consequence, Haynes's inference that the introduction of these elements from imperial triumphal imagery into a funerary theme reflects the development of a more optimistic attitude towards death.

P. VERNE ("Iconographie de la Transparence antique et des Lureccles," in *Revue des études anciennes*, LXII, 1922, pp. 126 and p. 102).

tween these different sorts of scene which bear a resemblance to the *Adventus* needs further investigation than is possible here. For example the representation of M. Mylius Lollimus in the Galerie Mollin of the Louvre is certainly a summary version of the *Transvectio equum* (Fig. 31 a).<sup>151</sup> However it would seem that this same iconography was used in Etruscan funerary art, while upon a stela at Chester there is represented a legionary whose mount is probably

p. 100-110 and pl. VII, VIII, IX) argues convincingly that these scenes in fact represent the ceremony by which the youth whose equestrian portrait is represented on each sarcophagus was admitted to this order. The absence of a groom leading the horse in some of these scenes suggests that he had no specific rôle in the ceremony. It also follows that we have no grounds for supposing that the presence of a groom leading the mount defines the scene in question.

<sup>151</sup> A. HÉRON DE VILLEFOSSE, *Bulletin de la Société Nationale des Antiquaires de France*, 1904, p. 320-323; R.P. WRIGHT and I.A. RICHMOND, Catalogue of the Roman Imperial Stone in the Grosvenor Museum, Chester, Chester, 1955, p. 40, no. 91 and pl. 26; TOWNSEND, op. cit. no. 86, p. 194. The attitude and proportions are highly reminiscent of Greek models, while the groom wears a pointed hat.

<sup>152</sup> J. WILPERT, op. cit. note 150, p. 181 and pl. XIV. Monsieur Paul Veuve suggests in a private letter that this scene is the *Procesion of a magistrate*. The absence of a groom leading the horse in some of these scenes suggests that he had no specific rôle in the ceremony. It also follows that we have no grounds for supposing that the presence of a groom leading the mount defines the scene in question.

<sup>153</sup> G. W. MORATH, Die Maximinuskathedra in Ravenna, Freiburg im Breisgau, 1940, p. 41; VOLBACH, op. cit. note 142, number 140, p. 68 and pl. 43; A. GRABAR, Christian Iconography, cf. note 78, p. 101-102 and pl. 259. Numerous examples can be cited where Joseph is depicted at the Bibliothèque nationale, while closely resembling the Ravenna ivory in most other respects, does not include an angel *strator* (cf. VOLBACH, op. cit. above, number 77, p. 46 and pl. 23).

<sup>154</sup> I am concerned here only to establish the fact that a *strator* often figures in the iconography of journeys, and particularly in the Journey to Bethlehem and the Flight to Egypt. In a subsequent article I shall attempt a closer study of place of the *strator* in these two subjects. The fact that the Virgin's mount is led sometimes by Joseph and at others by an angel or his son suggests that the artists drew their inspiration from a variety of different literary sources.

<sup>155</sup> Ordo Romanae I, 8 (M. ANDREU, *Les Ordines Romains du Haut Moyen Âge*, II, Lavaud, 1948, p. 70), 159; Liber Pontificalis, edited by L. DUCHESNE, I, Paris, 1925, p. 447.

<sup>156</sup> See above, p. 125. One can readily understand why the practice of the emperor acting as *strator* for the patriarch never passed into Constantinopolitan ceremonial and official art. However apparently this practice did occur in the Sunday liturgy in Russia (cf. KANTOROWICZ, "The King's *Advent*," *erk. cit.*, note 129, p. 19).

<sup>157</sup> Dr Rainer Stichel kindly drew my attention to a legend

being led by a groom.<sup>152</sup> Again in the series of biographical scenes upon the sarcophagi of Gorgonius at Arconia there is one where the rider is preceded by a *strator* and followed by a *pedissequus*.<sup>153</sup>

We are up against one of the principal difficulties in the study of iconography: the ambiguity of scenes which are not accompanied by an epigraph. Only a negative conclusion can be drawn, that a *strator*, even if he figures in an official scene in Antique art, has not a clear ceremonial function. If he leads the mount of a young equestrian, it is more probably for the practical reason that the mount had to be steadied. It was in fact in these terms that the office of the lay *strator* in papal ceremonial was to be explained.

The presence of a person leading the Virgin's mount in scenes of the Journey to Bethlehem and also of the Flight to Egypt is to be explained in the same way. According to the apocryphal *Proto-Gospel of Saint James*: "Joseph saddled the ass and seated Mary upon it. His son led the beast and Samuel followed".<sup>154</sup> This description provided the basis for the Journey to Bethlehem. Since this Gospel has no account of the Flight to Egypt, artists often adapted the scene for the Journey to Bethlehem. On the other hand the apocryphal *Gospel of Saint Matthew*<sup>155</sup> would have been the source for the representation of the Journey to Bethlehem on the Throne of Maximian at Ravenna (Fig. 31 c). An angel with a staff, resembling the groom on the sarcophagus of Flavius Verus, holds the reins to steady the ass while Joseph helps the Virgin to dismount.<sup>156</sup> Numerous examples can be cited where Joseph or his son acts as *strator* in Italy and Cappadocia.<sup>157</sup>

We first hear of the ceremonial office of

<sup>152</sup> Cf. note 150.

<sup>153</sup> Cf. note 150.

<sup>154</sup> Cf. note 142, number 140, p. 68 and pl. 43; A. GRABAR, Christian Iconography, cf. note 78, p. 101-102 and pl. 259.

<sup>155</sup> Cf. note 143, number 7, *Lac evanueli apocriptorum*, edited by A. DIE SANTOS, Biblioteca de autores cristianos, Madrid, 1926, p. 174.

<sup>156</sup> Cf. note 143, number 7, *Lac evanueli apocriptorum*, edited by A. DIE SANTOS, Biblioteca de autores cristianos, Madrid, 1926, p. 174.

<sup>157</sup> Cf. note 143, number 7, *Lac evanueli apocriptorum*, edited by A. DIE SANTOS, Biblioteca de autores cristianos, Madrid, 1926, p. 174.

iconography, has its own vocabulary and structure. Nor is it necessary to demonstrate that Christian art, as all branches of Christian culture, developed in the climate of Hellenistic culture. A primary problem was to "translate" Semitic ideas into Hellenistic terms. Since Semitic culture lacked an iconographical tradition, the problem was peculiarly delicate in the realm of art.

Generally Christian artists transposed directly the themes of Imperial and pagan imagery, making Christ an Emperor or a Doctor, his Apostles courtiers or disciples and so on. However when it was necessary to state in terms of iconography the relationship between Church and Empire, difficulties arose. I have described elsewhere the solutions proposed at Byzantium for the representation of occupying emperors, which were an institution at imperial councils, which were an institution at once of the Church and of the Empire. Here I attempt no more than to contribute some of the material necessary for the study of the imagery used at different periods to make manifest the political authority of the pope. I have emphasized the curious anomaly that the notions expressed in the *Constitution Constantini*, surely current at the time, find no expression in the programme of the Triclinium of Leo III. This programme is dominated by the theme of the Mission of the Apostles, an Early Christian adaptation of Antique themes: Christ as Emperor and Doctor invests and instructs his apostles. What is unusual in this programme is the insistence on Investiture. The role attributed at Byzantium to the Apostles is rather that of evangelizing and baptizing all nations.

The iconographical programme does not call in question the theory of a double authority: an *imperium* and a *sacerdotium*. Possibly this is not surprising in the VIIIth century. In his *Letter to Leo III Charlemagne* explains that his office is to defend the Church of Christ against the attacks of pagans and infidels, while the pope, like Moses, prays that the Christian people may be victorious over the enemies of the *Spectulum Magnam*. In the Polish version the Virgin herself holds the reins of the horse of a young warrior whom she had cured of a criminal passion. In the Russian translation this detail is omitted as unworthy of God (cf. O.A. DRABYAN, *Vellives versado i ego russkoj poezii*, Moscow, 1965, p. 51).

<sup>158</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>159</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>160</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>161</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>162</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>163</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>164</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>165</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>166</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>167</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>168</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>169</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>170</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>171</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>172</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>173</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>174</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>175</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>176</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>177</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>178</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>179</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>180</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>181</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>182</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>183</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>184</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>185</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>186</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>187</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>188</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>189</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>190</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>191</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>192</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>193</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>194</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>195</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>196</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>197</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>198</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>199</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>200</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>201</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>202</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>203</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>204</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>205</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>206</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>207</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>208</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>209</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>210</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>211</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>212</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>213</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>214</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>215</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>216</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>217</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>218</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>219</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>220</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>221</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>222</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>223</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>224</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>225</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>226</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>227</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>228</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>229</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>230</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>231</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>232</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>233</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>234</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>235</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>236</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>237</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>238</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>239</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>240</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>241</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>242</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>243</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>244</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>245</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>246</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>247</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>248</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>249</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>250</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>251</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>252</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>253</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>254</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>255</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>256</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>257</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>258</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>259</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>260</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>261</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>262</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>263</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>264</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>265</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>266</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>267</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>268</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>269</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>270</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>271</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>272</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>273</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>274</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>275</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>276</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>277</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>278</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>279</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>280</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>281</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>282</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>283</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>284</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>285</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>286</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>287</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>288</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>289</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>290</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>291</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>292</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>293</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>294</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>295</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>296</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>297</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>298</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>299</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>300</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>301</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>302</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>303</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>304</sup> Cf. note 129, p. 19.

<sup>305</sup> Cf. note 129, p

God, so that the name of Jesus Christ may be glorified throughout the world<sup>151</sup>. The inscription accompanying the Trichinium mosaic asking Saint Peter to grant victory to Charlemagne is in accordance with these sentiments.<sup>152</sup> However it is perhaps significant that it is Peter who in fact crowns Charlemagne in the Trichinium mosaic. In official Byzantine art this office is performed by an angel if not by Christ himself.<sup>153</sup> The way is therefore left open for the notion that it is the right of Peter's successors to crown those of Charlemagne, as indeed Leo III was himself to crown Charlemagne.

A timelag in the translation of ideas into imagery as well as a certain reluctance to abandon established formulae are well attested in the history of official art. It took an upheaval analogous to that of Iconoclasm in the East to modify the official imagery of the Papacy. The authority conferred by Constantine upon Pope Sylvester in the *Constitution*, particularly as manifested externally by the use of the *frigium* and the throne, was the basis of Papal propaganda during the Investiture controversy. Popes were in fact represented for the first time seated upon a throne in the second half of the Xth century.<sup>154</sup> This development is one of the curiosities of iconography. For the attributes of the terrestrial emperor, given in iconography to the Emperor of Heaven, are now adopted by the Bishop of Rome, who for some time had been using the title, also used by Byzantine emperors, of Vicar of Christ.<sup>155</sup>

It seems impossible that the person who devised for Callixtus III the iconographical programme of the Chapel of Saint Nicolas and of the Audience Hall was unfamiliar with the imagery used at Byzantium to express the triumph of Orthodoxy. I have attempted to show that Arnulf of Lisioux was aware of its overtones. Nevertheless this programme introduces certain innovations: a literal "translation" of the Jewish image of an enemy serving as a *sabellum* was contrary to the norms of Hellenistic and Byzantine art, while a Concordat between Church and Empire was unthinkable at Constantinople, where relations between emperor and patriarch were governed in theory at least by the *Ecclesiægge*.<sup>156</sup>

The representation of the Donation of Constantine in the portico of the Lateran Palace seems to interpret the *Constitutum Constantini* as analogous to the Concordat of Worms. However it is only part of a programme which situates the Donation in the progressive unravelling of the Providential Plan. In fact a theory of history, the product of decadent Hellenistic Stoicism and adapted by Eusebius to the Christian Empire, has been transposed to suit the needs of Papal political propaganda.<sup>157</sup> Henceforth, in the West at least, it is the Pope who is the chief instrument of Providence. Basing himself upon the *Constitutum*, he exercises, parallel to the spiritual authority which he has received as successor of Peter, a temporal jurisdiction.

Evidently such an argument — that an emperor had conferred power upon a pope — became embarrassing once the popes had established themselves *de facto* as well as *de jure* as supreme authority in the West. However it does not seem to have occurred to the Latins, any more than to the Greeks, at this time to doubt the authenticity of the *Constitutum Constantini*.<sup>158</sup> Papal apologists sought rather to assimilate it to an Apostolic and particularly to Saints Peter and Paul. In fact the popes now preferred to base their authority uniquely upon that which Christ gave to the Apostles. The notion of a secular *imperium* has been eliminated from official iconography in Rome. There was, of course, no parallel for this at Byzantium, where Constantine to the end retained his place as the paragon of the Christian emperor.

However the *Constitutum Constantini* was not forgotten. It could be used as an argument against papal claims: what an emperor had granted an emperor could withdraw. This argument was not only anterior to the pontifical authority was not only anterior to

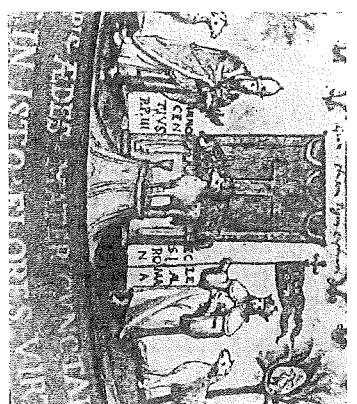
the imperial authority but also wider and of greater dignity.<sup>159</sup>

Innocent III had the mosaics of the apse of Saint Peter's restored. It is perhaps worth noticing in passing one detail of this restoration. While there is some uncertainty as to the exact programme, the resemblance between copies and the scenes on the *Pola* casket justify the supposition that the original programme was largely respected.<sup>160</sup> However there must have been one change. In the lower part there is a throne upon which is placed a cross; in front of it is a Lamb (Fig. 34). To the right of the throne stands a crowned figure with a banner; to the left stands a pope wearing a mitre, his arms outstretched in a gesture of adoration. To the right and the left are lambs. If the figure on the right existed in the original plan it might have been an emperor, while the figure on the left would have been the pope during whose pontificate the original mosaics were executed. In the restored version, however, the figure with a banner is not an emperor, as in the investiture scene in the Trichinium of Leo III, but *Ecclesia Romana*; the pope is, of course, Innocent III.

There is a further point of interest. The lambs to left and right symbolize Apostles.

Innocent III and *Ecclesia Romana* are therefore integrated into a scene which belongs to the iconography of the Apostles. Further the two figures either side of Christ's throne were normally: Saints Peter and Paul. Since such representations exist still — and already existed in Innocent III's time — in Santa Maria Maggiore and in the Chapel of Santo Zeno at San Prassede, the significance would not be lost upon Innocent III's contemporaries: the Pope is assimilated to an Apostle and particularly to Saints Peter and Paul. In fact the popes now preferred to base their authority uniquely upon that which Christ gave to the Apostles. The Curia Cf. J.A. Cantrill, "De autonomia sacerdotum et de romani Pontificis plenitudo in temporibus secundum Innocentium IV," in *Sakramentum*, 23, 1961, p. 406-170. W.N. SCHUMACHER, "Eine römische Apiskomposition," in *Römische Quellenkritik*, 54, 1959, p. 172-202; T. BURBESSENG, "Le coffret enivoire de Pôles, Saint-Pierre et le Larzac," in CA XI, 1959, p. 157-195; A. ANGOLINI, "La capsule émaillée du Palais Borgia, 1970," in *Dictionnaire de l'art et de l'archéologie latinesque*, VII (1973) *Aggr. cui loca... pontificale au mieux les sentiments que l'on avait à la cour de l'empereur*, les sonnantes que l'on avait à la cour de l'Église et de l'Etat. Those who do not attribute the brief to Innocent IV himself at least suppose it to have been drawn up in the Papal language used in this brief and the difficulty of access to the text, it seems worth while giving some extracts: ... Non mihi quisquid omnino longe maioris potestissime credendum est eternum Christi pontificis in fundatissima Petri sed sub gallos ordinatum. Quam inventum illud quod fugit legalius temporali serviebat, et tamen circum est, a Deo illius temporis pontifice fungendus.

FIG. 34. — INNOCENT III AND *ECCLESIA ROMANA* ASSIMILATED TO SAINTS PETER AND PAUL. *APSE MOSAIC* (DETAIL) AFTER CAMPANINI. CHURCH OF SAINT PETER, ROME.



ment was in fact used against Innocent IV. He — or one of his Curial officials — felt obliged to go even further than Innocent III in limiting the import of the *Constitutum*.

From the beginning, it is argued in *Aeger cui loca*, the Apostolic See had been endowed by Christ with both pontifical and regal authority.<sup>161</sup> On the other hand Constantine

151. *Actum Epistola*, 93, *Epistola*, IV, *Kerlindis Aevi* II, edited by E. DUBAILLER, Berlin, 1893, p. 156-157; cf. LAMBERT, op. cit., note 108, p. 123.

152. BEATRICE PETTE, DONAS VITAM LEONI PAPÆ ET VICTORIAM CARIOLO REGI DONAS, cf. LADNER, op. cit. note 108, p. 118-124.

153. Cf. A. GRABAR, *L'empereur*, pl. XXIII.

154. LADNER, op. cit. note 108, p. 124.

155. Cf. M. MACKENZIE, *Vianus Christi*, Rome, 1952.

156. Cf. A. GRABAR, "L'art religieux et l'empire byzantin à l'époque des Macédoniens," in *L'art de la fin de l'Antiquité*, Paris, 1958, p. 160-163; J. WALTER, "Les moines de l'abbaye de Moutier-Grandval, voiliers 'Sauvegarde' et 'Kerkele' ancrent en hiver 1066-1067," in *Revue Archéologique*, 22, 1970, p. 26-29.

157. F. DVORAK, *Early Christian and Byzantine Political Philosophy*, Washington, 1966, p. 600 et seq.; cf. R.A. MARKS, *Sacraeum. History and Society in the Theology of Saint Augustine*, Cambridge, 1970, p. 1-21; cf. WALTER, op. cit. note 165, p. 22-25.

158. The only exception would seem to be Leo of Vercelli (died 1056), who argued the case against the authenticity of the *Constitutum Constantini* on behalf of Otto III.

before his conversion had exercised not a legitimate authority but a tyranny. On his conversion he humbly resigned this authority to the Church together with the regalia which were its sign. Innocent IV, as Christ's Vicar and Peter's successor, continued to exercise this authority and to use the appropriate regalia.

It is possible that this interpretation of the *Constitutum Constantini* is reflected in two of

the pictures which have been described in the course of this study. In the mosaic of the Donation once in the Lateran portico, pope Sylvester is already enthroned and wearing the tiara, although the document which he is receiving from Constantine is the one which was to confer these very privileges upon him. Similarly it may be that in the fresco in the Chapel of Saint Sylvester, executed during the pontificate of Innocent IV himself, Constantine is represented not as conferring a crown upon the pope but as resigning his authority to him. However this may be, we may see in the pictures which have been the subject of this study a wealth of interest both for the historian and for the iconographer, since by adapting traditional representations of ceremonial and symbols they reveal the changing notions of the Roman pontiffs upon what will always be a controversial question — the relationship between Church and State.

constitutum monachorum, beato Petro eiusque successoribus terreni suum ac celstis imperii cognitis habens, ut per unam quam in temporalibus super terram per reliquam, quam in spiritualibus super celos acceptimus, intelligatur Christus vicarius iudicis potestiam accepisse. Verum idem Constantinus, per fidem Christi catholice incorporatus ecclesie, illam in coenam tyrannidem, qua fors ante illegitime uebatur, humiliare ecclesie, assenerat, in cuius resignatione memoria signaculum et plenum trionfis mystice sacramentum relicit ab eo schematis principali insignia pro venerabilis anteriorum patrum similitudine retinens, et recipit induit a Christo vicario, successore videlicet Petri ordinatum divinitus imperii potestatem, qua deinceps ad vindicatam malorum, laudem vero bonorum, legitime uecteur et qui pius abutebatur posseta permissa deinde fungetur auctoritate concessa... (I.B. LO GRASSO, *Ecclesia et Stetit: fontes iuris canonici publici ecclastizici*, Rome, 1952, p. 194-198).

It is possible that this interpretation of the *Constitutum Constantini* is reflected in two of the pictures which have been described in the course of this study. In the mosaic of the Donation once in the Lateran portico, pope Sylvester is already enthroned and wearing the tiara, although the document which he is receiving from Constantine is the one which was to confer these very privileges upon him. Similarly it may be that in the fresco in the Chapel of Saint Sylvester, executed during the pontificate of Innocent IV himself, Constantine is represented not as conferring a crown upon the pope but as resigning his authority to him. However this may be, we may see in the pictures which have been the subject of this study a wealth of interest both for the historian and for the iconographer, since by adapting traditional representations of ceremonial and symbols they reveal the changing notions of the Roman pontiffs upon what will always be a controversial question — the relationship between Church and State.

## LE SOUVENIR DU II<sup>e</sup> CONCILE DE NICÉE DANS L'ICONOGRAPHIE BYZANTINE

Le synode, réuni à Nicée du 24 septembre au 23 octobre 787, sous l'égide de l'impératrice Irène et du patriarche Taraise, favorables au culte des icônes, a affirmé qu'il est possible de faire une représentation figurée du Christ, Homme-Dieu, ainsi que des saints. Il a affirmé aussi que la pratique d'offrir un culte aux « icônes » remontait aux origines du christianisme, et il a confirmé les six premiers conciles œcuméniques. Cependant, comme on le sait, après la mort en 802 de l'empératrice, et surtout lors de l'accession au trône de l'empereur Léon V en 813, les iconoclastes l'ont emporté à nouveau sur les iconophiles. Il fallut attendre l'accession de Michel III en 842 et la convocation d'un synode en 843 par le patriarche Méthode, qui confirma les décisions du synode de Nicée, pour que la victoire des iconophiles soit définitive.

Le synode de Nicée marque donc la fin de la période que les historiens contemporains sont convenus d'appeler celle du premier iconoclase. Entre 787 et 813, les iconophiles ont-ils eu le temps de recommencer à peindre des icônes et de réparer les dégâts des décennies précédentes ? Peu de traces nous restent de l'art de la fin du VIII<sup>e</sup> siècle<sup>1</sup>. Toutefois, si mon hypothèse est correcte, le modèle pour les trois psautiers à illustration marginale, datés du IX<sup>e</sup> siècle, aurait été exécuté à cette époque en Palestine<sup>2</sup>. Ces psautiers nous offrent certainement le témoi-

1. R. GORMACK, « The Arts during the Age of Iconoclasm », *Iconoclasm*, éd. A. Bayet & Judith Herrin, Birmingham, 1977, p. 40.  
2. Ch. WALTER, « "Later-day" Saints and the Image of Christ in the Ninth-century Byzantine Marginal Psalters », *Revue des études byzantines* 45, 1987 (sous presse).

gnage le plus éclatant de l'existence d'un art, dont le programme reflète les préoccupations doctrinales des iconophiles<sup>3</sup>. L'*imago clipeata* du Christ revêt dans le programme comme un leitmotiv. Les artistes s'en servent pour représenter la vision d'un prophète, ainsi que celle d'un saint. Juxtaposée à de nombreuses miniatures représentant des événements de la vie du Christ, sujets interprétés par l'interprétation typologique des Psaumes, l'*imago clipeata* n'est pas strictement une icône. Elle est plutôt un symbole de la présence virtuelle du Christ. On peut identifier dans le programme de ces peintres plusieurs allusions aux écrits des théologiens palestiniens, notamment à ceux de saint Jean Damascène et de Jean de Jérusalem. Par ailleurs, les scènes polémiques contre l'iconoclisme — la pratique de la simonie, par exemple, et la deuxième Passion du Christ, crucifié par les iconoclastes — reflètent surtout les préoccupations des iconophiles du VIII<sup>e</sup> siècle.<sup>4</sup> Toutefois, il serait difficile d'établir une relation directe entre le programme de ces peintres et les décisions du synode de Nicée, où l'on n'avait pas cité les écrits de saint Jean Damascène.<sup>5</sup> Lorsque le modèle a été recopié au IX<sup>e</sup> siècle, sans doute à Constantinople, pour nous donner le psautier Chlousov et le psautier Pantocrator, les artistes ont ajouté quelques miniatures historiques<sup>6</sup>. Cependant, dans ces miniatures, on ne trouve aucune allusion aux héros iconophiles du premier iconoclisme. C'est le triomphe du patriarche Nicéphore sur l'iconoclaste notoire Jean le Grammaire que célèbrent ces miniatures. Nicéphore foule aux pieds son adversaire, en portant la main gauche l'*imago clipeata* du Christ. Ainsi est-il présenté comme le véritable triomphateur des iconoclastes. A part ces miniatures, on ne trouve que peu d'exemples d'un art triomphal au IX<sup>e</sup> siècle, comme celui situé dans la salle d'audience au palais impérial, décoré en mosaïque sous Michel III (842-867). D'après une épigramme, « le Christ a été représenté triomphant. Il confond les hérésies ténébreuses. Anges, apôtres, martyrs et prêtres surveillent la salle »<sup>7</sup>. Les mots « hérésies ténébreuses » font, sans doute, allusion à l'iconoclisme.

Il est bien connu que l'art du IX<sup>e</sup> siècle était en général conservateur<sup>8</sup>. L'Eglise voulait affirmer la continuité et, dans ce but, les artistes recopiaient les peintures qui avaient survécu à l'iconoclisme. Toutefois, dans le même but, ils intégraient aux

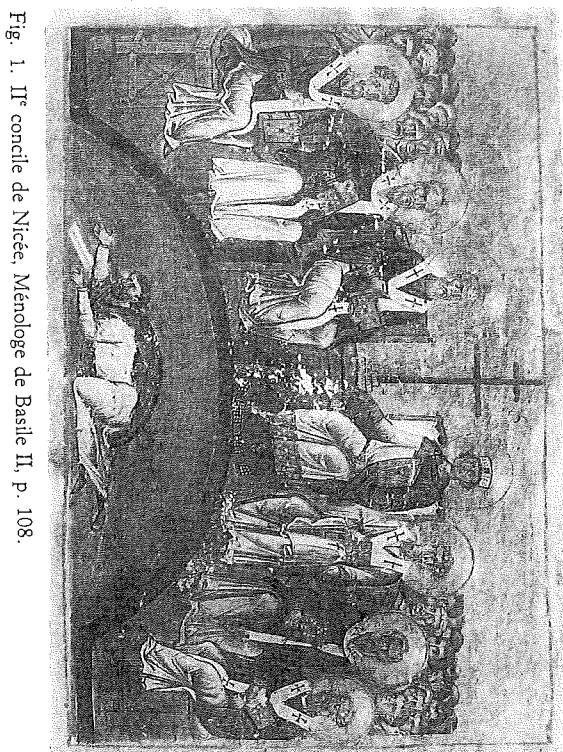


Fig. 1. II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée, Ménologe de Basile II, p. 108.

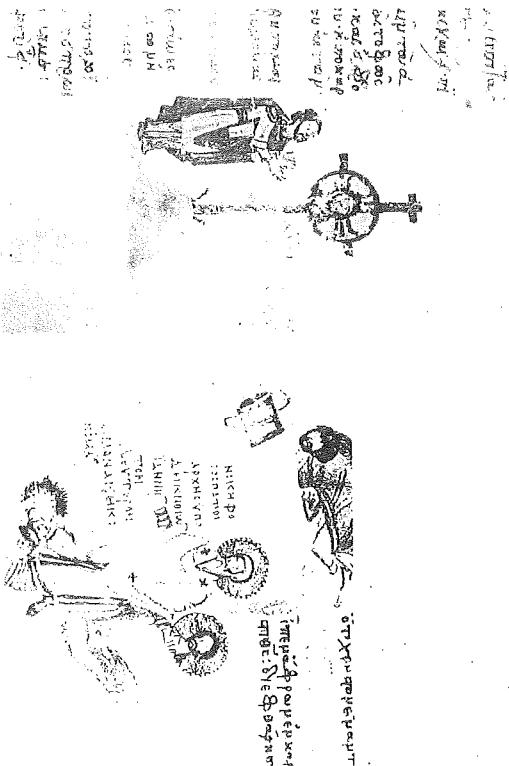


Fig. 2. David prophétise le Christ. Psautier Chlousov, f° 4.

Fig. 3. Nicéphore pliéant l'iconoclaste Jean le Grammaire. Psautier Chlousov, f° 51 v<sup>o</sup>.

3. A. GRABAR, *L'iconoclisme, dossier archéologique*, Paris, 1957, p. 228-233.  
4. J. GOURLARD, « Art et littérature théologique à Byzance au lendemain de la querelle des images », *Génies de civilisation médiévale* 5, 1962, p. 5.  
5. P. VAN DEN VEN, « La peinture et l'hagiographie au concile de Nicée en 787 », *Byzantion* 25-27, 1955-1957, p. 336-338.  
6. GRABAR, op. cit. (n. 3), p. 196-202.  
7. C. MANGO, *The Art of the Byzantine Empire 312-1453*, Englewood Cliffs, 1972, p. 184.  
8. R. CORMACK, « Painting after Iconoclasm », op. cit. (n. 1), p. 147-163.

programmes décoratifs les saints iconophiles. Par exemple, dans une salle à côté de l'église Sainte-Sophie de Constantinople, les patriarches Germain, Tarasie, Nicéphore et Méthode rejoignent, autour du Christ, la Sainte Vierge, saint Jean-Baptiste et d'autres saints<sup>9</sup>. Ces mosaïques auraient été exécutées vers 870 pendant le règne de Basile I<sup>er</sup> (867-886).

L'influence des définitions de Nicée est surtout manifeste dans le nouvel essor qu'elle a donné au culte des saints. Le synaxaire des saints de l'Église de Constantinople est progressivement établi, et on y introduit les saints iconophiles qui avaient défendu, souvent de leur sang, la cause des icônes<sup>10</sup>. Il est à noter que l'on ne distinguait guère les saints du premier de ceux du second iconoclasme. Notre premier grand témoin dans l'iconographie de l'introduction des saints iconophiles au synaxaire est le fameux *Ménologe* de Basile II (976-1025), le *Vatikić. gr.* 1613, dans lequel chaque brève *Vie* est illustrée d'une miniature<sup>11</sup>. Les saints iconophiles commémorés dans ce synaxaire sont les suivants : Nicétas de Paphlagonie (763-838)<sup>12</sup>, Théodore Studite (759-826)<sup>13</sup>, Etienne le Jeune (715-764)<sup>14</sup>, Théodore Grapios (775-844)<sup>15</sup>, l'impératrice Théodora (800-867)<sup>16</sup>, et le patriarche Tarasie (730-800)<sup>17</sup>. L'iconographie varie d'un saint à l'autre. Pour Théodore le Studite, l'artiste a représenté la translation de ses reliques. Tarasie figure en prière ; pour Théodore Grapios, il y a un simple portrait. Le moine Nicétas et l'impératrice Théodora, en revanche, sont représentés en véritables triomphauteurs, car l'un et l'autre tiennent de la main gauche l'*imago clipeata* du Christ. Pour Étienne le Jeune et ses compagnons, il a préféré une scène de martyre. Leur commémoration est suivie de celle d'un autre groupe de saints iconophiles, illustrée elle aussi par une scène de martyre<sup>18</sup>.

Le plus frappant de ces types iconographiques est certainement celui du moine Nicétas et de l'impératrice Théodora. Nous voyons que, même à la fin du X<sup>e</sup> siècle, lorsqu'on a peint les miniatures du *Ménologe* de Basile II, l'*imago clipeata* du Christ était encore le *palladium* des iconophiles triomphants. Cependant, par la suite, de



Fig. 4. Évêques iconophiles. Église Sainte-Sophie, Constantinople  
(Dumbarton Oaks, Center for Byzantine Studies, Washington).

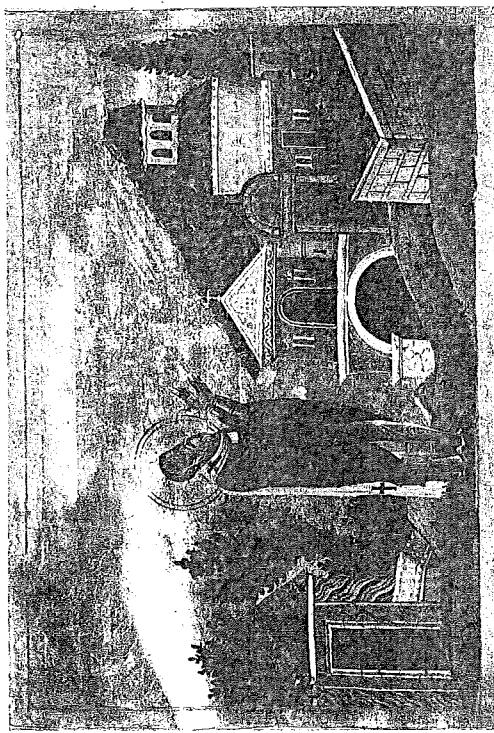


Fig. 5. Le patriarche Tarasie, Ménologe de Basile II, p. 423. (Bibliothèque Vaticane, archives photographiques).

9. R. CORNACK, E.J.W. HAWKINS, « The Mosaics of St Sophia at Istanbul : the Rooms above the Southwest Vestibule and Ramp » *Dumbarton Oaks Papers* 31, 1977, p. 231.

10. *Le Typicon de la Grande Église*, éd. J. MAEUS, Rome, 1962-1963.

11. *Il Menologio di Basile II*, éd. C. STORNAIOLI & P. FRACCI DE' CAVALCETI, Vatican-Milan, 1907 (cité ci-après : *Ménologe*).

12. *Ménologe*, p. 94, le 6 octobre ; *Bibliotheca sanctorum*, Rome, 1961-1970 (cité ci-après : *BS*), 9, 802-893 ; *PG* 117, 93.

13. *Ménologe*, p. 175, le 11 novembre ; *BS* 12, 265-270 ; *PG* 117, 156.

14. *Ménologe*, p. 210, le 28 novembre ; *BS* 11, 1402-1403 ; *PG* 117, 1402-1403.

15. *Ménologe*, p. 276, le 28 décembre ; *BS* 12, 284-285 ; *PG* 117, 229.

16. *Ménologe*, p. 392, le 11 février ; *BS* 12, 222-224 ; *PG* 117, 308.

17. *Ménologe*, p. 423, le 25 février ; *BS* 12, 127-131 ; *PG* 117, 328.

18. *Ménologe*, p. 211, le 28 novembre.

on a oublié, semble-t-il, la signification originale de cette façon de représenter le Christ. Elle est réservée à la représentation de la Sainte Face sur le *mandylion*, qui a été transférée sous le règne de l'empereur Constantin VII, le Porphyrogénète, à Constantiopolis<sup>19</sup>. Ce thème se répand; à partir du XI<sup>e</sup> siècle, on trouve dans presque toutes les églises une représentation du mandylion<sup>20</sup>. En revanche, sauf dans le cas où une miniature du IX<sup>e</sup> siècle est recopiée dans un manuscrit postérieur, l'*imago clavis peat* est remplacée par la représentation d'une véritable icône. Les enlumineurs des psautiers à illustration marginale du XI<sup>e</sup> siècle ont repris beaucoup de thèmes qui figuraient déjà dans les psautiers du IX<sup>e</sup> siècle, mais, lorsqu'ils ont innové, ils ont représenté des saints qui rendent un culte à une icône de forme rectangulaire<sup>21</sup>. Il est significatif que, dans les psautiers enluminés du XII<sup>e</sup> siècle, personne ne soit jamais représenté en train d'offrir un culte à une icône!

Au XII<sup>e</sup> siècle, on avait presque oublié les événements traumatisques du VIII<sup>e</sup> siècle. Il n'était plus nécessaire de défendre le culte des icônes; tout le monde les vénérait. Par conséquent, l'iconoclaste n'est plus l'ennemi le plus redoutable de l'orthodoxie. L'on revient aux origines de l'hérésie et de la division dans l'Eglise. Une nouvelle hérésie était assimilée plutôt à celle qui en était l'archétype : l'arianisme<sup>22</sup>. Dans les psautiers du XII<sup>e</sup> siècle, et par la suite dans la décoration des églises, Arius et les ariens figurent souvent. Il est donc évident que, pour un chrétien byzantin, telle que pour les historiens de notre époque.

Le souvenir de l'iconoclasme, à partir du XI<sup>e</sup> siècle, est surtout manifeste dans le culte des saints, et notamment des moines martyrs. Parmi ceux-ci, saint Etienne le Jeune et saint Théodore Grapto étaient le plus souvent représentés. Chacun avait son iconographie particulière. Saint Etienne est représenté frontallement ; de la main gauche il porte une icône<sup>23</sup>. C'est l'unique saint iconophile à être représenté de cette façon, ce qui pourrait faire penser que, pour les Byzantins du Moyen Age, il est devenu le défenseur par excellence du culte de l'icône. Il est intéressant que l'icône qu'il porte soit, le plus souvent, du type *Paracletis* (intercession)<sup>24</sup>. L'icône a deux volets ; l'un représente le Christ,

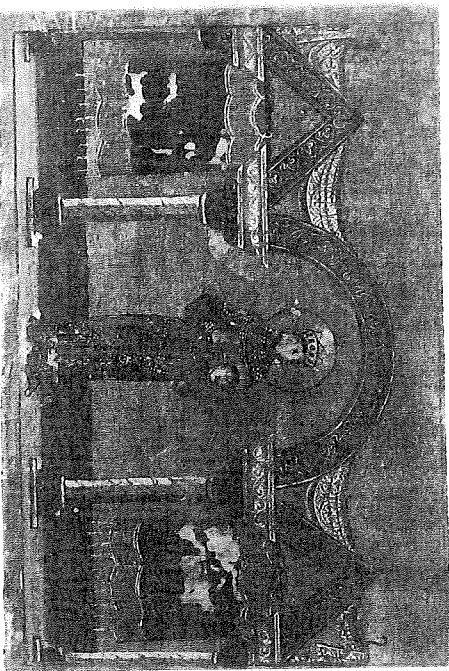


Fig. 6. L'impératrice Théodora, Ménologe de Basile II, p. 392.

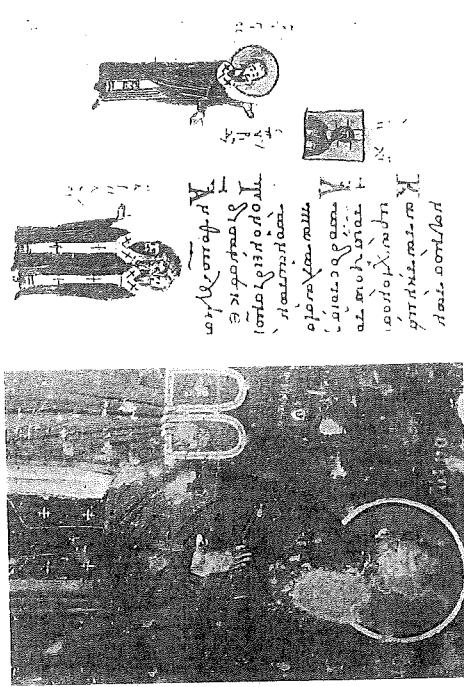


Fig. 8.

Fig. 7. Saint Spyridon et les ARIENS, psautier Barberini, f° 138 v° (École des Hautes Études, Paris, coll. chrétienne et byzantine).  
Fig. 8. Saint Etienne le Jeune. Église de Donja Kamenica, Serbie.

19. K. WEINMANN, « The Mandylion and Constantine Porphyrogenitus », *Cahiers archéologiques*, 11, 1960, p. 163-184.  
20. R. CORMACK, *Writing in Gold*, Londres, 1985, p. 124-125.  
21. STRAPLE DER NELESSIAN, *L'Illustration des psautiers grecs du Moyen Age*, II, Paris 1970, fig. 27, 117, 145, 153, 176, etc.  
22. CH. WALTER, *Art and Ritual of the Byzantine Church*, Londres, 1982, p. 214.  
23. GRABAR, *op. cit.* (n. 3), p. 202, fig. 141.  
24. CH. WALTER, « Further Notes on the Deesis », *Revue des études byzantines* 28, 1970, p. 167-168.

alors que l'autre représente la Sainte Vierge qui s'incline devant son Fils. Au début, le Christ, sur l'icône que tient saint Étienne, était représenté en portrait; par la suite, les artistes lui ont substitué le Christ de prière. Malgré tout, la signification de cette icône à deux volets reste inchangée : la Sainte Vierge intercède pour l'humanité. Or, les iconoclastes avaient mis en cause la valeur de la prière d'intercession. Les trois cent cinquante évêques réunis à Nicée en ont réaffirmé la valeur, mais, dans les débats de l'époque, la prière occupait moins de place que l'objet auquel elle était adressée — le portrait du Christ ou celui d'un saint. Deux siècles plus tard, il semble que l'on insistrait moins à Byzance sur la légitimité de l'icône même que sur la valeur de la prière.

Pour saint Théodore Grapios et son frère Théophane, la tradition iconographique est moins constante que pour Étienne le Jeune<sup>25</sup>. Tantôt Théodore est représenté en évêque, comme dans le *Mémoirage* de Basile II, tantôt en moine, comme dans le *Mémoirage* du mont Athos, Lava 51 D (427), folio 67<sup>26</sup>. Pour les deux frères, un cycle narratif est conservé dans le manuscrit enluminé de la *Chronique de Skylitzès* à Madrid. Curieusement, ce cycle n'inclut pas une miniature de l'incident qui a particulièrement impressionné leurs contemporains. L'empereur iconocaste Théophile a commandé que soient tatoués sur leur front des versets, qu'il avait composés lui-même. C'est à cette torture que fait allusion leur sobriquet « *Graptoi* ». Il nous reste toutefois deux miniatures du tatouage, car la scène est représentée à la fois dans le psautier de Londres et dans le psautier Barberini<sup>27</sup>.

Une comparaison du programme de ces deux psautiers à l'illustration marginale du XII<sup>e</sup> siècle avec celui des psautiers du IX<sup>e</sup> siècle nous offre un éloquent témoignage de l'évolution qui avait subie la spiritualité byzantine depuis le Triomphe de l'orthodoxie. Les rares saints qui figurent dans les psautiers du IX<sup>e</sup> siècle y sont la plupart, représentés en prière, s'adressant soit à une icône, soit directement au Christ. Le psautier, au IX<sup>e</sup> siècle, était naturellement utilisé comme livre de prière, mais il est évident que, pour ceux qui l'ont enluminé, c'était surtout un recueil de prophéties<sup>28</sup>. En revanche, au XII<sup>e</sup> siècle, l'aspect prophétique du psautier était presque ignoré ; c'était un livre de prière tout court,

<sup>25</sup> Ch. WALTER, « Saints of Second Iconoclasm in the Madrid Skylitzes », *Revue des études byzantines* 39, 1981, p. 311-313.

<sup>26</sup> DER NERSESSIAN, *op. cit.* (n. 21), p. 74-76, fig. 197.

<sup>27</sup> Ch. WALTER, « Christological Themes in the Byzantine Marginal Psalters from the Ninth to the Eleventh Century », *Revue des études byzantines* 44, 1986, p. 269-284.

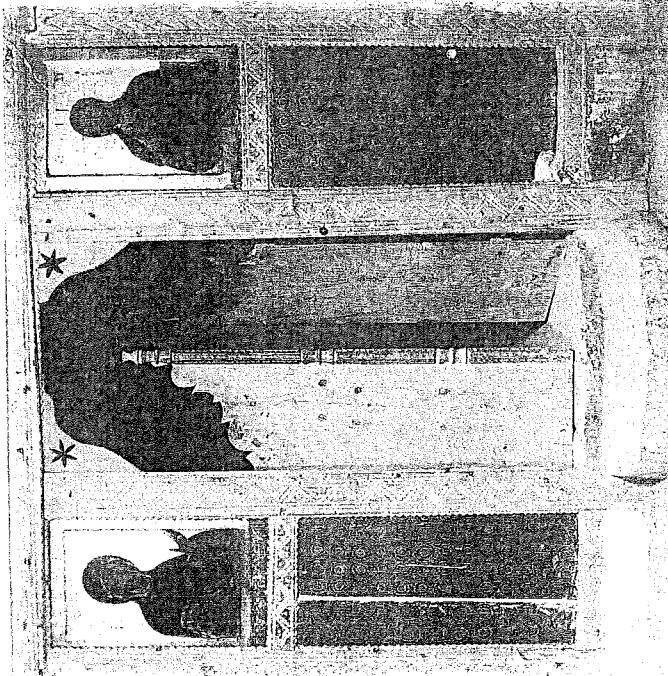


Fig. 9. Vierge Paracletis. Église Saint-Néophyre, Chypre.



Fig. 10. Martyrs iconophiles, Ménoïque de Basile II, p. 211 (Bibliothèque Vaticane, archives photographiques).

et les saints qui y sont représentés devraient inciter le lecteur à plus d'assiduité dans la prière.

Comme les deux psautiers ont été enluminés au grand monastère de saint Jean Stoudion, il n'est pas surprenant que les artistes aient introduit dans le répertoire des saints représentés un certain nombre de moines iconophiles. Outre Étienne le Jeune, Théodore Graptops et Théodore Stoudire, nous trouvons aussi Joannice, moine de Bithynie mort en 846<sup>28</sup>. Les saints iconophiles sont alors intégrés de façon permanente. Nous les rencontrons par la suite régulièrement sur les murs des églises byzantines à côté des autres saints vénérés à Byzance, mais, à l'exception de saint Étienne le Jeune qui porte toujours une icône, aucun détail iconographique ne les distingue de leurs autres confrères célestes. Si l'influence du II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée et du Triomphe de l'orthodoxie sur l'art religieux de Byzance a été modeste, et si le souvenir de la lutte contre les iconoclastes est devenu progressivement plus fable, nous n'avons pour autant aucune raison de nous en étonner. Le concile n'a pas cherché à innover ; il voulait surtout affirmer. Ceux qui ont mis fin de façon définitive à la querelle des images en 843 laissent transparaître qu'ils partageaient le point de vue de leurs illustres prédecesseurs : c'est l'orthodoxie qui a triomphé plutôt que l'icône !

Passons à présent à un examen des représentations dans l'art byzantin du II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée même. Nous verrons qu'il confirmera la thèse développée dans les paragraphes précédents. Ironiquement les plus anciennes représentations d'un concile qui nous soient parvenues sont celles du conciliaire iconoclaste de 815, conservées dans les psautiers enluminés du IX<sup>e</sup> siècle<sup>29</sup>. Néanmoins, de sources littéraires, nous savons que le thème iconographique existait avant le commencement de l'iconoclasme. Il y avait, par exemple, une représentation commémorative du I<sup>er</sup> concile de Nicée dans une église de la ville où le concile s'est tenu<sup>30</sup>. Plus importants sont les témoignages de l'existence à Constantinople d'une série de représentations des six premiers conciles, que l'empereur iconoclaste Constantin V (741-775) a fait effacer pour les remplacer par un tableau du cirque<sup>31</sup>.

Il convient de souligner le fait qu'il s'agissait d'une série de tableaux. Tous les conciles œcuméniques — il y en a eu six à l'époque — étaient représentés ensemble. Par la suite, leur nombre en sera augmenté. Déjà, semble-t-il, au IX<sup>e</sup> siècle a-t-on ajouté

<sup>28</sup> DER NERSESSIAN, op. cit. (n. 21), p. 74, fig. 282.

<sup>29</sup> Ch. WALTER, *L'iconographie des conciles dans la tradition byzantine*, Paris, 1970 (cité ci-après : *Conciles*), p. 26-30.

<sup>30</sup> *Conciles*, p. 2122.

<sup>31</sup> *Conciles*, p. 2021.

Fig. 11. Tatouage de saint Théodore « Graptops », Psautier Barberini, p 155 (École des Hautes Études, Paris, coll. chrétienne et byzantine).

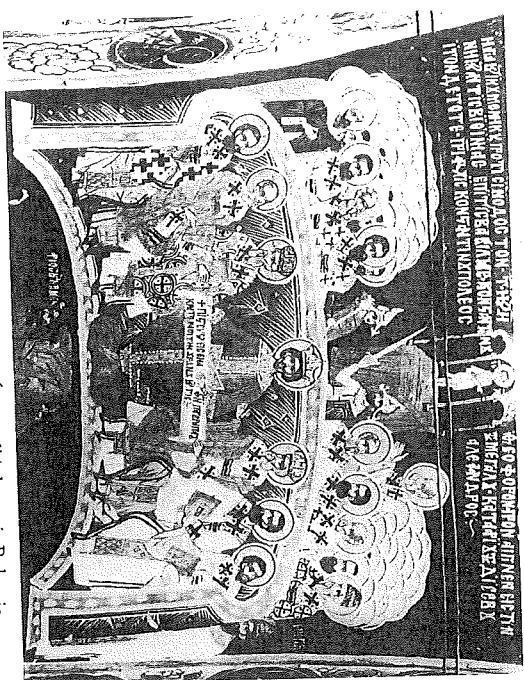
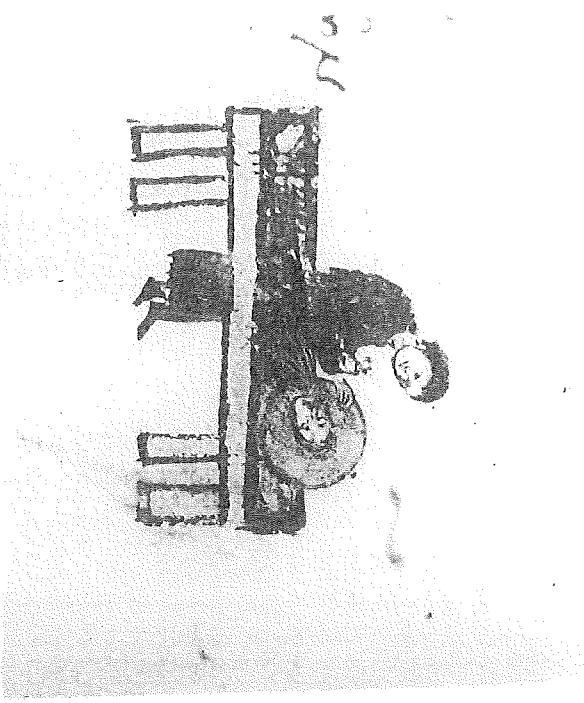


Fig. 12. I<sup>er</sup> concile de Nicée. Église d'Arbanasi, Bulgarie.



le II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée aux six précédents<sup>32</sup>. Dès lors, dans la tradition orthodoxe, le nombre reste inchangé. D'autres conciles auraient pu revendiquer l'honneur d'être appelés œcuméniques, mais on ne les a pas pris en considération. Autour de la notion d'un concile œcuménique, toute une mystique fut élaborée, qui inspira le texte de la *synopsis de synodis*, où chaque concile est présenté de la même façon : lieu où le concile s'est tenu ; nombre des Pères ; nom de l'empereur ; noms des représentants des cinq patriarchats ; noms des hérétiques ; définition ; condamnation<sup>33</sup>. Ainsi les sept conciles œcuméniques résument-ils la doctrine orthodoxe. Ils servent aussi comme paradigme pour tout autre synode.

La plus ancienne série de tableaux des sept conciles œcuméniques qui nous soit parvenue se trouve en Géorgie dans l'église de Gelati, commencée en 1106 et terminée vers 1130<sup>34</sup>. Il est très intéressant qu'un synode se soit tenu à Gelati de 1123 à 1125 pour discuter du monophysisme arménien et du chalcédonisme. On devine donc facilement pourquoi on a peint cette série de tableaux à Gelati : on voulait affirmer l'orthodoxie de l'Église géorgienne et proclamer sa loyauté aux sept conciles œcuméniques. D'autres exemples analogues sont connus. À Arilje en Serbie, on a peint dans le narthex vers la fin du XIII<sup>e</sup> siècle une série de tableaux semblables, mais ici on leur a juxtaposé un tableau d'un synode local, dont l'iconographie est celle des conciles œcuméniques<sup>35</sup>.

Nous n'avons aucune preuve que la série de tableaux des conciles, détruite par l'empereur Constantin V, ait été restaurée après le Triomphe de l'orthodoxie. Par ailleurs, il n'existe aucune allusion dans les sources littéraires à d'autres séries de tableaux des conciles, érigées ultérieurement à Constantinople. La fâcheuse disjonction de la plupart des monuments d'autan hante à chaque pas l'historien de l'art byzantin. Notre ignorance de l'art de la capitale est compensée pourtant en partie par le consensus iconographique des monuments restant en province. Celui-ci rend vraisemblable l'hypothèse que les types iconographiques aient été inventés dans la capitale, et ce surtout s'il s'agit de l'art « officiel ».

Le caractère étriqué de l'iconographie des conciles confirme l'hypothèse qu'elle appartenne au genre de l'art officiel. Elle capte est comprenante pourtant en partie par le consensus iconographique des monuments restant en province. Celui-ci rend vraisemblable l'hypothèse que les types iconographiques aient été inventés dans la capitale, et ce surtout s'il s'agit de l'art « officiel ». Le caractère étriqué de l'iconographie des conciles confirme l'hypothèse qu'elle appartenne au genre de l'art officiel. Elle

aurait été inventée pour des tableaux comme ceux qu'avait détruits l'empereur Constantin V, exposés dans un lieu public, et destinés à être à la portée des provinciaux, des étrangers et des illétrés<sup>36</sup>. Nous nous croyons donc autorisé à nous servir de deux miniatures d'un concile œcuménique pour reconstruire l'iconographie originale. Ces deux miniatures sont bien connues. L'une, qui représente le I<sup>e</sup> concile de Constantinople, se trouve dans le manuscrit des *Homélies de Grégoire de Nazianze*, exécuté pour l'empereur Basile I<sup>r</sup> (867-886), le *Paris*, 510, folio 355<sup>37</sup>. L'autre, qui se trouve dans le *Ménologe de Basile II*, le *Vatic.* gr. 1613, p. 108, est la toute première représentation du II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée<sup>38</sup>. La disposition des deux scènes est essentiellement semblable : les évêques et l'empereur sont assis en demi-cercle dans une exèdre ; l'hérétique condamné est placé au premier plan. La miniature du II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée accompagne le récit pour la commémoration des saints Pères du concile, le 12 octobre. Toutefois on chercherait inutilement dans la miniature le moindre détail iconographique qui se rapporte spécifiquement au II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée ! L'hérétique prosterné, qui pourrait symboliser l'ensemble des iconoclastes, fait plutôt penser à Arius. On échappe donc difficilement à la conclusion que l'artiste a calqué cette miniature sur une autre représentant le I<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée.

Sauf erreur, cette miniature est l'unique représentation du II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée qui ne fasse pas partie d'une série. Pour l'époque byzantine, nous avons, outre celles de Gelati et d'Arilje, déjà notées, une série à Patmos dans le réfectoire du monastère (1200 environ)<sup>39</sup> ; à Sopocani dans le narthex (1263-1268)<sup>40</sup> ; à Prizren dans l'aile sud de l'église de la Bogorodica Ljeviška (1310-1313 environ)<sup>41</sup> ; à Mistra dans le narthex de la métropole (1300 environ)<sup>42</sup> ; à Décani dans le narthex (1348 environ)<sup>43</sup> ; à Dobrun dans le narthex (1343-1356)<sup>44</sup> ; à Ohrid à l'étage du

36. ÉTIENNE LE DIACRE, *Vie de saint Etienne le Jeune*, PG 100, 1172.

37. *Conciles*, p. 34-37 ; Leslie BRUBAKER, « Politics, Patronage and Art in Ninth-century Byzantium : The Homilies of Gregory of Nazianzus in Paris (B.N. gr. 510) », *Dumbarton Oaks Papers* 39, 1985, p. 4-7.

38. *Ménologe*, p. 108, le 12 octobre ; *Conciles*, p. 37-38.

39. A. ORLANDOS, 'Η ἀργυρετούχη καὶ βαζανίσια τῆς μονῆς Θεολόγου Πέργου', Athènes, 1970, p. 243-255, 373-380 ; E. KOLLAS, *Patmos*, Athènes, 1986, p. 25-26.

40. *Conciles*, p. 107 ; Djurić, p. 39-41.

41. *Conciles*, p. 110-111 ; Daga PANIĆ, Gordana BABIĆ, *Bogorodica Ljeviška*, Belgrade 1975 ; Djurić, p. 49-50.

42. *Conciles*, p. 89-90 ; Suzy DEFRENNE, *Les Programmes iconographiques des églises byzantines de Mistra*, Paris, 1970, p. 5-8, 39-40 ; M. CHATZIDAKIS, Mistra, Athènes, 1985, p. 42-43.

43. *Conciles*, p. 111 ; Djurić, p. 63.

44. Djurić, p. 63 ; Z. KARAKOVIĆ, *Zidno slikarstvo u Bosni i Hercegovini*, Sarajevo, 1971, p. 101-110, 313-315.

32. J. MONITZ, « Synoptic Greek Accounts of the Seventh Council », *Revue des études byzantines* 32, 1974, p. 176-177 ; H. CHADWICK, « The Origin of the Title "Ecumenical Council" », *Journal of Theological Studies* 23, 1972, p. 132-135.

33. *Conciles*, p. 151-163, 265-273 ; Ch. WALTER, « The Names of the Council Fathers at Saint Socomenus, Cyprus », *Revue des études byzantines* 28, 1970, p. 189-205.

34. Tintoretto WIRSSALADE, « Fragmente der ursprünglichen Freskenmalerei in der Hauptkirche des Klosters Gelati », *Ars georgica* 5, 1969, p. 163-204.

35. *Conciles*, p. 109-111 ; V. Djurić, *Vizantijiske freske u Jugoslaviji*, Belgrade, 1974 (cité ci-après : Djurić), p. 44.

narthex de l'église Sainte-Sophie (1346-1350)<sup>45</sup> et à Mateiç dans le narthex (1356-1360)<sup>46</sup>.

La même formule iconographique est employée pour tous les conciles dans ces séries. L'empereur et les évêques président en demi-cercle dans une exèdre. C'est la même formule que celle de la miniature dans le *Méloge* de Basile II. Souvent, au premier plan, l'artiste substitue, à l'hérétique prosterné, deux groupes d'évêques, l'un orthodoxe et l'autre hétérodoxe, qui s'affrontent<sup>47</sup>.



Fig. 13. II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée. Église d'Arbanasi, Bulgarie.

Comment, alors, peut-on distinguer le tableau du II<sup>e</sup> concile des autres ? Souvent, faut-il dire, il n'existe aucune distinction. Dans certaines séries, une légende accompagne chaque tableau, qui résume les données qui se trouvent dans la *synopsis de synodes*. La légende nous permet d'identifier le concile. Rarement — très rarement — l'artiste ajoute à la représentation du II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée une icône. C'est le cas, par exemple, pour la fresque abîmée de Mistra. L'icône ressemble à celle que porte habi-

<sup>45</sup> Conciles, p. 114-115; Djurić, p. 68; C. Grozdanov, *Obrazets zidno slikarstvo XIV veka*, Belgrade, 1980, p. 71-75.  
<sup>46</sup> Conciles, p. 113-114; Djurić, p. 70.  
<sup>47</sup> Conciles, p. 256-258.

tuellement saint Étienne le Jeune : la Sainte Vierge s'incline devant son Fils. Citons aussi, pour l'art postbyzantin, où les séries de tableaux des conciles sont plus nombreuses, la belle fresque à Arbanasi, en Bulgarie (1632-1649)<sup>48</sup>. Une comparaison avec le tableau du I<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée dans la même église est instructive. L'empereur Constantin, entouré d'évêques, preside l'assemblée. Il tient un rouleau sur lequel sont inscrits les premiers mots du Credo. L'hérétique Arius est prosterné à ses pieds. Derrière lui est dressé un autel surmonté d'un baldaquin. L'enfant Jésus se tient debout sur l'autel. C'est la vision de saint Pierre d'Alexandrie, qui ajoutent fréquemment les artistes à partir du Moyen Age à leur représentation du I<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée<sup>49</sup>. Dans le tableau du II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée, l'assemblée est présidée par deux personnages, l'impératrice Irène et son fils l'empereur Constantin VI

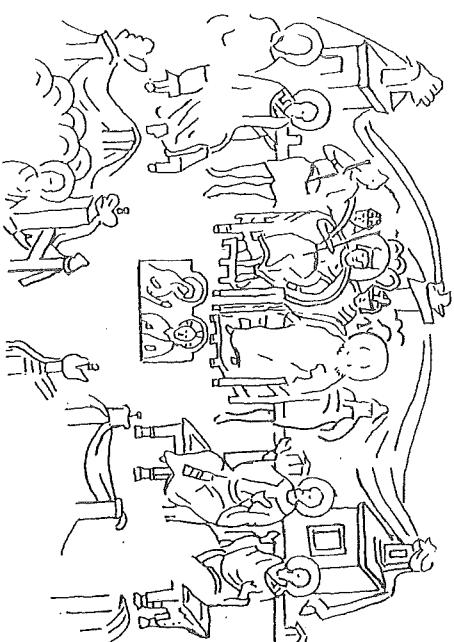


Fig. 14. II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée. Métropole, Mistra.

(780-797), qui n'avait en 787 que dix-sept ans. Sur le rouleau sont inscrits les mots : « Si quelqu'un ne vénère pas les saintes images, qu'il soit anathème. » Un hérétique anonyme est prosterné à leurs pieds, mais l'autel et l'enfant Jésus sont remplacés par un simple baldaquin. En revanche, l'artiste a intégré une icône

<sup>48</sup> Conciles, p. 83-87.  
<sup>49</sup> Conciles, p. 246-248.

du Christ Emmanuel, que tiennent l'empereur et l'impératrice.

Nous pouvons nous arrêter ici pour conclure. Ce rapide examen du souvenir du II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée dans l'iconographie byzantine pourrait sembler décevant. L'unique reflet de la théologie iconophile se trouve dans les psautiers marginaux du IX<sup>e</sup> siècle, où l'on peut entrevoir l'influence de saint Jean Damascène, pour qui le mot *ekthon* signifiait à la fois le type du Christ dans l'Ancien Testament et le portrait du Christ.<sup>50</sup> Dans ces psautiers à illustration marginale, l'artiste s'est servi de l'*imago clipeata* du Christ comme symbole d'une vision prophétique et de la vision d'un saint. Il illustre aussi les psaumes de scènes typologiques de la vie du Christ. Ainsi a-t-il associé dans le même programme le Christ incarné et le Christ virtuellement présent dans une vision ou sur une icône. Les iconoclastes, qui détruisent les icônes, cherchent donc à annuller le Christ.

Cependant, ce courant iconographique n'avait pas de suite. Après le Triomphe de l'orthodoxie, on se mettait à reconstituer un art semblable à celui des siècles qui précédaient la querelle des images. Cependant, le II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée avait donné un nouvel essor au culte des saints. Toutefois au X<sup>e</sup> siècle les représentations de saints se multiplient et, aux séries de portraits des saints, on intègre les augustes défenseurs des icônes. Finalement, ils sont complètement assimilés et, à une exception près — saint Etienne le Jeune —, un saint iconophile ne se distingue pas des autres par un attribut quelconque.

Lorsque l'on se tourne vers les représentations du II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée, l'on constate d'emblée que l'on ne leur a pas attribué une iconographie spécifique. Au contraire, le II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée, une fois reconnu comme étant œcuménique, prend place dans les séries de tableaux, à côté des autres et au même titre que les autres. Les sept conciles œcuméniques sont vénérés comme un ensemble : ils ont défendu et promulgué la doctrine orthodoxe. Comme le I<sup>r</sup> concile de Nicée a ouvert la série, le II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée, souvent assimilé dans l'iconographie au précédent, a clos la série. Ensemble, ils offrent aux défenseurs de l'orthodoxie un paradigme pour tout synode ultérieur.

## CHRISTOLOGICAL THEMES IN THE BYZANTINE MARGINAL PSALTERS FROM THE NINTH TO THE ELEVENTH CENTURY\*

In its pristine state, the Chludov Psalter would have contained some eighty miniatures illustrating or commenting verses of the Psalms in a Christological sense<sup>1</sup>. This Psalter, although now missing a number of folios, is still more complete than the Paris and Pantocrator Psalters, whose miniatures also comment Psalms with miniatures embodying a Christologi-

\* The following abbreviations are used in this article :

WORKS OF REFERENCE

*Clavis* = M. GEBRAUD, *Clavis patrum graecorum*, I-IV, Turnhout 1974-1983.

*Initia hymnorum* = HENRICA FOLLIERI, *Initia hymnorum ecclesiae græcae*, I-V, Vatican 1960-1966.

*Typicon* = I. MATEOS, *Le typicon de la Grande Église*, I-II, Rome 1962-1963.

*Typicon (Messina)* = M. ARRANZ, *Le typicon du monastère du Saint-Sauveur à Messine*, Rome 1969.

PATRISTIC COMMENTATORS

Eusebius = EUSEBIUS, *Commentarii in psalmos*, PG 23 (Clavis 3467).

Didymus = DIDYMUS, *Fragmenta in psalmos*, PG 39 (Clavis 2551).

Theodore = THEODORE, *Interpretatio in psalmos*, PG 80 (Clavis 6202).

« Athanasius » = ATHANASIUS, *Expositiones in psalmos*, PG 27 (Clavis 2140).

MONOGRAPHS

DER NERSESSIAN = SHARPIE DER NERSESSIAN, *L'illustration des psautiers grecs du Moyen Age*, II, Paris 1970.

TIKKANEN = J.J. TIKKANEN, *Die Psalterillustration im Mittelalter*, *Acta societatis scientiarum fennicae* 31, 1905.

The sigla for the marginal psalters are those used by L. MARIES (Le psautier à illustration marginale : signification théologique des images, *Actes du VII<sup>e</sup> congrès* Photothèque Gabriel Millet, Paris, fig. 2, 3, 7, 11. Dumbarton Oaks Study Center, Washington, fig. 4, 9. Ch. Walter, fig. 8, 12, 13).

50. JEAN DAMASCÈNE, *De imaginibus oratio* III, PG 94, 1341.

PHOTOGRAPHIES :  
Bibliothèque vaticane, fig. 1, 5, 6, 10.  
Photothèque Gabriel Millet, Paris, fig. 2, 3, 7, 11.  
Dumbarton Oaks Study Center, Washington, fig. 4, 9.  
Ch. Walter, fig. 8, 12, 13.

cal theme. The Bristol Psalter, dating from about the year 1000, has thirty such miniatures, which resemble more particularly those in the Pantocrator Psalter<sup>2</sup>.

The majority of the Christological miniatures in the two eleventh-century Psalters obviously derive from those in the ninth-century Psalters, particularly those in Chludov<sup>3</sup>. However, there are slight but significant differences. Generally Barberini is closer to Chludov than is London, in which a greater number of Christological miniatures are modified or omitted. However, in some miniatures, both Barberini and London have introduced the same modifications. For this and other reasons, art historians have argued plausibly that the two 11th-century Psalters do not depend directly on Chludov but on a lost intermediary copy into which these modifications would have already been introduced.

The distinguished Finnish scholar J.J. Tikkainen laid long ago the foundations for a study of the Christological themes in the Byzantine marginal Psalters. He recognized that the theme chosen to illustrate the verse of a Psalm was sometimes suggested by the quotation of the verse in the New Testament, sometimes by a Patristic commentator. In other cases he suggested a *rapprochement* with a liturgical text. However, he did not establish an exhaustive inventory of miniatures with Christological themes, nor did he give references to the Patristic commentators.

The aim of the present article is above all to supply for these deficiencies. The contemporary scholar is far better equipped than Tikkainen for this

<sup>1</sup> International d'études byzantines, II, Paris 1951, p. 261-272) and by Suzy DUFRENNE (*Tableaux synoptiques de 15 psautiers marginaux*, Paris 1978); Pc = Pantocrator Psalter (Athos Panocrator 61); P = Paris Psalter (Paris græc. 20); C = Chludov Psalter (Moscow, State Historical Museum 129 D); L = Bristol Psalter (London, British Library, Additional 40371); L = London Psalter (London, British Library, Additional 19352); B = Barberini Psalter (Vatican Barb. græc. 372). The numbering of the Psalm verses is that of A. Rahlf, Septuaginta, II, 4th edition, Stuttgart 1950. The translation of the Psalms follows that of S. Bagster & J. Pott, The Septuagint Version, Greek and English, London/New York, no date. Credit titles for the illustrations: Biblioteca Apostolica Vaticana, figures 8, 11; the other figures, Collection Gabriel Millet, Paris.

<sup>2</sup> 1. Maria ŠČEPKINA, *Miniatyri Chludovskoj Psaltri. Græckij illyustrirowanyj kodeks IX veka*, Moscow 1977. See R. Stichels review, *BZ* 74, 1981, p. 357-362.

<sup>3</sup> 2. Surz DUFRENNE, *L'illustration des psautiers grecs du Moyen Age*, I, Paris 1966 (Pantocrator, Paris and Bristol Psalters); EADEM, *Le Psautier de Bristol et les autres psautiers byzantins*, CA 14, 1965, p. 164-169.

<sup>4</sup> 3. DER NELESSIAN (London Psalter); J.C. ANDERSON, The Date and Purpose of the Barberini Psalter, CA 31, 1983, p. 35-67. This manuscript still unpublished, has a double foliation. In my references, f. 1 corresponds to the first folio, such that the frontispiece is on f. 5. Particularly in older literature, the foliation begins with the frontispiece. In referring to it, it is therefore necessary to subtract 4 from my folio numbers. I thank Cardinal A. Stickler for the free access that he has given me to this manuscript.

task. All the Psalters in question, except Barberini, have been published. Basic works of reference, not available in Tikkainen's time, facilitate such a study. Even so, it cannot be definitive for two reasons. Firstly, critical editions of the Patristic commentators are lacking, while the publication of the *Catena* which succeeded them and which were probably, in fact, exploited by the illuminators of these manuscripts has hardly begun<sup>4</sup>. Secondly, although a *rapprochement* of miniatures and liturgical texts is fruitful, it cannot be taken for granted that the miniature was always inspired by the liturgical text. In general, illustrators of manuscripts and composers of liturgical texts were less rigorous than the Fathers when they interpreted a Psalm verse in a Christological sense. A simple word association was often sufficient for them. Moreover, in some cases, it might be difficult to prove that the liturgical text is more ancient than the miniature<sup>5</sup>. It is likely that the composition of liturgical hymns and the illumination of marginal Psalters formed part of the same movement in the Byzantine Church.

Tikkainen presented the Christological miniatures according to their theme. In this article they are presented rather according to their source of inspiration. Although the Psalter was primarily a book of worship, it was also exploited as a compendium of prophecies. I begin by listing the miniatures whose subject was suggested by the New Testament context in which the verse was quoted<sup>6</sup>. While the New Testament authors were mainly concerned to demonstrate that Christ's coming fulfilled the prophecies of the Old Testament, Patristic commentators went further. They sought to render explicit the prophetic content, the *sensus plenior* of the Psalms. Sometimes their exegesis overlapped with the lucubrations of those Church Fathers who interpreted and developed the « signs » of Saint John's Gospel and the rôles dear to Saint Paul<sup>7</sup>. I continue by listing the miniatures whose subject was suggested by a Patristic commentator, adding, where relevant, references to the exposition of a sign or type. This accounts for nearly fifty of the Christological miniatures, which can be presented summarily.

The subjects of the remaining thirty odd miniatures were not, apparently,

<sup>4</sup> 4. R. DEVREÈSE, *Les anciens commentateurs des Psalms*, Vatican 1970; Marie-Josephé RONDEAU, *Les commentaires patristiques du Psautier (IIIe-Ve siècles)*, I, Rome 1982; G. DORIVAL, La postérité littéraire des chaînes exégétiques grecques, REB 43, 1985, p. 209-226.

<sup>5</sup> 5. H.-G. BECK, *Kirche und theologische Literatur im byzantinischen Reich*, Munich 1959, p. 515-519, 601-609.

<sup>6</sup> 6. 1. SAINT-ARNAUD, *Les Psalms dans le Nouveau Testament*, Supplément au *Dictionnaire de la Bible*, IX, col. 206-210.

<sup>7</sup> 7. P. BLÄSER, *Typos in der Schrift*, LTK 10, 422-423, with extensive bibliography.

inspired by Patristic texts. In their case either the artist substituted a Christological theme, where Patristic exegesis had been moral or historical, or he extended a typological explanation, previously applied to Christ or the Church, to the Virgin. In a number of cases a *rapprochement* is possible with a later Byzantine writer. This explanation accounts for the choice of six themes. There then follow twelve for which a *rapprochement* may be made with a liturgical text.

For the choice of some themes, Tikkanen did not provide an explanation. I am obliged to do the same in eight cases. Subsequent research may fill this lacuna. However, since these themes correspond to the ninth-century *Zeitgeist*, it may have been that, as in the case of the miniatures in which a polemical anti-Iconoclast theme is linked to one which is Christological, the choice was the artist's own. Byzantine book illumination had its autonomous governing principles, such that the illuminator was free to « translate » a word into pictorial form, or to exemplify a general theme with a specific subject.<sup>11</sup>

The « corpus » of Christological themes was established for the marginal Psalters in the ninth century. Although later artists adapted or omitted these themes, they added few new ones. In one case (83), Bristol introduces a scene of the Adoration of the Magi, which does not appear in the ninth-century Psalters. Apart from this miniature there are only four others which could be considered to be eleventh-century innovations. These five miniatures complete the inventory.

#### I. PSALMS QUOTED IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

1. Psalm 2,7 : « Thou art my son... » Nativity. (*Acts* 13,33 ; *Heb.* 1,5) C, 1, L, B.
2. Psalm 8,3 : « Out of the mouths of babes... » Entry to Jerusalem. (*Mat.* 21,6) 1, L, B.<sup>12</sup>
3. Psalm 21,2 : « My God... why hast thou forsaken me? » Crucifixion. (*Mat.* 27,46) Pc, C, B.
4. Psalm 2,19 : « They parted my garments among them. » Soldiers casting lots. (*John* 19,24) Pc, C, 1, L, B.
5. Psalm 40,10 : « The man who ate my bread. » Last Supper. (*John* 13,18) C, 1, L, B.
6. Psalm 68,10 : « The zeal of thy house... » Christ expelling merchants from temple. (*John* 2,17) Pc, C, L, B.
7. Psalm 68,22 : « They gave me gall for food. » Crucifixion<sup>9</sup>. (*Mat.* 27,34) C, 1, B.

8. Folio mutilated in C. A. CUTLER (Liturgical Strata in the Marginal Psalters, *DOP* 34/35, 1980-1981, p. 25) provides a liturgical explanation of the presence of a statue of Ares above Jerusalem in London, f. 6. This also appears in the parallel miniature in Barberini, f. 14, and, in the same manuscript, f. 137, above the edicule in which Antiochus is sitting in the scene of the martyrdom of the Maccabees.

9. See below, p. 280.

10. See below, p. 276.

11. Folio missing from C.

12. I have used only « samples » of Patristic commentary. My choice was principally determined by the observations of DEVREESSE and RONDEAU on the reliability of available editions. See above, note 4. Thus Eusebius is used only for Psalms 16-28 and 50-55. « Athanasius », even if spurious, provides a useful *Catena*. Reference is also made occasionally to *Homilies* by Basil and John Chrysostom on the Psalms.

13. Folio missing from C.

14. Folio mutilated in C.

15. Folio missing in C.

16. For modifications in L and B, see DER NERSESSIAN, p. 68, fig. 112, 330, 331.

#### II. THEMES COMMON TO PATRISTIC COMMENTARIES AND MARGINAL PSALTERS<sup>12</sup>

13. Psalm 11,6 : « Now I shall arise. » *Anastasis*<sup>13</sup>. (Didymus, 1213) Pc, 1, L, B.
14. Psalm 17,11 : « He mounted on cherubim. » Ascension. (Eusebius, 172) C, (1), L, B.
15. Psalm 21,3 : « Many bullocks have compassed me. » Christ surrounded by horned beasts<sup>14</sup>. (Theodore, 1016) B, L.
16. Psalm 21,17a : « Many dogs have compassed me. » Christ surrounded by figures with dog's heads. (Theodore, 1017) C, L, B.
17. Psalm 21,17b : « They pierced my hands and feet. » Christ nailed to cross. (Theodore, 1017) Pc, C, L, B.
18. Psalm 23,7 : « Lift up your gates. » Ascension. (Theodore, 1033) C, L, B.
19. Psalm 28,3 : « The voice of the Lord on the waters. » Baptism of Christ<sup>15</sup>. (Theodore, 1065) 1, L, B.
20. Psalm 34,11 : « Unjust witnesses arose. » Christ before Sanhedrin. (Athanasius, 171) Pc, C, L, B.
21. Psalm 40,8 : « Enemies whispered against me. » Judas and Jews. (Theodore, 1164) C, 1, L, B.
22. Psalm 44,2 : « My heart has uttered a good matter. » Dove perched on clipeate icon of Virgin and Child. (Theodore, 1187) C, L, B.
23. Psalm 46,6 : « God has gone up with a shout. » Ascension. (Theodore, 1208-1209) C, 1, L, B.
24. Psalm 49,1,2 : « God shall come manifestly. » Christ as midday sun. (Didymus, 1388-1389) (Pc) C, (1), L, B.
25. Psalm 55, title (David arrested by Philistines) Arrest of Christ<sup>16</sup>. (Didymus, 1409) Pc, C.

10. See below, p. 276.

11. Folio missing from C.

12. I have used only « samples » of Patristic commentary. My choice was principally determined by the observations of DEVREESSE and RONDEAU on the reliability of available editions. See above, note 4. Thus Eusebius is used only for Psalms 16-28 and 50-55. « Athanasius », even if spurious, provides a useful *Catena*. Reference is also made occasionally to *Homilies* by Basil and John Chrysostom on the Psalms.

13. Folio missing from C.

14. Folio mutilated in C.

15. Folio missing in C.

16. For modifications in L and B, see DER NERSESSIAN, p. 68, fig. 112, 330, 331.

26. Psalm 56,6 : « Be thou exalted. » Ascension. (Eusebius, 512) C, L, B.
27. Psalm 67,2 : « Let God arise. » Anastasis. (Theodore, 1376) C, L, B.
28. Psalm 67,7 : « Leading forth prisoners. » Anastasis. (Didymus, 1444) P, C, L, B.
29. Psalm 68,18 : « I am afflicted. » Gethsemane. (Theodore, 1400) C, L, B.
30. Psalm 71,6 : « He shall come down as rain upon a fleece. » Gedeon before a clipeate icon of the Virgin and Child above which a dove hovers<sup>17</sup>. (Theodore, 1433) P, C, L, B.
31. Psalm 73,13 : « He has wrought salvation in the midst of the earth. » Crucifixion. (Athanasius, 336) P, C, L, B.
32. Psalm 76,17 : « The waters saw thee. » Baptism of Christ. (Eusebius, 896) P, C, L, B.
33. Psalm 77,68 : « Mount Sion which he loved. » Sion with Virgin and Child. (Theodore, 1501) C, L, B.
34. Psalm 84,3 : « Thou hast forgiven their sins. » Christ pardoning sinners. (Eusebius, 1019) P, C, L, B.
35. Psalm 84,11 : « Mercy and truth are met together. » Visitation. (Theodore, 1429-1551) P, C, L, B.
36. Psalm 85,17 : « A sign for good. » Cross with clipeate icon of Christ. (Theodore, 1561) C, L, B.
37. Psalm 86,5 : « Such a man was born in her. » Sion with Virgin and Child. (Theodore, 1566) P, C, L, B.
38. Psalm 87,7 : « They laid me in the lowest pit. » Entombment of Christ. (Didymus, 1485) P, C, L, B.
39. Psalm 88,10 : « Thou rulest the power of the sea. » Christ calming tempest<sup>18</sup>. (Didymus, 1489) P, C, L, B.
40. Psalm 88,13 : « Thabor and Hermon shall rejoice in thy name. » Transfiguration. (Didymus, 1489) C, L, B.
41. Psalm 88,37 : « His throne is like the sun. » Christ enthroned<sup>19</sup>. (Theodore, 1592-1593) C, B.
42. Psalm 101,29 : « The souls of thy servants shall dwell securely. » Christ and disciples. (Theodore, 1684) C, P, B.
43. Psalm 102,3 : « Who heals all thy diseases. » Christ healing. (Theodore, 1686) P, C, P, L, B.
44. Psalm 106,16 : « He broke to pieces the brazen gates. » Anastasis<sup>20</sup>. (Theodore, 1742) P, L, B.
45. Psalm 106,20 : « He healed them. » Christ healing<sup>21</sup>. (Theodore, 1741) P, L, B.
46. Psalm 107,6 : « Be thou exalted. » Christ in mandorla<sup>22</sup>. (Didymus, 1533) C.
47. Psalm 108,12,4,5 : « Oh God pass not over my praise in silence. » Gethsemane<sup>23</sup>. (Theodore, 1756) C.
24. Miniature partially mutilated in C.
25. John of Euboea. *Homilia in Lazarum*. edited F. Douger, *An. Boll.* 68, 1950 (*Clavis 8137*; *BHG* 2220), p. 22.
26. *Idem, Homilia in conceptionem dei parae*, *PG* 96 (*Clavis 8135*), 1481 ; JOHN DAMAS-CENE, *Sermo in annuntiationem*, *PG* 96 (*Clavis 8118*, spurious), 653-656. CHRYSPHIUS OF JERUSALEM (5th century) had already applied this verse to the Annunciation, *Oratio in sanctam Mariam Deiparum*, edited M. JUCIE, *PO* 19 (*Clavis 6705*), p. 336.
27. JOHN CHRYSOSTOM, *Expositio in Ps. 45*, *PG* 55 (*Clavis 4413*), 206-207.
28. DIONYSIUS THE AREOPAGITE, *Epistola vii ad Polycarpem antistitem*, *PG* 3 (*Clavis 6610*), 1077-1081 ; A. GRABAR, *L'Iconoclisme, dossier archéologique*, Paris 1957, p. 229-230.
48. Psalm 108,2 : « The mouth of the crafty man... » The devil and Judas. (Theodore, 1756) C, B.
49. Psalm 131,11 : « The Lord swore the truth to David. » David prays before Christ enthroned<sup>24</sup>. (Theodore, 1908) C, L, B.

### III. THEMES COMMON TO LATER PATRISTIC WRITERS AND MARGINAL PSALTERS

50. Psalm 29,4 : « Thou has brought up my soul from Hades. » Eusebius, 260, refers this verse to David. Didymus, 1312 to Christ, Theodore, 1193-1196, « Athanasius », 212, and John Chrysostom, f. 29 ; Bristol, f. 31<sup>25</sup> ; Barberini, f. 48 ; the marginal Psalters (Pantocrator, f. 29 ; London, f. 31<sup>26</sup> ; Barberini, f. 48) ; the folio is missing from Chludov, the verse is illustrated by a miniature of Christ raising Lazarus from the dead (Figures 3, 4). This verse is applied by John of Euboea to the resurrection of Lazarus<sup>27</sup>.

51. Psalm 44,11 : « Hear, daughter... and incline thine ear. » This verse is referred by Eusebius, 401, Didymus, 1368-1369, Theodore, 1193-1196, « Athanasius », 212, and John Chrysostom, f. 29 ; Bristol, f. 74<sup>28</sup> ; London, f. 56<sup>29</sup> ; Barberini, f. 78<sup>30</sup> this verse is illustrated with a miniature of the Annunciation. The verse is applied by John of Euboea to the Annunciation<sup>31</sup>.

52. Psalm 45,7 : « The nations were troubled, the kingdoms tottered... the earth shook. » Theodore, 1204, and John Chrysostom interpret the «verse literally».

Eusebius, 409, and Didymus, 1376, refer it to dangers threatening the Church. « Athanasius », 216, alludes to the Crucifixion, but not to the prodigies reported in the Gospels as having occurred at the time (*Mar.* 27,45-54, etc.). Uniquely in Chludov, f. 45<sup>32</sup>, the verse is illustrated by a miniature of the Crucifixion, while one side stands Dionysius the Areopagite with a group of Greeks. His name and the word «Eumenes» can be read in the much deteriorated legend. The allusion is to the *Letter of Dionysius to Polycarp*, in which he explained the phenomena which occurred at the time of the Crucifixion<sup>33</sup>. This verse is not illustrated in the other marginal Psalters, although, in Barberini, f. 79<sup>34</sup>, there is a miniature of the Crucifixion, without Dionysius, illustrating verse 3 : « Therefore we will not fear when the earth is troubled. »

53. Psalm 67,17 : « This is the mountain that God has delighted to dwell in. » Eusebius, 700, and Theodore, 1385, interpret the verse literally, while « Athanasius », 297, refers it to the Church. In the marginal Psalters (Pantocrator, f. 83<sup>35</sup> ; Chludov, f. 64 ; Bristol, f. 105<sup>36</sup> ; London, f. 84 ; Barberini, f. 110<sup>37</sup>), the verse is illustrated with a particularly complex and erudite miniature. David stands while

Daniel reclines on a couch beside a mountain from which a rock has fallen. Chludov, London and Barberini add, at the summit of the mountain, a clipeate icon of the Virgin and Child. The Psalm is associated with Daniel's prophecy (*Dan.* 2,34-35) by Germanus<sup>129</sup>. The typology of Daniel's prophecy was frequently expounded by the Fathers,<sup>130</sup> and allusions to it recur in 8th- and 9th-century texts, although only Germanus actually associates it with this Psalm.<sup>131</sup> Daniel's recumbent position recalls the conventional iconography of visions in dreams, although, of course, it was not his own dream which he interpreted. The rock, unmade by human hands, was interpreted as a type of Christ's birth from a virgin. The rock, assimilated to Christ, lent itself to further typological exegesis. A full account may be found in Theodore Studite's *Commentary on Daniel*<sup>132</sup>. The 9th-century miniatures are accompanied by explanatory legends which are particularly developed in Bristol. Indeed it is probable that its illuminator knew Theodore's *Commentary on Daniel*.

54. Psalm 91,11 : « My horn shall be exalted as the horn of a virgin. » Eusebius, 1180, referred the verse to hope of the reign of Christ. Theodore, 1620, argued that the single horn of the unicorn refers to there being only one God. « Athanasius », 405, combined both these interpretations. However, more generally in Patriotic tradition the single horn of the unicorn was interpreted as a type of Christ, the only begotten son.<sup>133</sup> In three marginal Psalters (Chludov, f. 93<sup>v</sup>; London, f. 124<sup>v</sup>; Barberini, f. 160), the verse is illustrated with a miniature of a seated woman extending her right hand towards the unicorn which places its left forepaw on her knee. Above, is a clipeate icon of the Virgin and Child. The legend accompanying the miniature in Chludov reads : ὁ Χρυσότροπος ἐψημένει τεφι τον λυκόντορος εἰς τὸν υἱόν τον Θεόν<sup>134</sup>. The legends in London and Barberini omit the reference to the son of God. On the other hand, they add a portrait of John Chrysostom. It does not seem that Chrysostom did, in fact, expound this type of the only son of God. If his name is introduced here, the most likely explanation for it would be that the authorship of the *Physiologus* was sometimes attributed to him. The connection is tenuous, because the attribution is made only in Western Latin manuscripts.<sup>135</sup> Psalm 91,11 is quoted at the beginning of the chapter in this treatise on the unicorn.<sup>136</sup> This exceptionally ferocious beast could only be captured by a virgin. It would leap to her bosom. She would suckle it and then take it to the king's palace. The chapter continues with an interpretation of the legend, which refers it to the Saviour, born of the Virgin Mary. A virtually identical miniature to these which illustrate the Psalm in the three marginal Psalters illustrated the chapter on the unicorn in the lost

Smyrna *Physiologus*<sup>137</sup>. Furthermore a similar miniature occurs in Pantocrator, f. 109<sup>v</sup>, illustrating Psalm 77,69 : « He built his sanctuary as the place of unicorns. » Eusebius, 938-940, interprets this verse as referring to the firstborn in heaven. Theodore, 1501, refers the horn of the unicorn to the one God. In the Pantocrator miniature, the seated virgin is actually sucking the unicorn, as the legend makes clear : τσοὶ τοῦ οὐον τοῦ(Θεοῦ) καθῆσε τὴν παροχήν θεορόκον. This legend, which makes no reference to Chrysostom, confirms the attribution of this iconographical theme in the marginal Psalters to the *Physiologus*.

55. Psalm 98,5,9 : « Worship at his holy mountain. » These verses are referred by Theodore, 1665, 1668, and by « Athanasius », 42, to Jerusalem or Sion. Pantocrator, f. 140, illustrates verse 9 with a miniature of Golgotha surrounded by a sanctuary. Chludov, f. 98<sup>v</sup>, has a miniature of the empty cross, with no indicative sign referring it to a specific verse. The same subject is represented in Barberini, f. 168, illustrating verse 5. Paris, f. 6<sup>v</sup>, also has a miniature of the empty cross illustrating verse 5, together with, on f. 7, a second miniature, illustrating verse 9, of a cross upon which is placed a clipeate icon of Christ. In London, f. 131<sup>v</sup>, verse 5 is illustrated with a miniature of John Chrysostom presiding at the rite of the Exaltation of the Cross. The originality of the London miniature has not passed unnoticed<sup>138</sup>. Most recently Cutler has pointed out that verse 9 — and later verse 5 — were used as the *prokeimenon* in the office of the Exaltation of the Cross.<sup>139</sup> However, he has not explained why, in three other marginal Psalters, God's footstool should have been interpreted as the empty cross. Possibly this choice was suggested by Theodore Studite's *Homily 2. In adorationem crucis*, preached on the occasion of the adoration of the Cross in mid-Lent, in which he quotes verse 5 of this Psalm.<sup>140</sup>

#### IV. THEMES COMMON TO BYZANTINE WORSHIP AND MARGINAL PSALTERS

Besides the examples mentioned above (13, 27, 28, 44), where a verse is illustrated with a miniature of the Anastasis, seven others should be noted. Six times the verse contains a derivative of the verb ἀναστῆναι (ἀναστάω). All these Psalms were used in an office connected with the Resurrection.

56. Psalm 7,7 : ἀναστῆναι C, L, B. This verse was used as the *prokeimenon* before the reading of *Mark* 16,1-8 at the Εὐαγγελίῳ<sup>141</sup>.

57. Psalm 9,33 : ἀναστῆναι PC, C, L, B. This verse was used as *prokeimenon* in the same office before the reading of *John* 20,1-10<sup>142</sup>.

29. GERMANUS I, *Homilia ii in presentationem s. dei parvae*, PG 98 (Clavis 8008), 306.

30. JOHN CHRYSOSTOM, *Fragments in Danielem*, PG 56 (Clavis 4448), 207 ; JOHN DAMASCENE, *Oratio de imaginibus tres*, edited B. KÖRNER, *Die Schriften des Iohannes von Damaskos*, III, Berlin 1975 (Clavis 8045) p. 140 : PG 94, 1334 ; IDEM, *Carmina*, PG 96 (Clavis 8070), 853 ; THEODORE STUDITE, *Oraio 5. In dormitione dei parvae*, PG 99, 728.

31. THEODORE, *Interpretatio in Danielem*, PG 81 (Clavis 6207), 1300-1301.

32. EUSEBIUS, *Demonstratio evangelica*, X, 8, edited I. HEIKEI, *Eusebius Werke*, VI, Leipzig 1913 (Clavis 3487), p. 489 : PG 22, 785. See also COSMAS, *Hymnus I. In natae domini*, PG 98, 461.

33. P. PERRY, Einhorn, RE XXI, 1120-1121. *Monacensis* 19419 (9th century) is the earliest manuscript in which the *Physiologus* is attributed to John Chrysostom. J. W. EINHORN, *Spirituale Unicornis*, Munich 1975, p. 62-66, fig. 11, 15-17.

34. F. SORDONE, *Physiologi graeci...* Milan/Naples 1936, p. 78-82.

35. J. STRZYGOWSKI, *Der Bilderkreis des griechischen Physiologus*, Leipzig 1899, p. 76, pl. xii ; O. DEMUS, *Bemerkungen zum Physiologus von Smyrna*, JÖB 25, 1976, p. 230-251, fig. 8-9. The second miniature was of the Annunciation. Demus argues convincingly that the Smyrna *Physiologus* was a Palaeo-Byzantine copy of an earlier manuscript, *ibidem*, p. 256-257.

36. DER NERESSIAN, p. 80 ; CH. WALTER, *Biographical Scenes of the Three Hierarchs*, REB 39, 1978, p. 235 ; IDEM, *Art and Ritual of the Byzantine Church*, London 1982, p. 154-155.

37. CUTLER, *art. cit.* (note 8), p. 22-23.

38. THEODORE STUDITE, *Oraio 2. In adorationem crucis*, PG 99, 693.

39. *Typicon*, II, p. 170-171.

40. *Typicon*, II, p. 172-173.

53. Psalm 43,24,27 : ἀνέστηθι, ἀνάστα C, (L), B. This Psalm was used at the *Orthos* of Holy Saturday<sup>41</sup>.

54. Psalm 81,8 : ἀνάστα C, B. This Psalm was also used on Holy Saturday<sup>42</sup>.

55. Psalm 101,14 : ἀνάστα C, L, B. This Psalm was used on Easter Sunday<sup>43</sup>.

56. Psalm 101,14 : ἀνάστα C, L, B. This Psalm was used on Easter Sunday<sup>44</sup>.

57. Psalm 77,65 : ἀπήγεθον C, L, B. This Psalm was used on Holy Saturday<sup>45</sup>.

It was not, of course, necessary in these cases for the artist to justify his choice of subject by referring to the liturgy. In other cases the relationship is closer.

58. Psalm 30,5,7 : « Thou shalt bring me out of the snare... I have hoped in the Lord. » Theodore, 1080, refers this Psalm to David persecuted by Absalom.

Eusebius, 265, refers it generally to protection from enemies. « Athanasius », 157, refers it to release from sin. It is illustrated in the marginal Psalters (Pantocrator, f. 30<sup>r</sup>; Chludov, f. 26<sup>r</sup>; London, f. 32<sup>r</sup>; Barberini, f. 49<sup>r</sup>) by a miniature of Christ standing beside the sepulchre below which are two sleeping guards (Figures 5, 6).

There is, of course, a general reference to the Resurrection, which in Chludov is rendered more explicit by the legend : τρεπήτης ἀναστάσας λέγει : καὶ οἱ φυλάκοι τερποτάται. The vocabulary is not that of the relevant Gospel passages, *Mat* 27, 62-66 ; 28,11-15. Actually the phrase resembles a *troparion* used on Holy Saturday.

Possibly this was suggested by the word *σταύρωτον*, which occurs in verse 7. In the London and Barberini miniatures, the iconography was modified by the introduction of a swooping angel over the sepulchre, while the legend was reduced to the words ὁ ἄγγελος τρεποτά. The full text of the *troparion*, however, needed to be known by the artist, for it explains the presence of the angel : τὸ πνεῦμα σου ἐφομαρτον ὅπρωταν, οἱ δὲ ὄγκειοι ὀδυνώντες τε, Χριστός οὐ θεος...<sup>46</sup>

59. Psalm 33,9 : « Taste and see that the Lord is good. » Patristic commentators referred this verse to Christ the bread of life (Eusebius, 296; Didymus, 1329). Theodore, 168, and Basil add a sacramental reference. This is rendered explicit in some marginal Psalters by illustrating the verse with a miniature of the Communion of the Apostles (Pantocrator, f. 37 ; Bristol, f. 53), while in London, f. 37<sup>r</sup>, the iconography is entirely changed. In Chludov, f. 30, and Barberini, f. 55<sup>r</sup>, the verse is illustrated not with a miniature of the Communion of the Apostles but with one of the Multiplication of the Loaves and Fishes. Cutler has noted that both this Psalm and the relevant Gospel passage were used in the rite of the *anointasia*<sup>47</sup>.

60. Psalm 38,2,13 : « I said, I will take heed to my ways... Lord... attend to my tears. » Eusebius, 345,3-8, gives the Psalm a moral interpretation, while Theodore, 1145, refers it to David. In the marginal Psalters, these verses are illustrated with two miniatures. The first (Chludov, f. 37<sup>r</sup>; London, f. 46<sup>r</sup>; Barberini, f. 67<sup>r</sup>) shows Saint Peter speaking to Christ. The sense of the miniature is hardly intelligible considered on its own, but only Chludov adds an explanatory legend to the effect that Saint Peter, after expressing fidelity to Christ, later denied him. Tikkonen identified the source of the legend, and hence the reason for this choice of subject<sup>48</sup>.

It is taken from the *troparion* διὰ τὸ οἴδην τὸν λουτάριον used at the third hour on Good Friday, in which this Psalm is actually quoted<sup>49</sup>. In the second miniature, Saint Peter is represented weeping, while beside him stands an enormous cock (Pantocrator, f. 48 ; Chludov, f. 38<sup>r</sup>; Bristol, f. 65<sup>r</sup>; London, f. 47<sup>r</sup>; Barberini, f. 68<sup>r</sup>). Except in Barberini, the miniature is accompanied each time by a legend referring to Saint Peter's tears after his third denial of Christ. Thus the two miniatures form a sequence.

61. Psalm 50,9 : « Thou shalt sprinkle me with hyssop. » Eusebius, 440, interpreted the verse as referring to the purification of the mind and of the affections. Theodore, 1250, added the parallel of sprinkling the lintels with lamb's blood at the Exodus and of the purification of Christians by the blood of Christ. « Athanasius », 241, used the first parallel but preferred the analogy of Baptism to the second. None of the illuminators of the marginal Psalters exploited these Patristic references. Instead they illustrated the verse with a miniature of Christ washing the feet of the apostles (Pantocrator, f. 63 ; Chludov, f. 50<sup>r</sup>; London, f. 64 ; Barberini, f. 87). Their choice may have been suggested by the fact that this Psalm was recited during the rite of footwashing on Maundy Thursday<sup>50</sup>.

62. Psalm 73,13 : « Thou didst break to pieces the heads of the dragons in the water. » Eusebius, 861; Theodore, 1161, and « Athanasius », 337, refer the verse to Pharaoh and the Egyptians. Some marginal Psalters (Pantocrator, f. 98<sup>r</sup>; Chludov, f. 72<sup>r</sup>; Barberini, f. 125) include among their illustrations a scene of the Baptism of Christ. The Patristic theme of Christ purifying water by his Baptism is largely exploited in the offices of the Epiphany, in which there are frequent allusions to this Psalm, which was recited in its entirety at the sixth hour<sup>51</sup>.

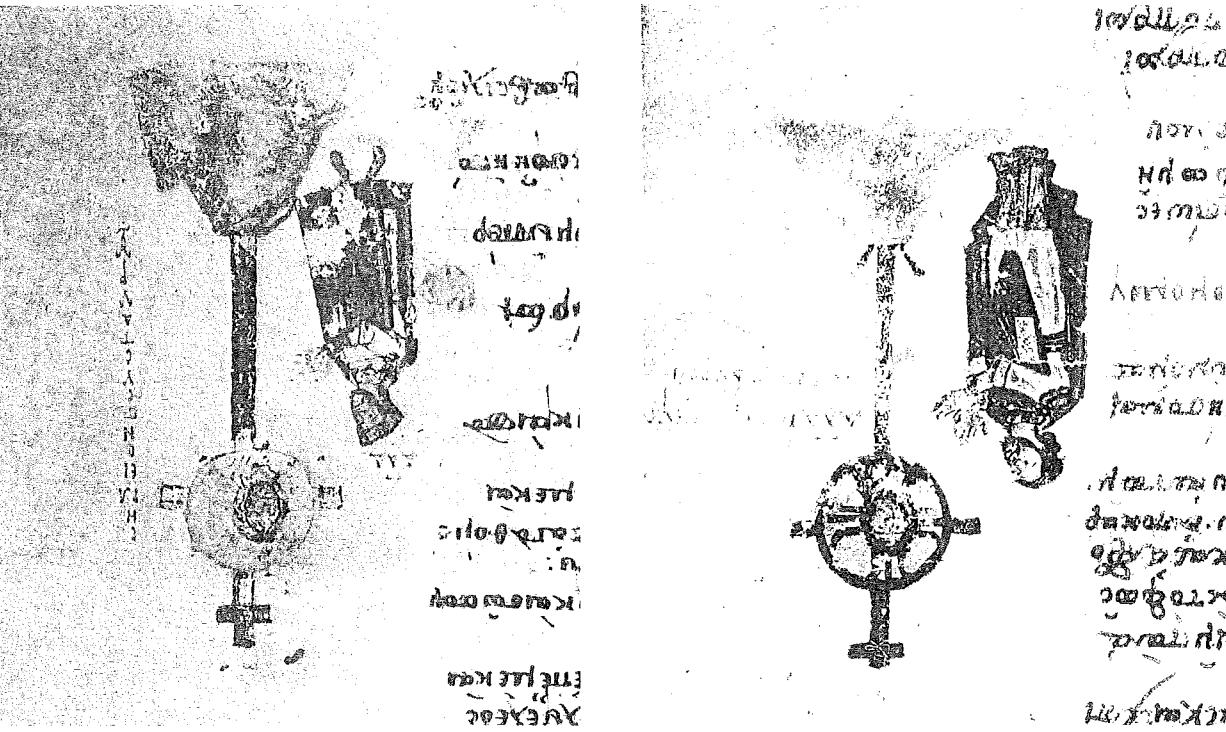
63. Psalm 113,8 : « The Lord... turned flint into fountains of water. » Patristic commentators (Theodore, 1789; « Athanasius », 468 ; John Chrysostom<sup>52</sup>) referred the verse to the Exodus. The marginal Psalters (Pantocrator, f. 164<sup>r</sup>; Chludov, f. 117 ; Paris, f. 26<sup>r</sup>; London, f. 154 ; Barberini, f. 197) illustrate the verse again with a scene of the Baptism of Christ. This Psalm was, in fact, recited during Vespers on the feast of the Epiphany<sup>53</sup>.

#### V. OTHER CHRISTOLOGICAL THEMES IN THE MARGINAL PSALTERS

For the following miniatures, I have not found an exact parallel either in the literary sources or in the offices of the Byzantine Church. The first two correspond to a common practice in Psalter illustration of « translating » a word literally by an image, as, for example in Chludov, f. 22<sup>r</sup>, where the words τὰ παρόποια αὐτῷ in Psalm 24,10, are rendered (incorrectly) by a picture of a martyr.

64. Psalm 4,7 : « The light of thy countenance, Lord, has been manifested

- 41. *Typicon (Messina)*, p. 243.
- 42. *Typicon*, II, p. 90-91.
- 43. *Typicon*, II, p. 94-95.
- 44. *Typicon*, II, p. 90-91.
- 45. *Typicon*, II, p. 82; *Initia hymnorum*, III, p. 69.
- 46. CUTLER, *art. cit.* (note 8), p. 25.
- 47. TIKKANEN, p. 55.
- 48. *Typicon (Messina)*, p. 239 ; *Initia hymnorum*, I, p. 309 ; TH. KLUGE & A. BAUMSTARK, *Quadragesima und Karwoche Jerusalems im siebten Jahrhundert, Orients Christianus* 5, 1915, p. 208.
- 49. J. GOAR, *Euchologion sive rituale graecorum*, Venice 1730, p. 591.
- 50. *Typicon (Messina)*, p. 96 ; *Menia*, III, Rome 1896, p. 106-107.
- 51. JOHN CHRYSOSTOM, *Expositio in Ps. 113*, PG 55 (*Clavis 4413*), 307.
- 52. *Typicon*, I, p. 188.



towards us. » Didymus refers the verse to the incarnate Christ as the image of the unseen God. Theodore, 893, refers it to divine illumination as a consolation in calamity. « Athanasius », 73, calls Christ the light of the world, while Chrysostom refers light to God's providence<sup>53</sup>. The marginal Psalters (Chludov, f. 4 ; London, f. 3<sup>o</sup> ; Barberini, f. 9<sup>o</sup>) illustrate the verse with a miniature of David before a cross, upon which is placed a clipeate icon of Christ<sup>54</sup>. In Chludov, the miniature is accompanied by a legend : Δα(ν)ις προφητεύει τὸν τραπου. This is maintained in Barberini, while in London it is reduced to : Δα(ν)ις ἀγέλευ. It is not immediately obvious why David should be supposed to be prophesying about the Cross. However, the almost identical miniature in Chludov, f. 86 (36), is accompanied by the legend : Δα(ν)ις οὐλατον τον τραπου<sup>55</sup>. The word οὐλατον in Patristic usage was sometimes synonymous with the Cross<sup>56</sup>. In Psalm 4,7, the word ἐπιμελόθη occurs, and the illuminator has evidently « translated » it by this miniature (Figures 1,2).

69. Psalm 35,2 : « The transgressor says within himself... » Eusebius, 316-317, and Theodore, 1120-1121, refer this verse to David ; Didymus, 1333, refers it to sinners in general, and « Athanasius », 175, to the Jews. The marginal Psalters (Pantocrator, f. 42 ; Chludov, f. 32<sup>o</sup> ; London, f. 40<sup>o</sup> ; Barberini, f. 60) illustrate the verse with a picture of Judas. The legends in Chludov and Pantocrator describe Judas as τραπόνος. In Patristic tradition Judas was the transgressor *par excellence*<sup>57</sup>. Thus his portrait has been used to « translate » the word.

The other miniatures follow another common practice in Psalter illustration, particularly developed in Theodore, where portraits of saints frequently exemplify prayer and the practice of virtues. In the ninth-century Psalters, the theme of a Psalm was sometimes exemplified by a polemical picture of the iconoclasts, which was, in its turn, referred to a Christological scene. Since this aspect of Psalter illustration has already been studied assiduously, the four miniatures in question can be presented summarily<sup>58</sup>.

70. Psalm 25,4 : « I have not sat with the council of vanity. » Two figures are obliterating a clipeate icon of Christ. C, L, B.

71. Psalm 51,9 : « Behold the man who... has trusted in the abundance of his wealth. » Nicephorus trampling the simoniac John the Grammarian suggested a rapprochement with Saint Peter trampling Simon Magus. Pc, C, L, B.

72. Psalm 68,22 : « They have added to the grief of my wounds. » The obliteration of icons suggested a rapprochement with the Crucifixion (7). C, L, B.

73. Psalm 68,28,29 : « They add iniquity to iniquity... Let them be blotted out of the book of the living. » A simoniac ordination suggested a rapprochement with the bribing of the guards at the sepulchre. C, B.

In these miniatures, the theme of the Psalm has been exemplified with considerable licence. In others, the process is more conventional.

1. Chludov, C, 4 ; Psalm 4,7 (68).

53. JOHN CHRYSOSTOM, *Expositio in psalmos*, PG 55 (*Clavis 44,3*), 54.  
54. The subject recurs in the 12th-century Psalter, Vatican græc. 1927, f. 4<sup>v</sup>, E. DE WALD, *The Illustrations of the Manuscripts of the Septuagint*, III, *Psalms and Odes*, 1, Princeton 1941, p. 4, pl. II.

55. TIKKANEN, p. 69.

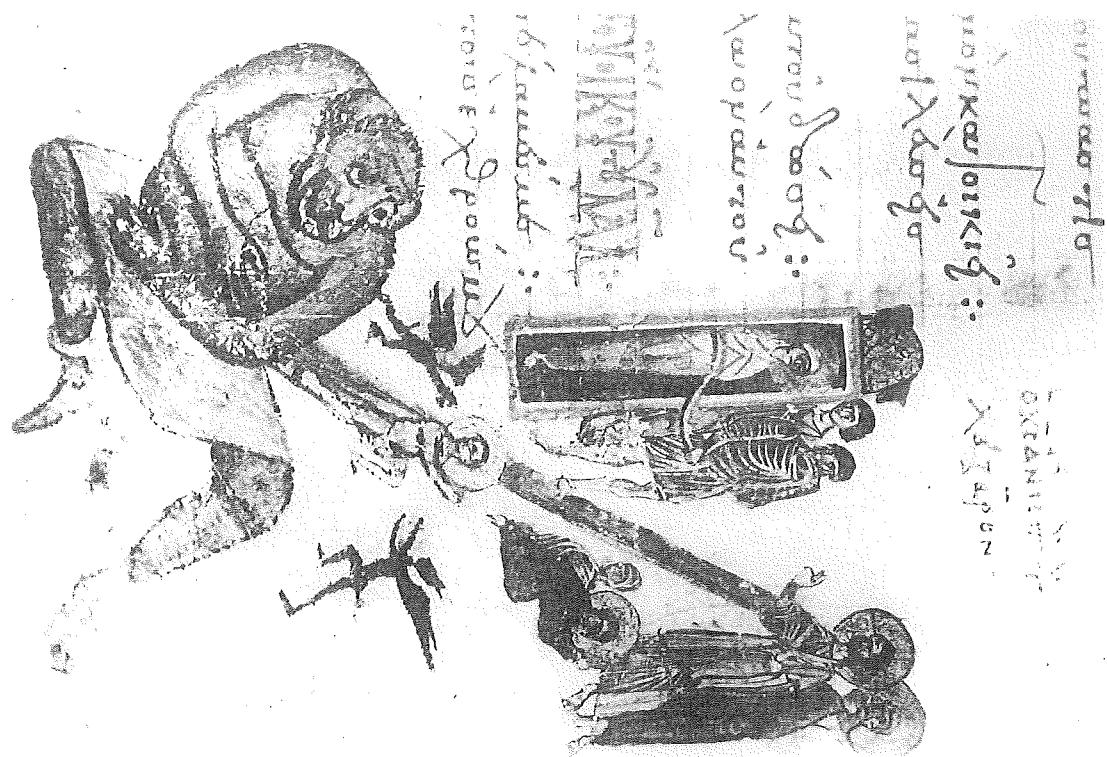
56. JUSTIN MARTYR, *Dialogus cum Tryphonie Iudeo*, 94 ii, edited G. ARCHAMBAULT, Paris 1909 (*Clavis 1076*), p. 100 : PG 6, 700.

57. JOHN CHRYSOSTOM, *In Iohannem homilia 72*, PG 59 (*Clavis 4425*), 391.

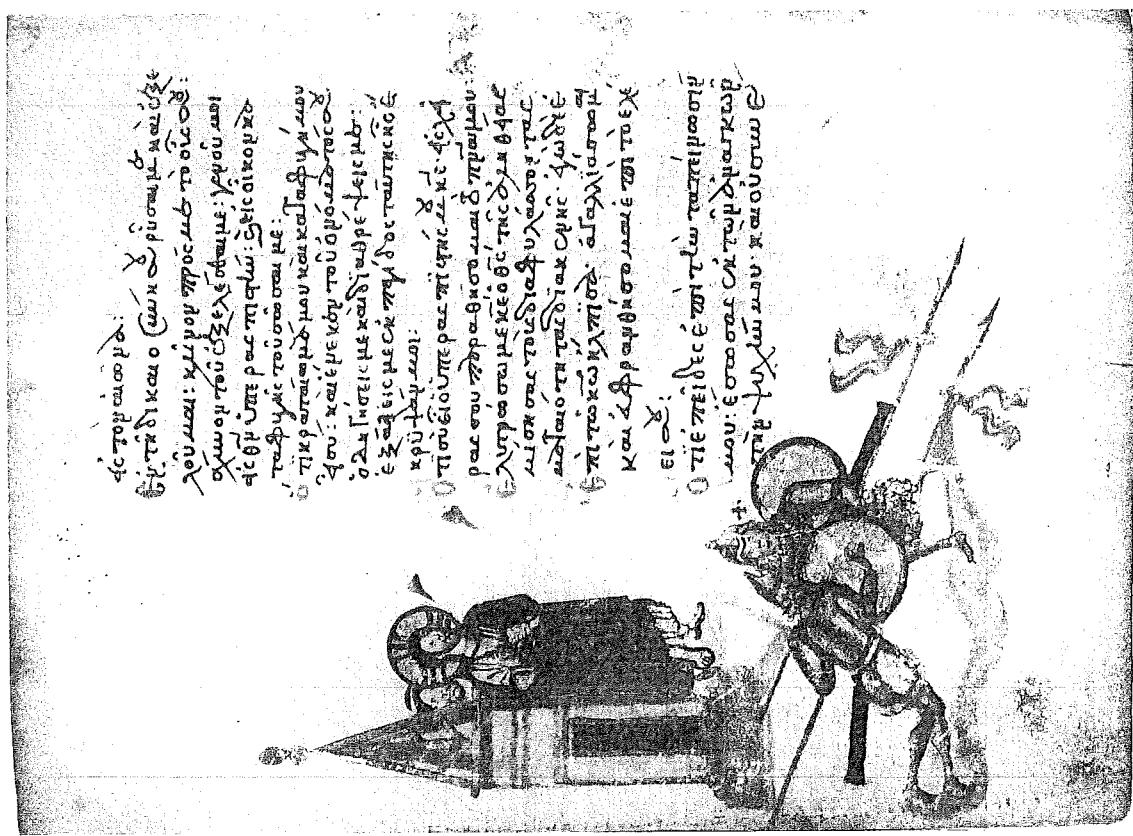
58. GRABAR, *op. cit.* (note 28) ; IDEM, *Quelques notes sur les peintures illustrées byzantines du IX<sup>e</sup> siècle*, C4 15, p. 61-82 ; CUTLER, *art. cit.* (note 8), p. 19 note 9, gives further bibliography.

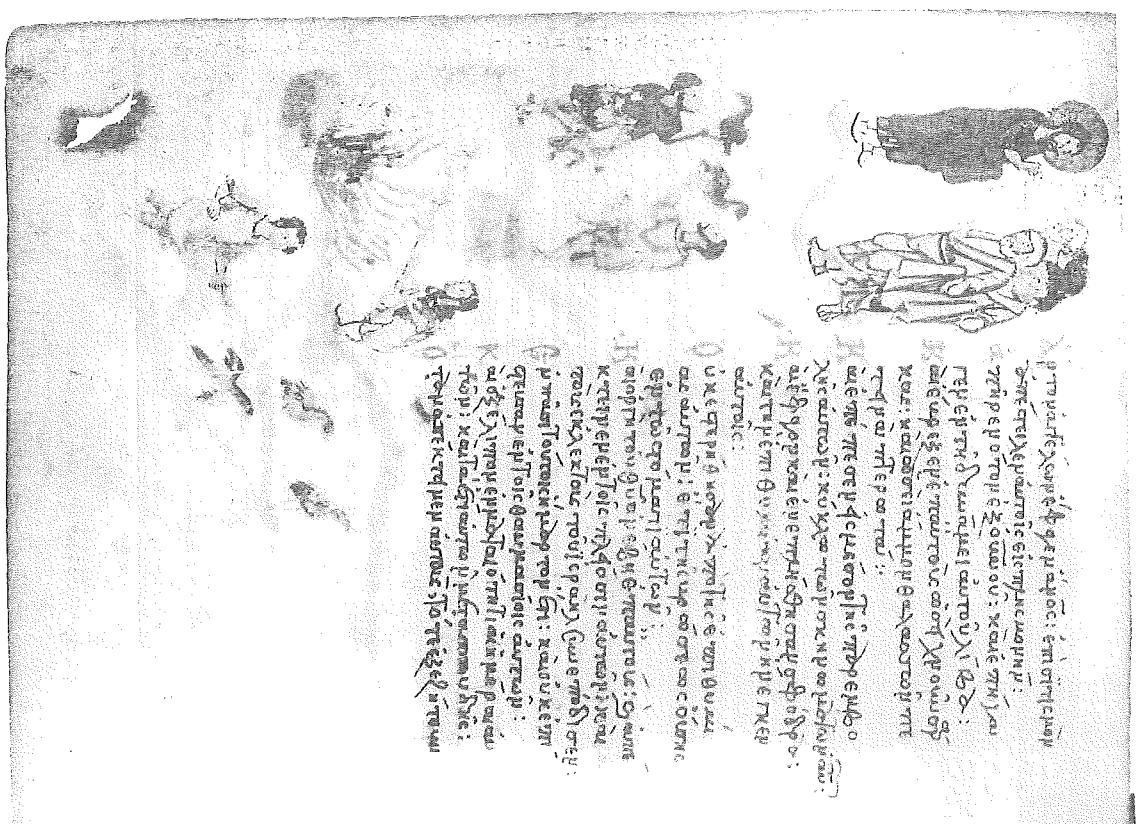


3. Pantocrator, f. 29 ; Psalm 29,4 (50)

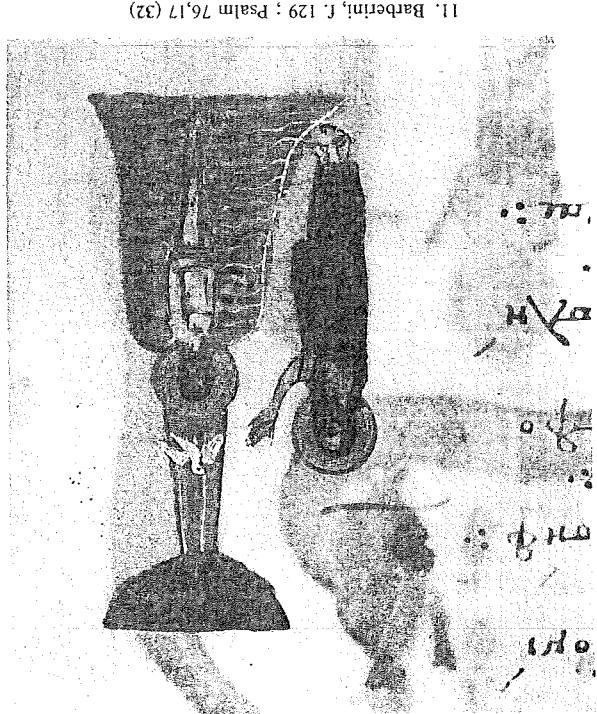


4. Barberini, f. 48 : Psalm 29,4 (50)

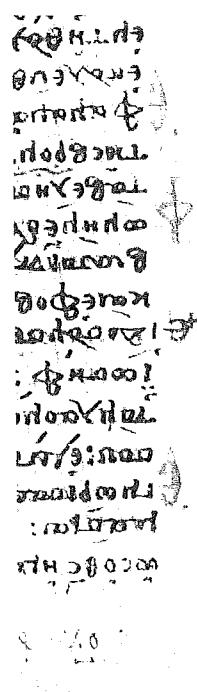


7. Chludov, f. 76<sup>v</sup> : Psalm 77.24 (79)8. Barberini, f. 132<sup>v</sup> : Psalm 77.24 (79)

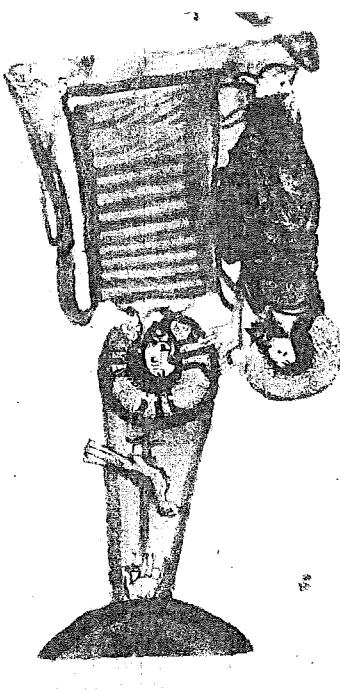
9. Barberini, f. 39 : Psalm 22 (81)



11. Barberini, f. 129 ; Psalm 76,17 (32)



10. Chludov, f. 75 ; Psalm 76,17 (32)



74. Psalm 35,10 : « For with thee is the fountain of life. » Three Patristic commentators (Eusebius, 321 ; Didymus, 1336 ; « Athanasius », 176), refer this verse to Christ. Theodore, 1124, refers it to the Trinity. The marginal Psalters (Pantocrator, f. 42<sup>v</sup> ; Chludov, f. 33 ; London, f. 41 ; Barberini, f. 60<sup>v</sup>) illustrate the verse with a miniature of Christ and the Samaritan woman (*John* 4,5-42). The theme is typologically apt as an exemplification, but I have failed to find a formal *rapprochement* between the Psalm verse and the Samaritan woman.<sup>59</sup>

75. Psalm 35,13 : « There have all the workers of iniquity fallen. » Eusebius, 321, and Theodore, 1125, give this verse a moral interpretation. The marginal Psalters (Pantocrator, f. 42<sup>v</sup> ; Chludov, f. 33<sup>v</sup> ; London, f. 41<sup>v</sup> ; Barberini, f. 61) illustrate the verse with a miniature of those who came to arrest Christ falling to the ground. The legends in Pantocrator and Chludov quote from the relevant passage of the Gospel (*John* 18,6), but, again, I have failed to find the *rapprochement* made in a literary or liturgical text.

76. Psalm 38,10 : « I was dumb and opened not my mouth. » Both Eusebius, 349, and Theodore, 1148, give this verse a moral interpretation. Three marginal Psalters (Pantocrator, f. 48 ; Chludov, f. 38 ; Barberini, f. 68) intercalate a miniature between the two episodes concerning Saint Peter (64), in order to illustrate this verse. The arrest of Christ is accompanied by a portrait of Isaiah. The legends in Pantocrator and Chludov quote the almost similar verse, *Isaias* 53,7 : « He does not open his mouth. » Isaiah's prophecy was taken up in *Mat.* 26,63. It was also applied to the sacrifice of Christ in the rite of the 'prothesis'. However, I have failed to find the rather obvious *rapprochement* with the Psalm verse in any literary text.

77. Psalm 55,6 : « All day long they have abominated my words. » Eusebius, 496, and Theodore, 1286, refer this verse to David. In two ninth-century marginal Psalters (Pantocrator, f. 69 ; Chludov, f. 54<sup>v</sup>), this verse is illustrated with a miniature of the Jews refusing to listen to Christ, as the accompanying legend explains. The miniature recurs in London, f. 70, and Barberini, f. 94, without the explanatory legend.

78. Psalm 67,13 : « Rebuke the wild beasts of the forest. » Eusebius, 713, and Theodore, 1396, refer this verse to those who refuse the Gospel message. « Athanasius », 304, interprets the verse similarly but exemplifies, among those who refuse the Gospel message, evil spirits. This is exemplified in the marginal Psalters (Chludov, f. 65 ; London, f. 85 ; Barberini, f. 112) by a scene of Christ expelling the unclean spirit from the man in the country of the Gerasenes. (*Mat.* 8,28-34, etc.).

79. Psalm 77,24 : « He gave them the bread of heaven ; man ate angels' bread. » Eusebius, 917, and Theodore, 1489, comment the latter phrase. « Athanasius », 353, interprets manna as spiritual nourishment for the soul. Late the *Historia ecclesiastica* would assimilate manna to the Eucharistic bread<sup>60</sup>. In Pantocrator, f. 105, and Chludov, f. 76<sup>v</sup>, the verse is commented by a miniature of Christ addressing a group of figures. The legend in Pantocrator calls Christ the bread of

59. The typology of Christ as the fountain of life was used by CLEMENT OF ALEXANDRIA, *Protrepticus*, edited O. STÄUBLIN, Leipzig 1905 (*Clavis* 1375), p. 78<sup>22</sup> ; PG 8, 228.

60. WALTER, *op. cit.* (note 36), p. 235.

61. GERMANUS I, *Historia mystica ecclesiae catholicae*, 3, edited F. BRIGHTMAN, *The Historia Mystagogia and Other Greek Commentaries on the Byzantine Liturgy*, *The Journal of Theological Studies* 9, 1908 (*Clavis* 8023), p. 258. For manna as a type of Christ, see ORIGEN, *Commentarii in Iohannem*, VI, edited CÉCILE BLANC, Paris 1970 (*Clavis* 1453), p. 308 ; PG 14, 280.

heaven, while that in Chludov calls him the bread of life. The illustration is typologically apt, even if the verse was not regularly explained in this sense. In Barberini, f. 132<sup>60</sup>, the same scene recurs without a legend, while London omits it altogether (Figures 7, 8).

80. Psalm 90,7,10 : « A thousand shall fall at thy side... No evils shall come upon thee. » These verses are referred by Theodoret, 1608, to the enemies of the Israelites and by « Athanasius », 400-401, to the enemies of Christ. The marginal Psalters (Chludov, f. 92 ; London, f. 123 ; Barberini, f. 158) exemplify the verses by miniatures of the Massacre of the innocents and of the flight to Egypt respectively.

Since some forty of the Christological themes represented in the ninth-century marginal Psalters correspond to the interpretation in the New Testament or Patristic commentaries of the verse of the Psalm illustrated, it is clear that their illuminators were faithful in part to a well-established exegetic tradition. Whether there existed a parallel tradition, dating back to the epoch before Iconoclasm, for illustrating Psalters remains a matter for speculation<sup>61</sup>. On the other hand the Rossano Gospels provide evidence that the *rapprochement* of a Christological scene and a Psalm verse was practised, although in reverse. Six times in the Rossano Gospels, below a Christological scene, the Psalm verse is quoted which would be illustrated by the same scene in the marginal Psalters : f. 1<sup>o</sup>, Entry to Jerusalem (2) ; f. 3, Christ washing the feet of the apostles (5) ; f. 2, Christ expelling merchants from the temple (6) ; f. 1<sup>o</sup>, Entry to Jerusalem (12) ; f. 4<sup>o</sup>, Gethsemane (47) ; f. 3<sup>o</sup>, Communion of the Apostles (50)<sup>62</sup>.

However, in the marginal Psalters, the exegetical tradition of the Fathers is carried further. It is not difficult to establish a relationship between this development and trends in Byzantine theology from the seventh century. First of all, the Iconophiles attached great importance to the revelation of Christ's humanity in the Old Testament. In his discussion of the meaning of the term εἰκὼν, John Damascene gave the word a far wider extension than that of the word icon as a pictorial representation<sup>63</sup>. He distinguished six kinds of image, of which the fourth kind was Scripture itself and the fifth kind the types which predict the future. This renewed interest in typology is also apparent in the *Historia ecclesiastica* where it is said that the antiphons of the liturgy are the oracles of the prophets who announced in advance the coming of the Son of God<sup>64</sup>.

As an example of a type which predicts the future, John Damascene cites that of the dew on Gedeon's steece as predicting the Virgin and Mother of God. This type had already been expounded by the Fathers, and it figures in the illustration of marginal Psalters (30). However, whereas the Fathers applied it directly to Christ,

John Damascene applied it to the Virgin<sup>65</sup>. Developments in the typology of the Virgin had begun before the Iconoclast controversy, which, nevertheless, gave new impetus to it, not only because the value of the Virgin's intercessory powers had been called in doubt, but also because it was from his mother that Christ received human form. Because he had human form, Christ could be represented in the figurative arts. Some typological shifts which bring the Virgin into greater prominence have been noted above. Psalm verses (51, 53) previously interpreted as referring to the Church were applied in the eighth century to the Virgin. Similarly the type of the unicorn, previously applied to Christ, was reinterpreted in the *Physiologus* and extended to the Virgin (54).

To the discussion by other scholars of the iconographical types created or adapted by ninth-century artists to represent these Christological themes, three complements may be added<sup>66</sup>.

The Baptism of Christ is represented four times in the marginal Psalters (19, 32, 66, 67), but with slight variations in the iconography. Most often the posture of John the Baptist is conventional. He extends his right hand and places it on Christ's head<sup>67</sup>. In illustration to Psalm 113 (67), the illuminators of Pantocrator and Paris have omitted the figure of John the Baptist. In the two miniatures in Chludov (32, 67), John the Baptist is exceptionally represented not baptizing Christ but extending both hands towards him in a gesture of prayer or adoration (Figures 10, 11). In each case (67), the illuminator of Barberini has copied this gesture exactly, while the illuminator of London has returned to the traditional gesture. The unusual iconography in Chludov suggests that the ninth-century artist, as in the contemporary iconography of the Déesis, wished to call attention to John the Baptist's role as a principal witness that Christ was God incarnate<sup>68</sup>.

The iconography of the Resurrection of Lazarus is unusual (50). The theme is presented in narrative form (Figures 3, 4). A personification of Hades grasps the souls of the dead in a sarcophagus. A diminutive figure of Lazarus, his hands outstretched, returns to earth. Christ, as in the conventional iconography of this theme, summons Lazarus, swathed in a winding-cloth, from the tomb. The miniatures in London and Barberini, while differing slightly from that in Pantocrator, resemble each other and are probably close to that which would have been painted on the lost folio of Chludov. I have already suggested that this theme was chosen, because the verse was quoted by John of Ephesus. The connection between text and miniature may be yet closer, for the same narrative sequence occurs in both<sup>69</sup>.

Grabar has noted the importance attached by the Iconophiles to the association

66. *Orationes*, ed. cit. (note 30), p. 129 : PG 94, 1341. Henceforth this type would be regularly applied to the Virgin. See THÉODORE STUDIOR, *Oraatio S. In dormitionem deiparae*, PG 99, 725.

67. GRABAR, op. cit. (note 28) ; R. CORMACK, Painting after Iconoclasm, *Iconoclasm du Pravier d'Utrecht*, Paris, 1978.

68. A. MUÑOZ, *Il codice purpureo di Rossano e il frammento sinopse*, Rome, 1907, p. 6-7 ; V. LAZAREV, *Storia della pittura bizantina*, Turin, 1967, p. 43, 59 (dating the manuscript to the second half of the 6th century) ; WALTER, op. cit. (note 56), p. 185, 191.

69. IDEM, Two Notes on the Déesis, REB 26, 1968, p. 324-336.  
70. See above (note 25). (Christ) commanded the soul to come up from Hades and enter the body. (The soul) cried out : « Those murky persons are pushing me backwards. » Then (Christ) called : « Lazarus, come out. »

65. GERMANUS I, *Historia mystica*, 32, ed. cit. (note 61), p. 265.

60. Psalm 90,7,10 : « A thousand shall fall at thy side... No evils shall come upon thee. » These verses are referred by Theodoret, 1608, to the enemies of the Israelites and by « Athanasius », 400-401, to the enemies of Christ. The marginal Psalters (Chludov, f. 92 ; London, f. 123 ; Barberini, f. 158) exemplify the verses by miniatures of the Massacre of the innocents and of the flight to Egypt respectively.

61. Cf. the discussion by J. B. ROBERTSON, *Iconoclasm and the Ninth-Century Psalters*, Cambridge, 1970, pp. 11-12.

62. A. CURTLE, *The Byzantine Psalter : Before and after Iconoclasm*, *Iconoclasm*, edited Judith HERRIN & A. BRYER, Birmingham 1977 ; Suzy DUFRENNE, *Les illustrations du Pravier d'Utrecht*, Paris, 1978.

63. A. MUÑOZ, *Il codice purpureo di Rossano e il frammento sinopse*, Rome, 1907, p. 6-7 ; V. LAZAREV, *Storia della pittura bizantina*, Turin, 1967, p. 43, 59 (dating the manuscript to the second half of the 6th century) ; WALTER, op. cit. (note 56), p. 185, 191.

64. JOHN DAMASCENE, *Orationes de imaginibus tres*, ed. cit. (note 30), p. 125-130 : PG 94, 1337-1344.

of the cult of the Cross with that of Christ's icon<sup>71</sup>. To the texts which he adds in support of this association may be added one due to John Damascene<sup>72</sup>. However, he did not insist on the important place of this theme in the ninth-century Psalters. It was used to illustrate three Psalms (36, 55, 68). The iconographical type was not an innovation, for it had already been used in the apse of Sant' Apollinare in Classe, Ravenna, to represent the Transfiguration. However, both the context and the connotations of the icon on the Cross are quite different in the marginal Psalters (Figures 1, 2).

#### VI. CHRISTOLOGICAL THEMES IN THE ELEVENTH-CENTURY PSALTERS

So far as the Christological miniatures are concerned, it is not difficult to reconstruct the model on which both London and Barberini depend<sup>73</sup>. It would have contained the miniatures which are identical in Chludov, London and Barberini. It would also have contained the miniatures common to Chludov and Barberini but omitted or adapted in London. Besides these there would have been others which are similar in London and Barberini but different in Chludov.

One group of miniatures common to London and Barberini consists of those in which the artist has been confused by an error in his model. Most of these errors have been already noted. Twice the copyist responsible for the model misunderstood the Chludov miniatures, because they were juxtaposed on the same folio. This is evident in the two miniatures illustrating Psalms 50 and 51<sup>a</sup>. Psalm 108 is illustrated in Chludov, f. 113 (47), with a miniature of Christ at prayer in Gethsemane, which is placed beside the title of the Psalm at the top of the folio. In Barberini, f. 190<sup>b</sup>, the Psalm begins on the folio, on which Psalm 107 ends. This same scene is referred to in Barberini to Psalm 107,15 (the penultimate verse) : « Give us help in tribulation ». The same displacement occurs in London, f. 149.

On three occasions, the copyist of the model failed to understand the iconography of the Chludov miniature. In Chludov, f. 48<sup>c</sup>, the illustration to Psalm 49,3 (24) is correctly rendered. However, the copyist failed to understand the personification of the setting sun, which in Barberini, f. 84<sup>d</sup>, has been replaced by an actual representation of the sun, while in London, f. 62, it is travestied as the head of an animal with horns<sup>e</sup>. In the somewhat similar miniature illustrating Habbakuk's *Ode* in Chludov, f. 15<sup>f</sup>, the sun is correctly rendered disappearing behind a hill, and the significance of the miniature is made clear by the legends. In Barberini, f. 257<sup>g</sup>, the miniature has been copied sketchily, while in London, f. 198, the hill has disappeared, making nonsense of the miniature. In both the eleventh-century manuscripts, the legend has been omitted. The third misunderstanding occurs in the copies of the miniature of Christ calming the tempest, illustrating Psalm 88,10 (39). In Chludov,

71. GRABAR, *op. cit.* (note 28), p. 204-205.

72. *Orationes, ed. cit.* (note 30), p. 140 : PG 94, 1326.

73. London is dated 1066. ANDERSON, *art. cit.* (note 3), p. 60, dates Barberini between 1092 and 1118, perhaps around 1095. For reasons that cannot be developed here, I would propose a date around 1050 for the model. In this section, I add a few complements to DER NERSESSIAN, p. 63-70.

74. The copyist moved David incongruously to the illustration of Psalm 51, DER NERSESSIAN, p. 33, 68-69, fig. 105, 106, 327-329. The error is not repeated in *Vatican græc.* 1927, f. 93, DE WALD, *op. cit.* (note 54), p. 18, pl. xxiii.

75. ANDERSON, *art. cit.* (note 3), p. 40, fig. 6-8.

f. 88, the personifications of the sea and wind are correctly rendered and identified by legends. Notably the personification of the wind holds his customary horn pointing downwards and places his hand over his mouth in a gesture of silence. In the same scene in London, f. 117<sup>h</sup>, and Barberini, f. 151<sup>i</sup>, the legends are omitted and the two figures corresponding to the personifications fall back incongruously into the sea<sup>j</sup>.

The modern art historian, by referring back to Chludov, can decipher these miniatures and attribute a significance to them. The illuminators of London and Barberini did not have this advantage. This consideration invites one to raise a wider question : since the illuminators of London, Barberini and their common model clearly misunderstood some of the Chludov miniatures, did they really understand the other Christological miniatures, even when they rendered them correctly ? One sign of their apparent indifference to the purport of these miniatures is the disappearance or reduction of the accompanying legends. Often the legend which is explicative in Chludov is replaced in the eleventh-century Psalters by one which is nominative. For example, the explicative legend accompanying the miniature of the Annunciation in Chludov, f. 45 (51), is replaced in London, f. 56<sup>k</sup>, by δοκιμητοῦ (5) and in Barberini, f. 78<sup>l</sup>, by οὐ περιπολοῦ (sic). The same occurs in the miniature of the sleeping guards at the sepulchre, illustrating Psalm 30,5,7 (62). Yet in this case, if my explanation of the swooping angel is correct, the illuminator of the model must have grasped the purport of the miniature (Figures 5, 6). In other cases, where there is no legend in the eleventh-century Psalters, the miniature is virtually meaningless ; as, for example Saint Peter's protestation of fidelity, illustrating Psalm 38,2 (64). Another example is provided by Christ explaining to his disciples that he is the bread of life, illustrating Psalm 77,24 (79). The miniature in Barberini, f. 132<sup>m</sup>, could as well represent Moses addressing the Israelites (Figures 7, 8). The illuminator of London preferred to omit this miniature, replacing it by a literal « translation » of the second phrase of the Psalm verse : « Man ate angels' bread ». It is likely that the explicative legends had already been omitted in large part in the model used by the illuminators of London and Barberini, also that in large part the copies of the Christological miniatures were executed mechanically.

There is a considerable number of miniatures common to London and Barberini which do not appear in the ninth-century marginal Psalters. However, singularly few illustrate Christological themes.

81. Psalm 22,1 : « The Lord tends me as a shepherd. » All the Patristic commentators (Eusebius, 216-220 ; Didymus, 1289-1293 ; Theodore, 1025-1029 ; Athanasius, 140) refer this Psalm to Christ as the Good Shepherd (*Iohn* 10). In Bristol, f. 37, the illustration is literal. Both London, f. 24, and Barberini, f. 39, illustrate the Psalm with a miniature of Abraham seated by a river, which flows from the mouth of a personification. Lazarus, as recounted in *Luke* 16,23, is seated in Abraham's bosom. Abraham extends his hand towards a tree, placed by the river, in order to pluck a fruit (Figure 9). An explanation of this paradisiac interpretation of the Psalm may be found in the Byzantine rite for the funeral of a priest<sup>n</sup>. This Psalm

76. DER NERSESSIAN, p. 66.

77. GOAR, *op. cit.* (note 49), p. 452 ; M. ARRANZ, *Les prières presbytérales de la "Pannychis", La maladie et la mort du chrétien dans la liturgie*, edited A. TRIACCA, Rome 1975, p. 73.

was used in the rite, while, in the prayers, there are several references to Paradise and to Lazarus seated in Abraham's bosom.

§2. Psalm 44,15 : « Virgins shall be brought to the king after her. » As noted above (§1), this Psalm was interpreted by the Patristic commentators as referring to the Church, although it was later applied to the Virgin. In London, f. 57, and Barberini, f. 79, the verse is illustrated with a scene of the Presentation of the Virgin. This verse was used as the *koinonikon* in the liturgy of the feast<sup>78</sup>.

§3. Psalm 71,11 : « And all the kings shall worship him. » Eusebius, 309, and Theodore, 1436, interpret this verse eschatologically, while « Athanasius », in his commentary, 325, includes a reference to the Magi. In Bristol, f. 115<sup>79</sup>, London, f. 92, and Barberini, f. 120, the verse is illustrated with a scene of the Adoration of the Magi. This Psalm was used in the office of the sixth hour of the Vigil of Christmas<sup>80</sup>.

§4. Psalm 131,7 : « Let us worship at the place where his feet stood. » Didymus, 1589, and « Athanasius », 521, refer this verse to the Mount of Olives, while Theodore, 1905, referred it to the divine temple. In London, f. 172<sup>81</sup>, and Barberini, f. 223, the verse is illustrated with a miniature of Christ, wearing a long straight colobium, attached to the Cross. To left and right stand figures inclined towards him. The verse, as well as the miniature, resemble Psalm 98,5,9 (55). Yet it does not seem that this verse was used directly in any rite or celebration connected with the Cross. On the other hand, it was quoted in the *troparion* Σημεῖον τῷ προοπτικῷ τετραήπτονον Μόνον, which was frequently used in Byzantine worship, notably for the feast of the Exaltation of the Cross and in the rite of the veneration of the Cross on the 4th Tuesday in Lent<sup>82</sup>.

A final Christological scene occurs only in London.

§5. Psalm 2,2 : « The rulers are gathered together against the anointed. » The operative word in this verse is obviously *χριτόνος*. The Psalm had already been interpreted Christologically by Hippolytus<sup>83</sup>, Theodore, 869-872, and « Athanasius », 64, followed his example. In Chudov, f. 2<sup>84</sup>, it is illustrated with a miniature of a council of rulers, but with no explicit reference to Christ. In Barberini, f. 7, the miniature is similar, but the position of the figures has been reversed. In Bristol, f. 9, the verse is also illustrated by a miniature of a council, referred by the legend to Herod, Pilate and the leaders of the Jews united against Christ. In London, f. 2, a second miniature is added to that of the council. As the legend explains, it portrays Christ before Anna and Caiaphas.

In conclusion, it may be said that, so far as Christological themes were concerned, the illuminators of the eleventh-century Psalters rarely innovated. Changes made in the Christological miniatures had, for the most part, been introduced already into the model common to London and Barberini. Such changes derive either from liturgical texts or from a literal interpretation of the Psalm. This is as true for the introduction of the swooping angel

into the scene at the sepulchre (§2) and of the statue of Ares into the scene of the Entry to Jerusalem (2). It is also true for the rare new scenes.

Lip-service continued to be paid to the prophetic nature of the Psalms. In London the legend δοῦλος Μέγεθος recurs over thirty times, but what David said and why is not usually specified. Typology had been a major weapon for the Iconophiles in their polemics against the Iconoclasts. In the eleventh-century it had lost its importance. As I have observed elsewhere, Iconoclasm excited less interest among eleventh-century Constantinopolitans than among Byzantine scholars of our times<sup>85</sup>. In their polemics, Medieval Byzantine theologians assimilated their opponents not to Iconoclasts but to Arians. So far as the marginal Psalters are concerned, the eleventh-century *Zeitgeist* is manifest rather in iconographical themes inspired by the cult of Constantinople as the New Sion and by the cult of Constantinopolitan saints<sup>86</sup>. Already present in the model and Barberini, it received its fullest expression in London, in which, more than in the other manuscripts, the Messianic significance of the Psalter is rendered perfunctorily and relegated to the background.

78. TIKKANEN, p. 49; CUTLER, *art. cit.* (note 8), p. 22.  
 79. TIKKANEN, p. 50; *Typicon (Messina)*, p. 81; *Merton*, II, Rome 1889, p. 639.  
 80. *Typicon*, I, p. 28; II, p. 40; *Ititia hymnorum*, III, p. 496.  
 81. RONDEAU, *op. cit.* (note 4), p. 33.

82. WALTER, *op. cit.* (note 36), p. 214.  
 83. DER NERSESSIAN, p. 77-98.

“LATTER-DAY” SAINTS AND THE IMAGE  
OF CHRIST IN THE NINTH-CENTURY  
BYZANTINE MARGINAL PSALTERS

*For the twelfth centenary of the Second Council of Nicaea*

The introduction of miniatures of “latter-day” saints — that is to say of saints who lived in post-apostolic times — into illuminated marginal psalters marks a definite departure from the practice of literary commentators, who normally limited their typological interpretation of the Psalms to New Testament persons and events.<sup>1</sup> Tikkannen was already intrigued by these miniatures of “latter-day” saints.<sup>2</sup> He explained their presence in some cases by referring them to the use of the Psalm verse in the saint’s liturgical office. Mariès first attempted to establish a comprehensive list of the saints represented in marginal psalters.<sup>3</sup> However he did not distinguish between New Testament saints, for whose presence a typological explanation is usually possible, those who figure as authors or commentators and genuine “latter-day” saints, for whose presence some other explanation is required.

Mariès noted that miniatures of saints are far more numerous in eleventh- than in ninth-century psalters, but he did not attempt an explanation of this increase. It is likely that it was related to modifications introduced

1. Ch. WALTER, Christological Themes in the Byzantine Marginal Psalters from the Ninth to the Eleventh Century, *REB* 44, 1986, p. 269-287.

2. J.-J. TIKKANNEN, *Die Psalterillustration im Miniatuer*, Helsingfors 1895-1900, reprinted Soest, Netherlands 1975, p. 74-78.

3. L. MARIES, L’irruption des saints dans l’illustration du psautier byzantin, *An. Boll.* 68, 1950, p. 153-162.

## I. REPERTORY OF MINIATURES

*i. Anonymous figures illustrating an aspect of saintliness*

in both the eleventh-century psalters, whose overall programme is differently orientated from that of the earlier ones. This question cannot be treated here. André Grabar was the first scholar to investigate the reasons for introducing "latter-day" saints into the ninth-century psalters. "Je soupçonne", he wrote, "que tous les saints précis (...) qui figurent sur les marges du psautier du 9<sup>e</sup> siècle y apparaissent en fonction de l'œuvre de restauration des icônes".<sup>4</sup> This explanation, which he did not develop in detail, left Jean Gouillard unconvinced. "Cette explication", wrote Gouillard, "ne nous paraît pas s'imposer, tant l'illustrateur se laisse facilement diriger dans le choix de ses figurines par des associations de mots".<sup>5</sup> Yet it would seem that Grabar's and Gouillard's explanations are complementary rather than contradictory. As will be seen, it is not difficult to discern in most cases why the artist considered the saint whom he chose to be relevant to the Psalm verse illustrated. On the other hand, it is unlikely that the presence of these "latter-day" saints depends only on word associations. One would expect their choice to be relevant to the Iconophile cause, particularly if their introduction into Psalter illustration represented a new departure. There is also, in two cases, a significant iconographical link with the overall programme of the Psalters : the presence in the miniature of the clipeate image of Christ.

The article begins with a repertory of the saints, unnamed and named.

The latter are, in fact, few in number : one in the Paris Psalter ; three in the Pantocrator Psalter ; six in the Chludov Psalter.<sup>6</sup> To these must, of course, be added the miniatures in which the Iconophile patriarch Nicephorus is represented. Their place in the overall programme is then discussed, with particular reference to the clipeate image of Christ. Finally it is argued that the presence of the "latter-day" saints — excluding Nicephorus — is best explained by the hypothesis that there was a common model for these three ninth-century Psalters, whose programme was elaborated in the late eighth century in Palestine. This was later adapted by the introduction of the miniatures concerning the patriarch Nicephorus and his adversary John Grammaticus.

*ii. Named "latter-day" saints*

11. Symeon the Styliste the Younger (?), Psalm 4,4 : Know that the Lord has done wonderful things for his holy one ( $\tauὸν ὄντον αὐτὸν$ ). C, f. 3<sup>v</sup>. A bearded figure looks from the window of his dwelling, which is placed on top of the legend : εἰσάκουοντον γιου, καὶ πρό.

*iii. Martyrs*

1. The blessed man. Psalm 1,1 : Blessed is the man who has not walked in the counsel of the ungodly. C, f. 2. A haloed figure is seated, holding a codex in his hands. To the left is a clipeate image of Christ. There is a legend : παρέποντος.

2. Saints. Psalm 15,3 : On behalf of the saints ( $τοὺς τριήγιους$ ) that are in his land. C, f. 11<sup>v</sup>. A group of unhaloed figures are bunched together. The front figure is represented οὐρανοῦ.

3. Martyr. Psalm 24,10 : Truth to them that seek his covenant and his testimonies ( $τὸ δικαιούμενον αὐτὸν$ ). C, f. 22<sup>v</sup>. A figure is lying outstretched, naked apart from a monastic scapular, with blood flowing from his wounds.

4. The just. Psalm 33,18 : The just cried and the Lord heard them. C, f. 30<sup>v</sup>. A group of monks are represented in various attitudes of prayer. Rays descend on them from a blue segment above. There is a legend : δικαιοῦ.

5. Martyrs. Psalm 33,20(?) : Many are the tribulations of the just. There is a legend : οἱ ἀγνοοῦμενοι.

6. Reliquary. Psalm 33,21 : He keeps all their bones. C, 30<sup>v</sup>. A reliquary.

7. The just. Psalm 36,39 : The salvation of the just is from the Lord. Pc, f. 46<sup>v</sup>. Two haloed figures extend their right hands in a gesture of prayer. There is a legend : δικαιοῦ.

8. Martyrdom. Psalm 43,23 : For your sake we are put to death all day long. C, f. 44. Three figures are being executed with a sword.

9. Three martyrs. Psalm 67,36 : God is wonderful in his holy ones ( $ἐν τοῖς ἀγίοις αὐτοῦ$ ). C, f. 65<sup>v</sup>. Three haloed figures hold a cross in their right hand. There is a legend : οἱ ἀγνοοῦμενοι.

10. The poor man. Psalm 101, title : A prayer for the poor. C, f. 100 : Pc, f. 141<sup>v</sup>. In C, a seated figure is represented holding his right hand to his mouth. Legend : οἱ πτωχοὶ. In Pc, the figure kneels, his hands outstretched. There is a legend : εἰσάκουοντον γιου, καὶ πρό.

7. The hypothesis that early psalter illustration was literal is based on the lack of typological subjects in the Utrecht Psalter, which may give the most faithful reflection available of early Christian psalter illustration. See also the fragmentary Verona Psalter (7th-8th century). Suzy DUFRENNE, *Les illustrations du Psautier d'Utrecht*, Paris 1978, p. 20-30 ; A. CUTTER, *The Byzantine Psalter : Before and after Iconoclasm*, *Iconoclasm*, edited A. BRYNER & Judith HERRIN, Birmingham 1977, p. 94-95.

<sup>4</sup> Paris and Pantocrator Psalters : Suzy DUFRENNE, *L'illustration des psautiers grecs au Moyen Âge*, I, Paris 1966. Chludov Psalter : Marfa ŠČEPKINA, *Minitajmuri Hludovskoj Psaltori: Grečeskiy illyustrirovannyj kodeks IX veka*, Moscow 1977. References in the text of this article to these psalters is given only by the folio number.

<sup>5</sup> A. GRABAR, *L'Iconochisme byzantin, dossier archéologique*, Paris 1957, p. 227.

<sup>6</sup> J. GOUILARD, *Art et littérature théologique à Byzance au lendemain de la querelle des images*, *Cahiers de civilisation médiévale* 5, 1962, p. 5, reprinted, *La vie religieuse à Byzance*, Vatikum 1981.

<sup>7</sup> Paris and Pantocrator Psalters : Suzy DUFRENNE, *Les illustrations du Psautier d'Utrecht*, Paris 1978, p. 20-30 ; A. CUTTER, *The Byzantine Psalter : Before and after Iconoclasm*, *Iconoclasm*, edited A. BRYNER & Judith HERRIN, Birmingham 1977, p. 94-95.

<sup>8</sup> About the only terms in the Byzantine hagiographical lexicon not already established in the Septuagint Greek are : οὐδολογῆς and λευκῶν.

capital of a column. Below, standing on the base of the column, a figure in a tunic extends his right hand. A receptacle hangs by a cord from the window of the stylite's dwelling. Above him is placed a clipeate image of Christ. A legend : Σωτήρ (miracle) has been added in a later hand. However, according to Maries, the name Symeon may be deciphered on the manuscript below the later legend.

The iconography of stylites, which was well-established before Iconoclasm, has been exhaustively studied by Jacqueline Lafontaine-Dosogne. She points out that the iconography of specific stylite saints had no traits permitting one to distinguish between them. On the other hand it is only in the marginal psalteris that the stylites are represented at the window of their dwelling. Normally they figure in bust form on top of their column. She suggests that the artist of the Chludov Psalter made his picture from life<sup>9</sup>. Another trait peculiar to psalter illustration is the clipeate image above the stylite. It still remains to decide which Symeon is represented here. Maries suggested that this miniature would be of Symeon the Younger, of the "marvellous mountain", by reason of the word association with ἐσπεύσατος in the Psalm<sup>10</sup>.

12. Seven Sleepers of Ephesus. Psalm 32,19 : To deliver their souls from death and keep them alive in famine. C, f. 29 ; Pc, f. 36<sup>v</sup>. In both manuscripts several recumbent figures (clearly seven in Pc) are bunched together. There is a legend in both manuscripts : οἱ ἑπτά ναῦτες ἐν Ἐφέῳ. The choice would have been suggested by the fact that these saints survived death, thanks to their sleeping miraculously through a period of persecution. Although this is the earliest surviving representation of the Seven Sleepers, the rudimentary iconography suggests that it is directly copied from an existing model, possibly even in a simplified form.

13. George. Psalm 43,23 : For your sake, we are put to death all day long. C, f. 44. Saint George, naked apart from a loincloth, lies upon a wheel, fixed to a trestle upon the upper beam of which are seven knives pointing downwards. Blood flows from his back. To either side of the trestle stand figures in tunics who pull on cords attached to George's hands and feet respectively. There is a legend : οἱ ἄριτος Φεόπτυος. This is the "typical" torture scene for Saint George<sup>11</sup>. The scene was probably considered apt to illustrate this Psalm verse, because, in his *Passion*, George is said to have succumbed to and recovered from a whole series of tortures<sup>12</sup>. Again, this is the earliest surviving example of the iconography of George on the wheel.

14. John Chrysostom. Psalm 48,2 : Hear this, all the nations. C, f. 47<sup>v</sup>. A frontal portrait of a bishop holding a book is accompanied by the inscription : οἱ χρυσόστορος. John Chrysostom inherited the title of apostle of the

Gentiles from Saint Paul. He also commented this Psalm. The portrayal of John Chrysostom is rudimentary, and would have been copied from an earlier model. For the general presentation, the icon of Saints Paul, Peter, Nicolas and John Chrysostom at Saint Catherine's, Mount Sinai, offers an obvious parallel, although John Chrysostom's facial features are represented differently.<sup>13</sup>

15. Constantine. Psalm 59,6 : You have given a sign to them that fear you, that they may flee from the bow. C, f. 58<sup>v</sup>. Constantine, seated on a prancing horse, holds a shield and a lance on top of which is a cross. A fallen figure is trampled by the horse, while two others are aiming arrows from their bows. There is a legend : οἱ ἄριος Καυκοτρύπος. The word ὀμησίδον probably suggested an association with the prophecy to Constantine : In this sign you will conquer<sup>14</sup> (Figure 1).

16. Eustace. Psalm 96,11 : Light has sprung up for the righteous and gladness for the upright in heart. C, f. 97<sup>v</sup> ; Pc, f. 138 ; P, f. 5<sup>v</sup>. This is the only theme concerning a named saint of which an illustration has survived in all three ninth-century psalters. The iconography varies slightly from manuscript to manuscript. The simplest version is that in the Pantocrator Psalter, in which Eustace, in armour and mantle, kneels facing towards the stag, his arms outstretched. The fleeing stag turns its head back towards Eustace. Between its antlers is placed a clipeate image of Christ. Eustace's prancing horse is placed to the left ; his spear and shield have fallen to the ground. There is a legend : οἱ ἄριος Εὐστάχος.

In the Paris Psalter, the scene is reversed, such that the stag appears on the left. There was also a further detail, now cut out, although the accompanying legend has survived : Πλέποε ἐν τῇ φύλακτῃ. Thus the lost detail would have been a representation of Saint Peter in prison (*Acts* 17,7).

The scene in the Chludov Psalter closely resembles the preceding one, except that Eustace is placed behind rather than beside his horse. Next to the stag's antlers, a bust figure is represented in a rectangular frame whose triangular top ends in a pinnacle. There are two legends : οἱ ἄριος Χριστός εἰς τὸν ἄριον — οἱ ἄριος Χριστός εἰς τὸν ἄριον (sic).

The iconography of the conversion of Eustace is well attested for this early period. Two examples in Georgia dating from the seventh or eighth centuries,

13. K. WERTZMANN, *The Monastery of Saint Catherine at Mount Sinai: The Icons*, volume one, Princeton 1976, n° B 33 (7th-8th century?).

14. A later hand has added a scholion to this folio, which is made up of two passages from the *Expositio in Psalmos* of Nicephorus Blemmydes, PG 142, 1481-1482. Since there are only slight variants from the published text, I have not transcribed the scholion, but give, with his kind permission, the translation established by Joseph Munitz :

1. οὐοῦ εὐστοχούειν... τοικαντοῦ ῥέγου, commenting Psalm 59,6 : As it marked with a sign were those who fear you and (they) have not been destroyed. By the bow he refers to the warlike weapon. The marking on the faithful, however, (is) the seal of holy baptism, and the imprint of the life, giving cross, by means of which we escape from the devils' varied bows.

2. οὐαλακούων τῇ εὐσπεριῃ... οὐιγά λογοῖς καὶ θεοῖς, commenting Psalm 59,8 : I shall rejoice in the well-being of my people, and I shall allot to them the city of the tribe of Ephraim ; the city called Sikima, and the place that formerly was of the Sikimians, which is called the valley of dogs ; by these (terms), however, he refers to the whole of Judea. — The words in italics are quotations from the Psalm commented.

9. Jacqueline LAFONTAINE-DOSOGNE, *Itinéraires archéologiques dans la région d'Antioche. Recherches sur le monastère et sur l'iconographie de S. Syméon Stylié le jeune*, Brussels 1967, p. 199.

10. MARIES, *art. cit.* (note 3), p. 161.

11. Temily MARK WEINER, *Narrative Cycles of the Life of St. George in Byzantine Art*, doctoral dissertation, New York 1977 ; Ch. WALTER, *The Cycle of Saint George in the Monastery of Decani, Symposium Decani and XIVth-century Art in the Byzantine World*, Belgrade & Decani 1985 (printing).

12. MARIES, *art. cit.* (note 3), p. 159.

the relief from Cebeldi and the stele of Davit Gareja (Figure 5), show a bust of Christ between the antlers of the stag which he has been pursuing<sup>15</sup>. In early Cappadocian frescoes a cross between the antlers was preferred<sup>16</sup>. The miniatures of the three ninth-century psalters are, therefore, in this respect, closer to the Georgian iconography, although only in the psalters does the bust image of Christ take on clipeate form. Another detail peculiar to the ninth-century psalters is the association with Saint Peter. In the *Life* of Eustace, his conversion is contrasted with that of Cornelius (*Acta* 10). Whereas Eustace was directly illuminated by Christ, Cornelius was converted by the intermediary action of Saint Peter<sup>17</sup>. If the Chludov miniature is considered in isolation, it could be supposed that this contrast is implicit in its iconography, for the sense of the triangular frame surrounding the bust of Saint Peter is not immediately evident. Šćepkina considered it to be a cabinet for icons (*kiono*). Its form also resembles that of a Byzantine lantern. The nearest analogy in the Chludov Psalter is the stylite's dwelling (f. 3'). This, taken in conjunction with the legend for the missing detail in the Paris Psalter, makes the interpretation of the frame as a schematic prison the most plausible. The operative word in the Psalm verse illustrated is φῶς, which is taken up in both legends. Consequently the spiritual illumination of Eustace is being compared with the illumination of Peter's prison when he was rescued by an angel<sup>18</sup>.

17. Panteleimon. Psalm 123,6 : Blessed be the Lord who has not given us for a prey to their teeth. P.C. f. 182. The folio for this Psalm is missing from the Chludov Psalter, but, since the miniature recurs in both the Barberini and London Psalters, it is reasonable to suppose that it once figured there. Panteleimon, haloed, kneels beside a rudimentary hillside, his hands covered and outstretched in prayer. To his left is a panther. Above, Daniel is represented standing, while two lions lick his feet. There are two legends : Δανιήλ — ὁ ἔγως Παύλος τελετηπού. It is told in the *Life* of Panteleimon, whose original name was Pantoileon, that in the arena the wild beasts refused to devour him<sup>19</sup>. Thus the association with the Psalm verse is as appropriate for him as for Daniel.

15. N. A. ALADASHVILI. *Monumentalnaja skulptura Gruzii*, Moscow 1977, p. 60 ; NIcole THIERRY, *Essai de définition d'un atelier de sculpture du Haut Moyen Âge en Gogarene. Revue des études géorgiennes et caucasiennes* 1, 1985, p. 178-179.  
 16. At Saint John the Baptist, Čavuşin, Nicole THIERRY, *Haut Moyen Âge en Cappadoce*, Paris 1983, p. 97 ; at Mavrican, church n° 3, *Badem des savants*, octobre-décembre 1972, p. 255 ; at Davulju kilisesi, EADEB, Mentalité et formulation iconoclastes en Anatolie, *Journal des savants*, août-juin 1976, p. 85-87. See also Anita CORMOUSSE, Une représentation rare de la vision de saint Bustache dans une église grecque du xiii<sup>e</sup> siècle, 1972, p. 51-60.  
 17. S. Eustachii acta antiqua (BHG 641), PG 105, 377-381 = JOHN DAMASCENE, *Oratio-nis de imaginibus tress* (Clavis 8045), B. KÖTTER, *Die Schriften des Iohannes von Damaskos*, III, Berlin 1975, p. 177-178 ; PG 94, 138.  
 18. GRABAR, *op. cit.* (note 4), p. 227, wrote in error that this comparison also occurs in the text of the *Acta* of Eustace.  
 19. *Passio* (BHG 1414n), *Menologij anonymi byzantini saeculi X*, græca supersum, edited B. LATYSEV, II, Petrograd 1912, § 12, *Passio* (BHG 1412z), *Hagiographica græca* inedita, ed. B. LATYSEV, Mémoires de l'Académie impériale de St-Pétersbourg, VII<sup>e</sup> série, 12, 2, 1914, § 20, p. 49-50.

There is little consistency in the way that these saints are represented. Only three are haloed (John Chrysostom, Eustace, Panteleimon) ; only four are called saints in the accompanying legends (George, Constantine, Eustace, Panteleimon). There are also clear differences in the quality of their rendering. John Chrysostom and the Seven Sleepers seem to be mechanical copies from a current model. The scene of George in the wheel is more developed, but remains independent of the text. On the other hand, the scene of Constantine, while recalling the traditional triumphal imagery of emperors on horseback, has been made relevant to the Psalm verse by the introduction of figures aiming arrows from their bows (Figure 1). Two "latter-day" saints — Eustace and Panteleimon — have been coupled with a biblical saint, as if to render them more respectable. This might be considered an answer to the Iconoclast challenge to the cult of "latter-day" saints, which, if ancient, had yet to be systematized. It might well be — although there is no possibility of certitude — that the introduction of named saints into Psalter illustration was a recent initiative. They do not, of course, figure in the aristocratic Psalters ; in the Utrecht Psalter only one "latter-day" saint is represented, Saint Laurence along with Saints Peter and Paul<sup>20</sup> ; in the Bristol Psalter, the unique hagiographical miniature occurs on f. 24, where Psalm 15,3 is illustrated by a group of anonymous martyrs<sup>21</sup>.

Two points made by Gouillard are not in doubt<sup>22</sup>. All these named saints were aptly chosen, and, as is evident from the small number compared with those whose *Lives* are cited in the Iconophile *florilegia*, the representation of saints has not been undertaken systematically. Nevertheless, a fairly strong case can be argued in favour of Grabar's proposition that these saints *do* appear in the Psalters, as in the *florilegia*, as witnesses to Iconophile doctrines challenged by the Iconoclasts. There is, indeed, little overlap with the *florilegium* compiled for the second Council of Nicaea, which cites passages concerned only with two of the saints represented here : John Chrysostom and the two Symeons<sup>23</sup>. On the other hand four saints represented are cited in the *florilegium* compiled by John Damascene. Twice the passage cited corresponds directly to the scene represented : the triumph of Constantine<sup>24</sup> and the conversion of Eustace<sup>25</sup>. In the other two cases — John Chrysostom and the two Symeons — the artist has not established a direct relationship.

The passage quoted by John Damascene, from the *Life* of Symeon the Younger is the account of the merchant of Antioch who set up Symeon's icon in a public place<sup>26</sup>. When three men tried to take it down, they were miraculously

20. DUFRENNE, *op. cit.* (note 7), p. 149-150.  
 21. DUFRENNE, *op. cit.* (note 6), p. 50.  
 22. GOUILARD, *art. cit.* (note 5), p. 5-6.  
 23. P. VAN DEN VEN, *La patristique et l'imagiographie au concile de Nicée de 787*, Byz. 25-27, 1955-1957, p. 357-358 n° 63, 73, 74.  
 24. JOHN DAMASCENE, *op. cit.* (note 17), edited KÖTTER, p. 173, PG 94, 1373-1376 = EUSEBIUS, *Historia ecclesiastica* (Clavis 3495), 9, 9, edited G. BAROY, *Histoire ecclésiastique*, II, Paris 1958, p. 63-64, PG 20, 824.  
 25. See above, note 17.  
 26. JOHN DAMASCENE, *op. cit.* (note 17), PG 94, 1393-1394 = *La vie ancienne de St-Siméon Styliste le Jeune* (BHG 1689), edited P. VAN DEN VEN, I, Brussels 1962, p. 139-141 ; II, Brussels 1970, p. 164-165.

lously hurled to the ground. He also quoted two passages about John Chrysostom<sup>27</sup> : a resurrection miracle performed by the saint's icon, and the apparition of Saint Paul, whom Proclus could recognize from the resemblance with an icon suspended on the wall. In the *Lives* of the other saints represented in the ninth-century psalters, similar incidents occur. Saint George had visions of Christ and performed resurrection miracles<sup>28</sup>. The miraculous sleep and awakening of the Seven Sleepers of Ephesus was considered to be a witness to the resurrection<sup>29</sup>. Panтелейmon restored life to a child bitten by a snake, and had a vision of Christ<sup>30</sup>. Such is the evidence for supposing that these particular saints were chosen, not only because they could be aptly associated with the Psalm verse, but also because their *Lives* could be quoted in favour of doctrines challenged by the Iconoclasts : resurrection and immortality ; the utility and efficacy of the cult of icons ; the physical visibility — and hence representability — of Christ. However, it does not seem that the psalter illustrations are intended to affirm the intercessory powers of saints, although this was, in fact, one of the first doctrines to be challenged by the Iconoclasts<sup>31</sup>. The programme of the ninth-century psalters is Christocentric : the prophetic visions of Old Testament "saints" ; the New Testament theophanies and finally the witness of "latter-day" saints. In two cases, their witness is particularly important. The clipeate image of Christ — a *leit-motif* of these psalters — is included in the miniatures of Symeon and Eustace. It provides the link between the miniatures of saints and those which are more strictly Christological. The importance and significance of this link will be considered in due course.

### iii. Miniatures of the patriarch Nicephorus

The miniatures of Nicephorus differ from the preceding ones in two respects. Firstly, all the other "latter-day" saints had a well-established cult before Iconoclasm, while Nicephorus was a contemporary. Secondly, the miniatures of Nicephorus set him in the historical context of the Iconoclast controversy. He figures there less as a witness to the truth of a disputed doctrine than as the ultimate vindicator of the cult of icons, triumphing over his adversaries.

18. Nicephorus is contrasted with the council of the impious. Psalm 25,4-9,10 : I have not sat with the council of vanity... Do not destroy my

27. *Ibidem*, PG 94, 1410, 1277 (= 1364-1365) = GEORGES D'ALEXANDRIE, *Vie de Jean Chrysostome* (BHG 873), ed. F. HALKIN, *Douze récits byzantins sur saint Jean Chrysostome*, Brussels 1977, p. 142<sup>54</sup>, p. 147<sup>54</sup>.

28. Especially in the earliest version of the *Passion* (BHG 670 ; BHL 3363-3383). Cf. H. DELEHAYE, *Les légendes grecques des saints militaires*, Paris 1909, p. 50-51 ; F. CUMONT, *La plus ancienne légende de saint Georges*, *Revue de l'histoire des religions* 114, 1936, p. 6-41.

29. In the earliest surviving witness to their *Passion*, their miraculous survival and awakening is already described as evidence in favour of the doctrine of the Resurrection of the dead. Phortius, *Bibliothèque*, VII, edited R. HENRY, Paris 1974, p. 209-211 ; PG 99, 102. Compare Sim. CP 155-156 (October 22nd).

30. *Passio* (BHG 1414m), *ed. cit.* (note 19), § 3, p. 217 ; § 11, p. 220. *Passio* (BHG 1412z), *ed. cit.* (note 19), § 4, p. 42 ; § 17, p. 48.

31. *Regestes*, n° 327-332. N° 332 is published in this number of *REB*, p. 8-11. Cf.

V. GRUMEL, L'iconologie de saint German de Constantinople, *EO* 21, 1922, p. 165-175 ; J. DARROUZÉS, German I<sup>er</sup> de Constantinople, *Dictionnaire de spiritualité* 6, 399-311.

soul together with the ungodly... C, f. 23<sup>v</sup> ; Pe, f. 16. There is no need to give here a full account of these two miniatures, which have been so often described and analysed<sup>32</sup>. It will suffice to recall that these two representations of a historical event, the assembly of the synod of St Sophia in 815, if similarly structured in that in both Nicephorus is contrasted with his adversaries, nevertheless differ significantly in a number of details. The miniature in the Chludov Psalter is more straightforward. Nicephorus is represented frontally, haloed and holding a clipeate image. He is contrasted with the figures below ; indeed his triumph is only implicit. The two figures to the right of the members of the synod who are blotting out an icon closely resemble the same figures in the miniature on f. 67, illustrating Psalm 68,22. In both miniatures, one figure is episcopally dressed while the other has his hair standing on end, so that it is likely that they are portraits of Theodosius Melissenus (816-821) and John Grammaticus. The miniature in the Pantocrator Psalter is more erudite. Again Nicephorus holds a clipeate image, but now he is enthroned, with his two enemies, Theodosius Melissenus and the emperor Leo V, at his feet ; his triumph is explicit. The representation of the synod, where the members are inspired by John Grammaticus, would seem to lend itself to an elaborate exegesis. The vituperative poem inscribed on the folio does not correspond exactly to the miniature : Nicephorus is seated, not standing ; he is not stopping the mouth of John Grammaticus ; it also implies that the triumph of Nicephorus over John Grammaticus was not yet complete. The legend in both the Chludov and Pantocrator Psalters describes Nicephorus as the patriarch, without the title of saint ; yet in both psalters he is haloed. Unfortunately, as has been noted above, there is not yet a standard iconography for the representation of saints in these psalters. Consequently it cannot be argued from the absence of the word saint that Nicephorus was still living when the miniatures were executed, nor from the presence of a halo that he had already been canonized.

19. Nicephorus tramples John Grammaticus. Psalm 51,9 : Behold the man who put trust in the abundance of his wealth. C, f. 51<sup>v</sup>. The primary illustration to this Psalm verse in both the Chludov and Pantocrator Psalters shows Saint Peter trampling Simon Magus, who is surrounded by scattered coins. The scene of the triumph of Nicephorus, holding a clipeate image and trampling John Grammaticus, is accompanied by a legend : Νικηφόρος ποτρώθητι υπόδεικνοτον ή ταύτην τὸν δειρέπον Ζήνων καὶ εἰκονολογοῦσαν. This miniature does not occur in the Pantocrator Psalter. As Grabar noted, the iconography is borrowed from the repertoire of imperial triumphal imagery<sup>33</sup>. Yet, as with the synod of St Sophia there may be a historical allusion. It is told that Nicephorus engaged John Grammaticus on one occasion in

32.

GRABAR, *op. cit.* (note 4), p. 198-201 ; Suzy DUFRENNE, *op. cit.* (note 6), p. 21-22 ; I. SEYENKO, The Anti-Iconoclastic Poem in the Pantocrator Psalter, CA 15, 1965, p. 39-60 ; Ch. WALTER, *Iconographie des conciles dans la tradition byzantine*, Paris 1970, p. 26-29.

33. GRABAR, *op. cit.* (note 4), p. 217-218.

controversy, utterly routing him<sup>34</sup>. John Grammaticus was assimilated to Simon Magnus for his dabbling in magic rather than for his practice of simony<sup>35</sup>. This calumny, which was repeated in the Canon of Methodius, seems to be gratuitous<sup>36</sup>. It is told that on one occasion John Grammaticus distributed bribes in order to gain supporters, but it does not seem that he performed simoniac ordinations<sup>37</sup>.

In both manuscripts, John Grammaticus emerges as a more picturesque figure than Nicephorus. One might almost suppose that the artists were more intent to vilify the Iconoclast than to celebrate the Iconophile. Again there is a contrast between the Chludov and the Pantocrator Psalters. Psalm 36,35 is illustrated in C, f. 35<sup>v</sup>, by a caricature of John Grammaticus, in which allusion is made again to his love of money. On the other hand the miniature in the Pantocrator Psalter, f. 165, illustrating Psalm 113,12-16, in which John Grammaticus is contrasted with Bezalel is among the most erudite in the ninth-century psalters<sup>38</sup>.

## II. THE PLACE OF SAINTS IN THE PROGRAMME OF NINTH-CENTURY PSALTERS

So far as "latter-day" saints are concerned, their only iconographical link with the programme of the psalters is the clipeate image of Christ. This recurs thirteen times in the Chludov Psalter. In six cases it is the object of a prophetic vision : f. 4, David ; f. 12, David ; f. 48<sup>v</sup>, David and Habakuk ; f. 86, David ; f. 90<sup>v</sup>, Moses ; f. 154<sup>v</sup>, Habakuk. In most of these miniatures a legend confirms that the prophet is foreseeing Christ. Never does he address prayer to a clipeate image. The only doubtful case is that of Moses, f. 90<sup>v</sup>, since there is no legend

34. The sources refer to three disputations between John Grammaticus and the Iconophiles, in all of which, naturally, he came off worst : 1. with Nicephorus, C. MANGO, *The Homilies of Photios*, Cambridge (Mass.), 1958, p. 243 ; cf. *Enstola ad Theophilum imperatorem* (BHG 1387 ; Clavis 8115), PG 95, 372. 2. with the monk Methodius, F. DVORAK, The Patriarch Photius and Iconoclasm, DOP 7, 1953, p. 67-97 ; *Acta graeca SS. Davidis, Symonis et Georgii Mytilenae* (BHG 494), edited J. VAN DEN GHENY, An. Boll. 18, 1899, p. 248-250. 3. with Constantine/Cyril, S. GERO, John the Grammarian, the Last Iconoclast Patriarch of Constantinople, *Byzantina* (Uppsala) 3,4, 1974-1975, p. 27-28.

35. GERO, art. cit. (note 34), p. 28 ; P. LEMERLE, *Le premier humanisme byzantin*, Paris 1971, p. 135-146.

36. *Canon in erectione SS. imaginum*, Ode 4, PG 99, 1772 ; GERO, ibidem, p. 27. However, Gero is wrong in supposing that John Grammaticus is represented in the Chludov Psalter performing simoniac ordinations. The miniature in question, f. 67<sup>v</sup>, is anonymous.

37. The only concrete case mentioned in the literary sources of John Grammaticus exercising venality occurs in the *Acta graeca SS. Davidis*, ed. cit. (note 34), p. 245, where he is accused of distributing bribes to gain clerics to the Iconoclast cause. According to I. SEVČENKO, Hagiography of the Iconoclast Period, *Iconoclasm*, op. cit. (note 7), p. 117-118, this is a late text, perhaps as late as the 11th century.

38. Suzy DUFRENNE, Une illustration « historique » inconnue du Psautier du Mont Athos, Pantocrator n° 61, CA 115, 1965, p. 83-95 ; Élisabeth REVEL-NEHER, *L'arche d'alliance dans l'art juif et chrétien du second au dixième siècles*, Paris 1984, p. 175-178.

and the miniature is placed beside the title of the Psalm : *Prayer of Moses*. However, in the parallel miniature in the Pantocrator Psalter, f. 128, there is a legend, which explains that Moses is propitiating (Figure 2). There are, indeed, prayer scenes in the ninth-century psalters, but, if the miniaturist shows the destination of the prayer, he does so by a segment, from which rays of light or a hand may emerge.

This *imago clipeata* with a bust of Christ is not an icon, in the sense of a portrait to which cult is offered, although it may, particularly in the miniatures explicitly concerned with Iconoclasm, have the connotation of an icon. It signifies rather, as Grabar expressed it, "présence virtuelle du Christ"<sup>39</sup>. Since Christ is represented physically on the clipeate image, he is visible to human eyes. Since he is virtually present in the image, any act concerned with it is concerned with Christ. Those who see the clipeate image see Christ ; those who destroy it destroy Christ.

In pre-Iconoclast art there are three main iconographical variants of the clipeate image of Christ. In one, the *clipea* serves as a frame for the bust portrait ; in the second, the *clipea*-commensurate with Christ's nimbus. In the third, there is a cross behind Christ's head but no nimbus. An example of the first variant is provided by the Cross of Justin II (565-578) at the Vatican<sup>40</sup> ; an example of the second by the icon of Saint Peter at Mount Sinai (ca 600)<sup>41</sup> ; an example of the third by the coins of Justinian II (685-695)<sup>42</sup>. So far as the two first variants are concerned, it is unlikely that there is a difference in their meaning, since both are found on ampoules<sup>43</sup> (Figure 4). After Iconoclasm, the first variant, in which Christ is haloed while the *clipea* serves as a frame, figures regularly in cupolas ; the earliest surviving example is that in the chapel of Santo Zeno (San Prassede), Rome, executed between 817 and 824<sup>44</sup>. The second variant is maintained in the eleventh-century psalters, particularly where the miniature is recopied from the earlier ones, and in the two portraits of Iconophile saints in the Menologium of Basil II<sup>45</sup>. It is used once in the Homilies of Gregory Nazianzus, Paris. græc. 510, f. 264<sup>v</sup>, for the scene of the

39. GRABAR, op. cit. (note 4), p. 219. For a penetrating analysis of the theological issues concerning the image of Christ, see C. SCHÖNBORN, *L'âme du Christ. Fondements théologiques*, third edition, Paris 1986. Schönborn calls the image the *sainte face*, which is convenient if not strictly accurate.

40. M. ROSENBERG, Ein goldenes Pektoralkreuz, *Pantheon* 1, 1928, p. 151ff. (this article has been inaccessible to me) ; E. KITZINGER, Byzantine Art in the Period between Justinian and Iconoclasm, *Berichte zum XI. Internationalen Byzantinisten-Kongress*, 4/1, Munich 1958, p. 18 fig. 18 reprinted *The Art of Byzantium and the Medieval West. Selected Studies*, edited W. E. KLEINBAUER, Bloomington/London 1976, p. 174.

41. WEITZMANN, op. cit. (note 13), n° B. 5.

42. GRABAR, op. cit. (note 4), p. 37-45, fig. 13, 14, 17-19 ; R. CORMACK, *Writing in Gold*, London 1985, p. 96-97.

43. A. GRABAR, *Amphoules de Terre Sainte*, Paris 1958. Nimbus and clipea commensurate : Monza, n° 6-9, 14, 15. Nimbus for head only : Monza, n° 10, 11 ; Bobbio, n° 6, 18 cf. Dumbarton Oaks, n° 48-18, Gary VIKAN, *Byzantine Pilgrimage Art*, Washington 1982, p. 22.

44. V. LAZAREV, *Storia della pittura bizantina*, Turin 1967, p. 122 note 57.

45. *Il Menologio di Basilio II*, edited C. STRONNALO & P. FRANCHI DE CAVALIERI, Vatican/Milan 1907, p. 94, 392, depicting the monk Nicetas and the empress Theodora ; GRABAR, op. cit. (note 4), p. 219.

11



conversion of Saint Paul<sup>46</sup> (Figure 3). Here it is evidently used to signify that Christ is physically present and visible. It is also used, from the eleventh century, for representations of the Holy Face, in Moscow Historical Museum cod. 386, f. 192<sup>v</sup>, dated 1063, and regularly on the Mandylion in monumental painting<sup>47</sup> (Figure 6). However, it is unlikely that the Holy Face of Edessa was really represented on the relic in this way, because, in other early versions — there are none, it seems, prior to the relic's translation to Constantinople in the mid-10th century —, the image of Christ conforms to the third variant, that which is found on Justinian II's coins<sup>48</sup>. Thus, although the Mandylion of Edessa, with its miraculously imprinted image of Christ not made by human hands, was naturally exploited by the iconophiles in their polemics, the clipeate image of the ninth-century psalms does not reproduce it.

Nevertheless the clipeate image of Christ, in which the nimbus is commensurate with the *clipea* is a central element of the programme of the ninth-century psalters. This has a clearly defined binary structure. The protagonists are divided into two camps : those who accept the physical visibility — and hence the representability — of Christ, before, during and after the Incarnation ; those who refuse to acknowledge the message of the prophets, who crucify the incarnate Christ, and who, by destroying his image, attempt to crucify him again. In the development of this programme, the clipeate image is used for the visions of the prophets and of "latter-day" saints. Thus Symeon the Styliste and

Bustae early witness of the prophets and post-apostolic times.  
On the other hand, the Iconoclasts are represented as emulating the Jews who crucified Christ. Psalm 68,22 : They gave me gall for food and they made me drink vinegar for my thirst, is illustrated in the Chludov Psalter, f. 67, by two scenes. (The folio is missing from the Paris and Pantocrator Psalters). The representation of Christ on the cross being offered a sponge on a rod corresponds to the typological interpretation of the Psalm (*Matthew* 27,34). In the parallel scene, two Iconoclasts are represented obliterating an icon. This miniature has often been discussed by scholars, who have recognized that it refers to the theme of the Second Passion of Christ\*. This theme was first developed in a letter attributed to John of Jerusalem and written about 780<sup>50</sup>.

46. H. Omont, *Miniatures des plus anciens manuscrits grecs de la Bibliothèque Nationale*, second edition, Paris 1929, p. 24-25, pl. XII; Leslie BRAUER, Politics, Patronage and Art in Ninth-century Byzantium : Homilies of Gregory of Nazianzus in Paris (B.N. gr. 5100) DOP 39, 1985, p. 7.

47. K. WEITZMANN, 'The Mandyion and Constantine Porphyrogennetos', *CA* 11, 1960, p. 163-184; reprinted, *Studies in Classical and Byzantine Manuscript Illumination*, Chicago/London 1971, especially p. 234, fig. 220; CORACK, *op. cit.* (note 42), p. 124-125.

48. For example on the 10th-century Sinaiacum, WEITZMANN, *op. cit.* (note 13), n° B. 58.

49. GUILLARD, *art. cit.* (note 5) p. 3. The Second Passion also figures in the polemics of Sacred Iconoclasm. GRABAR, *op. cit.* (note 4) n° 279

50. *De sacris imaginibus contra Constantium Cabdinum* (*Clavis* 8114), PG5, 333-336.

The passage in question... καὶ κοῦνθι ὅποις καὶ γόλην μικρές... προστίθενται τῷ στόματι τῷ Χρυσῷ, οὗτος καὶ κάθισται μικρές θύρας καὶ δέσμοι... προστίθενται τῇ στρογγυλοπόρᾳ θύρᾳ τῆς τυπώς εἰκόνος, καὶ εὐχρότων ἀνθρ. *Gouilliart, art. canonicum*.

5. P. 3 note 26. S. Giero, *Byzantine Iconoclasm during the Reign of Constantine V* (London 1977) p. 27, points out that, although the text, in its original form, from First iconoclasm, the attribution to John of Jerusalem is not absolutely certain.

1. Constantine, Chludov Psalter, f. 58v.

Pl. II  
X

122A

Chill

122B

122C

122D

122E

122F

122G

122H

122I

122J

122K

122L

122M

122N

122O

122P

122Q

122R

122S

122T

122U

122V

122W

122X

122Y

122Z

122AA

122AB

122AC

122AD

122AE

122AF

122AG

122AH

122AI

122AJ

122AK

122AL

122AM

122AN

122AO

122AP

122AQ

122AR

122AS

122AT

122AU

122AV

122AW

122AX

122AY

122AZ

122AA'

122AB'

122AC'

122AD'

122AE'

122AF'

122AG'

122AH'

122AI'

122AJ'

122AK'

122AL'

122AM'

122AN'

122AO'

122AP'

122AQ'

122AR'

122AS'

122AT'

122AU'

122AV'

122AW'

122AX'

122AY'

122AZ'

122AA''

122AB''

122AC''

122AD''

122AE''

122AF''

122AG''

122AH''

122AI''

122AJ''

122AK''

122AL''

122AM''

122AN''

122AO''

122AP''

122AQ''

122AR''

122AS''

122AT''

122AU''

122AV''

122AW''

122AX''

122AY''

122AZ''

122AA'''

122AB'''

122AC'''

122AD'''

122AE'''

122AF'''

122AG'''

122AH'''

122AI'''

122AJ'''

122AK'''

122AL'''

122AM'''

122AN'''

122AO'''

122AP'''

122AQ'''

122AR'''

122AS'''

122AT'''

122AU'''

122AV'''

122AW'''

122AX'''

122AY'''

122AZ'''

122AA''''

122AB''''

122AC''''

122AD''''

122AE''''

122AF''''

122AG''''

122AH''''

122AI''''

122AJ''''

122AK''''

122AL''''

122AM''''

122AN''''

122AO''''

122AP''''

122AQ''''

122AR''''

122AS''''

122AT''''

122AU''''

122AV''''

122AW''''

122AX''''

122AY''''

122AZ''''

122AA'''''

122AB'''''

122AC'''''

122AD'''''

122AE'''''

122AF'''''

122AG'''''

122AH'''''

122AI'''''

122AJ'''''

122AK'''''

122AL'''''

122AM'''''

122AN'''''

122AO'''''

122AP'''''

122AQ'''''

122AR'''''

122AS'''''

122AT'''''

122AU'''''

122AV'''''

122AW'''''

122AX'''''

122AY'''''

122AZ'''''

122AA''''''

122AB''''''

122AC''''''

122AD''''''

122AE''''''

122AF''''''

122AG''''''

122AH''''''

122AI''''''

122AJ''''''

122AK''''''

122AL''''''

122AM''''''

122AN''''''

122AO''''''

122AP''''''

122AQ''''''

122AR''''''

122AS''''''

122AT''''''

122AU''''''

122AV''''''

122AW''''''

122AX''''''

122AY''''''

122AZ''''''

122AA'''''''

122AB'''''''

122AC'''''''

122AD'''''''

122AE'''''''

122AF'''''''

122AG'''''''

122AH'''''''

122AI'''''''

122AJ'''''''

122AK'''''''

122AL'''''''

122AM'''''''

122AN'''''''

122AO'''''''

122AP'''''''

122AQ'''''''

122AR'''''''

122AS'''''''

122AT'''''''

122AU'''''''

122AV'''''''

122AW'''''''

122AX'''''''

122AY'''''''

122AZ'''''''

122AA''''''''

122AB''''''''

122AC''''''''

122AD''''''''

122AE''''''''

122AF''''''''

122AG''''''''

122AH''''''''

122AI''''''''

122AJ''''''''

122AK''''''''

122AL''''''''

122AM''''''''

122AN''''''''

122AO''''''''

122AP''''''''

122AQ''''''''

122AR''''''''

122AS''''''''

122AT''''''''

122AU''''''''

122AV''''''''

122AW''''''''

122AX''''''''

122AY''''''''

122AZ''''''''

122AA'''''''''

122AB'''''''''

122AC'''''''''

122AD'''''''''

122AE'''''''''

122AF'''''''''

122AG'''''''''

122AH'''''''''

122AI'''''''''

122AJ'''''''''

122AK'''''''''

122AL'''''''''

122AM'''''''''

122AN'''''''''

122AO''''''

However, so far as I am aware, no one has recognized to date that the legend accompanying the miniature is taken from this letter. The legend reads : οὗτοι ἔσονται καταχρήσται — καὶ οὐτοι μηδέποτε (sic) οὐσῶν καὶ οὐσίας τοῦ απόστολου. The presence of this legend beside the miniature makes it clear that the illustrators of the Chludov Psalter were familiar with the letter. It could well also be that the iconographical theme was first elaborated at about the time of John of Jerusalem, that is to say at the end of First Iconoclasm, in the last decades of the eighth century.

### III. THE DATING OF THE NINTH-CENTURY PSALTERS

There have been many attempts to attribute a precise date to these psalters. The task is most difficult for the Paris Psalter, which, in its present fragmentary state, contains no miniatures referring directly to events of Second Iconoclasm. For the Chludov and Pantocrator Psalters, on the other hand, a *terminus post quem* is available : they must have been painted later than the synod of St Sophia in 815. A. Frolow, whose case is the most closely argued, placed them between 815 and the election of John Grammaticus as patriarch in 837<sup>51</sup>. A number of scholars have found this dating acceptable<sup>52</sup>. André Grabar, however, rejected it, opting rather for the first patriarchate of Photius (858-867)<sup>53</sup>. Ševčenko preferred the patriarchate of Methodius (843-847)<sup>54</sup>. All these datings depend on *argumenta ex convenientia* ; each case, taken on its own, is argued convincingly. Yet, when they are taken together, the arguments tend to cancel each other out. In other words, there is no insuperable obstacle to any of these datings.

It is unlikely that the illuminated psalter, as an artistic genre, was a ninth-century creation. Many scholars have suggested that psalter illustration began, in fact, very early. Notably, in her analysis of the Utrecht Psalter, Suzy Dufrenne has distinguished between the iconographical elements which can be traced back to at least the fifth century and those which were added in the Carolingian epoch<sup>55</sup>. The late Viktor Lazarev maintained that the essential traits of the illustrated marginal psalter were fixed at the end of the Early Christian epoch on Syrian territory, although, unfortunately, he did not develop this hypothesis<sup>56</sup>.

The process of accretion in Psalm interpretation may be discerned in literary Psalm commentaries. Thus, for Christological themes, it is possible to distinguish between New Testament, Patrological and later interpretations of the

51. A. FROLOW, La fin de la querelle iconoclaste et la date des plus anciens psautiers à illustrations marginales, *Revue de l'histoire des religions* 163, 1963, p. 201-223.

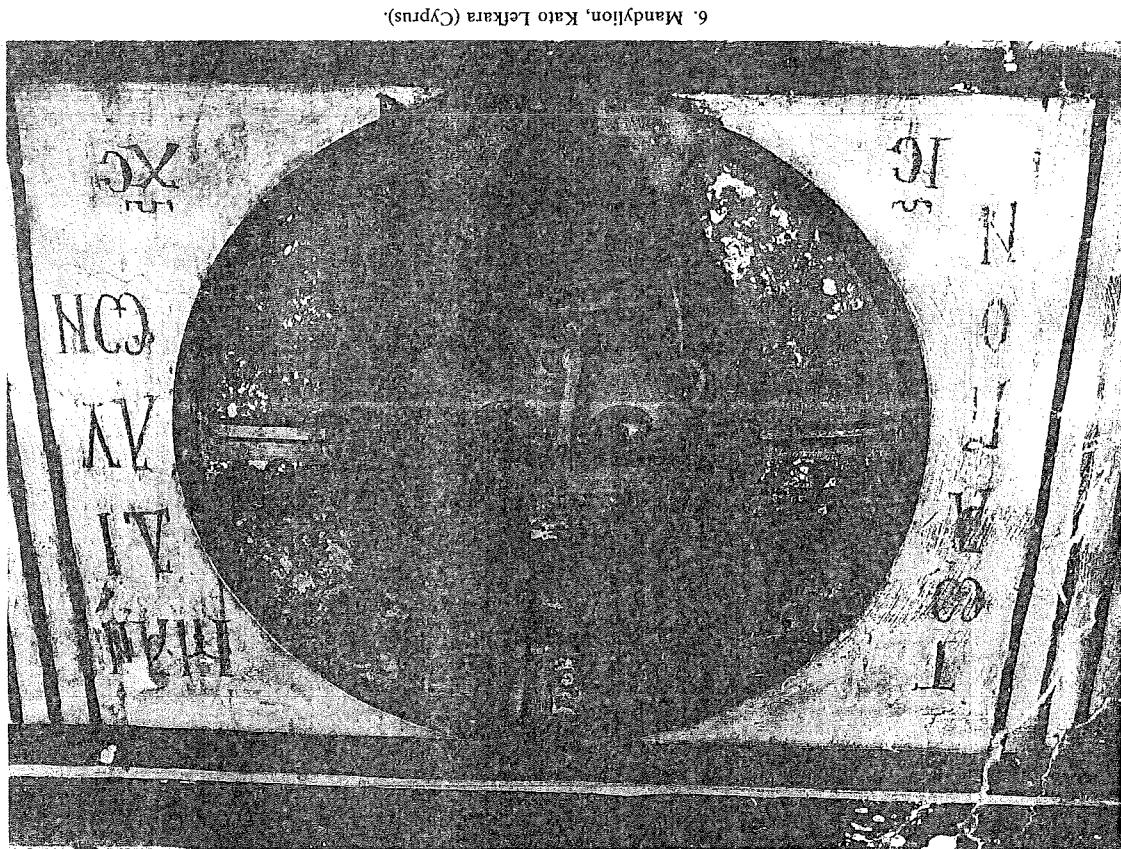
52. Ch. DELVOYE, Chronique archéologique, *Byz.* 46, 1976, p. 198-199, lists the scholars favorable to Frolow's dating.

53. GRABAR, *op. cit.* (note 4), p. 196 ; IDEM, Quelques notes sur les psautiers illustrés byzantins du 9<sup>e</sup> siècle, *CA* 15, 1965, p. 75-82.

54. ŠEVČENKO, *art. cit.* (note 32), p. 57.

55. DUFRENNE, *op. cit.* (note 7), p. 219.

56. LAZAREV, *op. cit.* (note 44), p. 116.



Psalms. In general, the themes chosen for the illustration of Psalm verses with Christological scenes were taken from the literary commentaries. In one or two cases the commentary exploited dates from the eighth century : Germanus I (died 733) and John of Euboea<sup>57</sup>. It would therefore be reasonable to suppose that the illustrators of Psalm verses enriched and extended their repertory of scenes by a similar process of accretion. However it also seems clear that the overall orientation of the illustrative programme of these ninth-century psalters was modified, in order to bring it into line with Iconophile polemics. Points of surviving ninth-century psalters are easily established. Yet the use of typology contacts with Iconophile writings are as easily established. Yet the use of typology as an argument against the Iconoclasts in the illustrations of these psalters has its closest literary equivalent in the writings of John Damascene (died ca 750)<sup>58</sup>. Some scholars — Ševčenko for example — take it for granted that the production of this “archetype” is the last decades of the eighth century, while the most propitious place would be Palestine.

This hypothesis is also necessarily based on *argumenta ex convenientia*. There have already had an anti-Iconoclast slant. Gouillard observed that the Iconoclast miniatures — with the exception of those concerned with Nicephorus and John Grammaticus — reflect the disputed issues of First rather than Second Iconoclasm<sup>59</sup>. The date which would seem to have been the most propitious for the production of this “archetype” is the last decades of the eighth century, while the most propitious place would be Palestine. This hypothesis is also necessarily based on *argumenta ex convenientia*. There is first of all the strong anti-Jewish bias, which has its literary counterpart in the writings of George of Cyprus and John of Jerusalem, notably in the *Nouthesia*<sup>60</sup>. For example, *Isaiah* 1 is a text which combines a diatribe against the Israelites who have forsaken the Lord and a prophecy of the birth of the Messiah. It is quoted in the *Nouthesia* and applied to the Iconoclasts<sup>61</sup>: Psalm 2, the Messianic interpretation of which is very ancient, is illustrated in the Chludov Psalter, f. 2<sup>62</sup>, by two miniatures. The lower one, referring to verse 7 : You are my son ; today I have begotten you, is a representation of the Nativity. The upper miniature refers to rulers united against the Lord and his anointed (verse 2). It is accompanied by a legend : Ἐξέτο οὐδὲ ἔσως ὑπερπλόκον. This is a quotation of *Isaiah* 1,4 : Ah sinful nation !

The binary contrast between the Jews who reject the Messiah and those who recognize that the incarnate Christ is God, so frequent in the typological miniatures of these psalters, could have been elaborated before Iconoclasm. However it becomes peculiarly apt to the Iconophile cause, when these miniatures are doubled with ones in which the Iconoclasts figure. The key theme, that of the Second Passion, is safely linked, if not with Jerusalem, at least with Palestine in the late eighth century — by the accompanying legend. Another example is provided by the miniatures illustrating

προσέθηκεν ἀνοικτὸν ἦν ἀνοικας — καὶ τὴν τοῦ Χριστοῦ εἰκόνα ἀτρυπάντοντο.

I have failed to identify the source of the legends and to find a literary analogy for the assimilation of simoniac bishops to the guards at the sepulchre who accepted bribes. Yet the issue of simoniac Iconoclasts is far more relevant to the patriarchate of Tarasius (784-806) than to Second Iconoclasm<sup>63</sup>. A final argument in favour of a Palestinian provenance for the “archetype” is provided by the “latter-day” saints themselves. As has been noted above, extracts from texts referring to four of these seven saints are included in the *Florilegium* of John Damascene, and, in two cases, the miniature corresponds exactly to the quoted text. This could be dismissed as a coincidence. Alternatively, the artist could have been familiar with John Damascene’s *Florilegium*. However, if the second explanation is preferred, he could hardly have been working in Constantinople, where, it seems, John Damascene’s *Orationes de imaginibus* were not known. At least, they were not cited at the Second Council of Nicaea, nor were they exploited by later Iconophile polemical writers living in the capital<sup>64</sup>.

If the postulate that the three surviving ninth-century marginal psalters copy and adapt a late eighth-century model reflecting the preoccupations of First Iconoclasm is accepted, then the problem of dating them is largely reduced to deciding what date and milieu were most propitious for adding the miniatures of Nicephorus and John Grammaticus. Since nothing precise can be said about the Paris Psalter, it is best left aside ; there is no reason to refuse Weitzmann’s suggestion, however, that it is the earliest of the three<sup>65</sup>. As for the Chludov and Pantocrator Psalters, there is no necessary reason to suppose that both were illuminated at the same date and in the same milieu.

The greatest difficulty to overcome is that, of all the Iconophile heroes, only Nicephorus is celebrated. That the artists should have restricted their vituperation almost exclusively to John Grammaticus is less embarrassing, because, in all the anti-Iconoclast writings of the ninth century, he was the principal target for calumny and detraction<sup>66</sup>. On the other hand texts like the Canon of Methodius and the Synodikon of Orthodoxy, even if there are evident similarities between their language and the imagery of the miniatures of Nicephorus, do not reserve their aureoles exclusively to him<sup>67</sup>.

57. WALTER, *art. cit.* (note 1), p. 275-277.

58. *Ibidem*, p. 282.

59. ŠEVČENKO, *art. cit.* (note 32), p. 39.

60. GOUILARD, *art. cit.* (note 5), p. 5.

61. B. M. MELORANSKI, *Georgij Kiprijanini i Ioanni Jerusalimljani*; Saint Petersburg 1901, p. XII-XVII ; GERON, *op. cit.* (note 50), p. 32 ; Kathleen CORRIGAN, *Anti-Jewish Polemics in the 9th-century Marginal Psalters*, *Annual Byzantine Studies Conference*, Chicago 1982, p. 48-49. I have not had access to Corrigan’s doctoral dissertation, *Byzantine Marginal Psalters of the Ninth Century*, U.C.L.A. 1984.

62. MELORANSKI, *op. cit.* (note 61), p. xxxviii.

63. *Regestes*, n° 361-364.

64. VAN DEN VEN, *art. cit.* (note 23), p. 336-338.

65. K. WEITZMANN, *Die byzantinische Buchmalerei des 9. und 10. Jahrhunderts*, Berlin 1935, p. 53.

66. See above, note 34.

67. GOUILARD, *art. cit.* (note 5), p. 46. In fact, Nicephorus is not specifically named in the Canon of Methodius, PG 99, 1767-1780. Ibid., Le synodikon de l’orthodoxie, édition et commentaire, TM 2, 1967, p. 50-51, where his eternal memory is evoked, together with that of Germanus, Tarasius and Methodius.

This exclusivity is the strongest — if not totally convincing — argument in favour of Frolow's date and provenance for the Chludov Psalter. The updating would have consisted in the introduction of the miniature of the synod of St Sophia<sup>68</sup>, doubling, according to the established procedure, the miniature of Saint Peter trampling Simon Magus with one of Nicephorus trampling John Grammaticus (19), adding a caricature of John Grammaticus (f. 35'), and attributing the features of Nicephorus and Theodosius Melissenus to the figures who are blotting out icons in the miniature of the Second Passion (f. 67). However, if the updated Psalter was produced to celebrate the rehabilitation of Nicephorus, it becomes easier to understand how he was introduced into the category of "latter-day" saints. He had already been "canonized" by his biographer, although, admittedly, the assimilation of Nicephorus to saints of the Old and New Testament, was rather a matter of literary convention than a witness to his already established cult<sup>69</sup>. This date has a further advantage that it is subsequent to the composition of the Synodikon and of the Canon of Methodius. Literary *rapprochements* are now possible, which were not available at the earlier date.

However, for the Pantocrator Psalter, it could well be that the updating of the illustrations was undertaken rather later, in the entourage of the patriarch Photius. Evidence is available of the esteem in which Photius held Nicephorus. There is, for example, the passage in *Homily 15*, delivered during his first patriarchate (858-867), possibly in 867, in which Photius said : "So the wondrous Nicephorus with a prophetic eye barred the entrance of the Church to John and his fellow-leaders in heresy"<sup>70</sup>. The erudite character of the two miniatures of the synod of St Sophia<sup>18</sup> and of the contrast between Jannus and Bezael (f. 165), has already been noted<sup>70</sup>. It distinguishes them from all the other miniatures and invites a *rapprochement* with those in the Homilies of Gregory of Nazianzus, *Paris. graec. 510*.

#### IV. CONCLUSION

The presence of "latter-day" saints in the illustrative programme of the ninth-century psalters can be explained more easily if it is assumed that these psalters are not entirely original creations but belong to a tradition of psalter illustration, in which the programme was progressively updated, both by accretion and by adaptation to their milieu and times. These miniatures of saints fall into three categories : the anonymous saints (1-10), who illustrate literally, if anachronistically, a word of the Psalm verse ; the named saints whose cult was long established (11-17), for whom a connection with the Iconophile polemics of First Iconoclasm can be, in some cases, argued ; the patriarch Nicephorus (18-19).

Apart from the blessed man (1), beside whom there is a clipeate image of Christ, the anonymous saints are not closely integrated into the illustrative programme of the psalters. There is consequently no obvious indication as to the stage in the development of the programme when this kind of accretion began. This clipeate image, in which the *clipea* is commensurate with the nimbus, was one of several variants in pre-Iconoclast art of the bust portrait of Christ. It is used exclusively in the ninth-century psalters to signify the virtual presence of Christ, but, although the Holy Face of Edessa was exploited in controversy by the Iconophiles, it is unlikely that Christ was, in fact, represented in this way on the Mandylion. Earlier representations of the vision of Eustace do not exploit the clipeate image ; the adaptation of this iconographical theme to the programme of these psalters by introducing the clipeate image was therefore intentional. The artists were intent on giving its full force to the argument that, since Christ was physically apprehended in a vision, he was, in consequence, representable.

This group of miniatures of "latter-day" saints, some of whom are likely to have been chosen because texts about them are quoted in the *florilegium* of John Damascene, is only one element of the updated programme which may be associated with this writer. Another is the *ekkōv* as an Old Testament type of the New Testament event. This argument in favour of the use of images was further developed by other Palestinian Iconophiles, notably John of Jerusalem, to whom may be due the notion of the Second Passion of Christ. Thus many aspects of the programme of these psalters suggest that it was elaborated in the late eighth century in Palestine.

The next updating would have taken place in the ninth century, when the binary contrast between Jews and Christians, extended already to the first Iconoclasts and Iconophiles, received a new accretion with the addition of miniatures of John Grammaticus and Nicephorus. It is not possible to fix with precision when the surviving adaptations of the eighth-century "archetype" were made. For the Paris Psalter, in its mutilated condition, the

68. IGNATIUS, *Vita (BHG 1335)*, edited C. DE BOOR, *Nicephori archiepiscopi Constantinoopolitani opuscula historica*, Leipzig 1880, PG 100, 147-160.

69. MANGE, *op. cit.* (note 34), p. 239-243 ; Dvornik, *art. cit.* (note 34), p. 87.

70. See above, p. 214. DUPRENE, *art. cit.* (note 38), plausibly adduces the commentary on Psalm 113, 12-16, in the *Amphilochia*, Q. 111, PG 101, 653-664, as a point of contact between the miniature and the erudition of Photius. However, the status of the furniture of the Tabernacle (*not*, as Dufrenne writes, the Temple) as images in Jewish cult was a constant subject of controversy in both First and Second Iconoclasm. Nicephorus himself dilated interminably on the subject. Yet I have only found one text of the period in which Bezalel is actually named : *Epistola syndica ad Theophilum imperatorem (BHG 1389)*, edited L. Duchesne, L'iconographie byzantine dans un document du ix<sup>e</sup> siècle, *Roma e l'Oriente* 5, 1912/3, p. 278. For a new assessment of this curious document as a source for Iconophile iconography, see Cormack, *op. cit.* (note 42), p. 121-131. See also M. AUBINIAU, Le cod. Dublin, *Trinity Coll. 185*, Textes de Christophe d'Alexandrie, d'Éphrem et de Chrysostome, *Le Muséon* 88, 1975, p. 114-116.

Credit titles for the illustrations : fig. 1, 2, Collection Gabriel Millet, Paris ; fig. 3, Bibliothèque nationale, Paris ; fig. 4, Dumbarton Oaks Study Center ; fig. 5, Madame Nicole Thierry ; fig. 6, Dr Robin Cormack.

necessary elements are lacking. The Chludov Psalter could well have been painted during the lifetime of Nicephorus or, perhaps more plausibly, during the patriarchate of Methodius. The more erudite character of the added miniatures in the Pantocrator Psalter suggests that this copy was made later, perhaps during the first patriarchate of Photius.

## « LATTER-DAY » SAINTS IN THE MODEL FOR THE LONDON AND BARBERINI PSALTERS\*

### A LOST ELEVENTH-CENTURY MARGINAL PSALTER

Unless I am mistaken, Sirarpie Der Nersessian first postulated the existence of an illuminated marginal psalter, now lost, which served as a model for both the London and the Barberini Psalters.<sup>1</sup> Her hypothesis, formulated in the chapter of her study of the London Psalter in which she discusses its relations with other illuminated marginal Psalters, has been

\* The following abbreviations are used in this article :

Der NERSESSIAN = Sirarpie Der Nersessian, *L'illustration des psautiers grecs du Moyen*

*Age*, II, Paris 1970.

*Menata* = Menata (Grottaferrata edition), 6 volumes, Rome 1888-1901.

*Typicon* = J. Marcos, *Le typicon de la Grande Église*, I-II, Rome 1962-1963.

C = The usual sigla are used for the marginal psalters :

Ch = The Chludov Psalter (Marta Ščepkina, *Miniatyri Hludovskoj Psaltri*..., Moscow 1977).

Pc = The Pantocrator Psalter (Suzy Dufrenne, *L'illustration des psautiers grecs du Moyen Age*, I, Paris 1966).

L = The London Psalter (Der NERSESSIAN).

B = The Barberini Psalter (unpublished).

For *Lives* of saints only a reference is given to BHG, unless an allusion is made to a specific passage.

Dr Jeffrey C. Anderson read a first draft of this article. I thank him for valuable suggestions.

Credit titles for the illustrations : Biblioteca Apostolica Vaticana, figures 1-4, 9-11, 14,

15 ; Collection Gabriel Millet, Paris, 5-8, 12, 13, 16.

1. DER NERSESSIAN, p. 70.

confirmed by subsequent research<sup>2</sup>. However, to date, scholars who have affirmed the existence of this lost psalter have not taken the next step ; they have not attempted to characterize it in detail. They concentrate their attention on the London Psalter, largely ignoring the Barberini Psalter, which is, in fact, a closer copy of the lost psalter. Yet such a characterisation is not a mere academic exercise. It is really a necessary prelude to the characterisation of the London Psalter. Many traits of this psalter, often assumed to be original, can be shown to have been already introduced into the lost psalter. It was in this lost manuscript that a radical reorientation of the illustrative programme of marginal psalters took place earlier than 1066 when the London Psalter was painted.

The arguments in favour of the existence of this lost psalter may be summarized as follows : both L and B depend ultimately on C ; however, although B was painted later than L, it is not a copy of L, even abridged, because in many of its miniatures B is closer than is L to C. However, L and B have common characteristics which distinguish them from C. The iconography of a subject whose significance is clear in C is sometimes misunderstood in both L and B in the same or a similar way. Also in both L and B a subject, present in C, may be modified in the same or a similar way. Moreover both L and B contain a number of new subjects, similarly represented in the two manuscripts, which do not occur at all in C. The simplest explanation of the changes common to L and B with respect to C is that they were introduced into an earlier manuscript, itself closely dependent on C, which served, in fact, as the model for L and B. A reconstruction of the model's illustrative programme would include, therefore, miniatures common to C and B (and often to L), modifications common to L and B of subjects already in C, and, above all, the new subjects common to L and B. There was, indeed, a considerable increase in the number of miniatures in eleventh-century illuminated psalters. Whereas there were originally less than two hundred miniatures in C, there are more than three hundred in L and B. This increase is not proportionately distributed between themes. Old Testament subjects were taken over almost *en bloc* ; only four new Christological themes were introduced, which, unlike the earlier typological ones, have their literary point of reference rather in liturgical texts<sup>3</sup>.

By far the largest number of new miniatures are concerned with named « latter-day » saints. Mariés long ago contrasted the « invasion » of saints

in the ninth-century psalters (nine miniature subjects) with the « irruption » of saints in the London Psalter (nearly seventy miniature subjects)<sup>4</sup>. Since he erroneously supposed the Barberini Psalter to be a copy of the London Psalter, he had no explanation for the fact that it contains only about forty miniature subjects in which « latter-day » saints are named. However, once it is realized that B copies faithfully a psalter illuminated earlier than L, the discrepancy is easily explained. B witnesses to an intermediate stage in the development of psalter illustration between C and L, even though it was painted much later than L, between 1092 and 1118, perhaps around 1095<sup>5</sup>.

However, the introduction of a greater number of miniatures of saints was tributary of a far more important innovation in this lost psalter. The new programme is characterized above all by its moralizing tone. Miniatures exemplifying this theme concern the blessed man, the just man, the sinless man, the poor man. Frequently in the eleventh-century psalters — but exceptionally in the earlier ones — he is represented at prayer. Most prayer scenes in the ninth-century psalters have David or Christ for their subject. They persist into the eleventh-century psalters, in which, in fact, the number of scenes of David at prayer increases.

To accommodate these prayer scenes a new iconographical formula was developed. In C, when David is represented at prayer, he is usually making a proskynesis (seven times), accompanied by a legend : Δαύλος εὐρηκενος, but the artist does not always make it clear that David's prayer is addressed to God. Since David is represented once in C standing before a segment from which light descends (f. 13v ; Psalm 17,1), the formula of the segment representing heaven was available in the ninth century, but its use was exceptional<sup>6</sup>. In the eleventh century it became just one of several related formulae. Prayer might also be addressed to a bust figure of Christ, possibly within a blue segment, or to an icon of Christ.

The representation of figures — David, the anonymous just and named « latter-day » saints — addressing their prayer to an icon does not occur in Byzantine art earlier than the eleventh-century psalters. In the ninth-century psalters, the clipeate image of Christ recurs as a *leitmotiv*, occasionally with the connotation of an icon but always with the primary significance of the virtual presence of Christ. *Never* is prayer actually addressed to a clipeate image of Christ<sup>7</sup>. Many of these ninth-century miniatures

<sup>4</sup> L. MARIES, L'irruption des saints dans l'illustration du psautier byzantin, *An. Boll.* 68, 1950, p. 153-162.

<sup>5</sup> J. ANDERSON, *art. cit.* (note 2), p. 60.

<sup>6</sup> Compare with the monks at prayer, C f. 30<sup>v</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ch. WALTER, « Latter-day » Saints and the Image of Christ in the Ninth-century Byzantine Marginal Psalters, *REB* 45, 1987, p. 214-215.

2. J. ANDERSON, The Date and Purpose of the Barberini Psalter, *CA* 31, 1986, p. 39-40 ; Ch. WALTER, Christological Themes in the Byzantine Marginal Psalters from the Ninth to the Eleventh Century, *REB* 44, 1986, p. 284-285.

3. *Ibidem*, p. 285-286.

embodying a clipeate image of Christ were recopied mechanically into the eleventh-century psalters. Artists may have been ignorant of or indifferent to their significance, for they placed alongside them other miniatures in which prayer is definitely being addressed to a clipeate image.

Consequently it is clear that the new saints introduced into the eleventh-century psalters also have a new function. Those who figure in the ninth-century psalters witness, in my opinion, to iconophile doctrines, concerning notably the visibility and consequent representability of Christ.<sup>8</sup> The new saints exemplify the just man and his activities, particularly his assiduity in prayer. The important role attributed to the just man in the eleventh-century psalters reveals the change which had occurred in the conception of the Psalter : it is no longer a compendium of prophecies to be interpreted typologically ; rather it is a book of prayer and of edification. This change in orientation had occurred before the London Psalter was painted, precisely in the lost illuminated psalter on which it and the Barberini Psalter depend.

It is important to stress the fact that this was an overall change, not peculiar to representations of « latter-day » saints. This point may be exemplified by an examination of modifications introduced in the iconography of David. Most of the miniatures of David at prayer in C are taken over in L and B, but they are slightly modified : it is made clear that David's prayer is addressed to God. Thus for Psalm 27,1 (C f. 25 ; B f. 46), B adds a portrait of Christ in a segment extending his hand towards David. For Psalm 50 (C f. 50 ; L f. 63<sup>v</sup> ; B f. 86<sup>v</sup>), David's penitence is conveyed by a proskynesis to which L and B add a hand emerging from a segment. The same modification is made to the miniature illustrating Psalm 53,1 (C f. 52<sup>v</sup> ; L f. 67 ; B f. 90<sup>v</sup>).

This point may be further exemplified by the new miniatures introduced portraying David at prayer. In illustration to Psalm 7,13 (L f. 7<sup>v</sup> ; B f. 13<sup>v</sup>), David prays to a clipeate icon while below a figure shoots an arrow at another who is falling into an abyss. In illustration to Psalm 9,14 (L f. 15<sup>v</sup> ; B f. 26), David makes a proskynesis before the enthroned Christ. In illustration to Psalm 16,23 (L f. 15<sup>v</sup> ; B f. 26), David prays before an icon of Christ while below an angel spears his enemies. This list is not exhaustive. However, it is sufficient to make clear that David himself is not conceived so much as a prophet but as the just man of the Old Testament par excellence and more particularly a man of prayer. He addresses his prayer to God or to Christ, who responds, since rays of light frequently descend from heaven towards him.

8. *Ibidem*, p. 211-212.

#### NAMED « LATTER-DAY » SAINTS IN THE LOST MARGINAL PSAALTER

If the overall motive is clear for introducing nearly forty new miniatures of saints into the illustrative programme, it is not always easy to know why one saint, or group of saints, was preferred to another.

##### i. Copies or adaptations of ninth-century miniatures

A move away from anonymous just to named saints may be observed in a few adaptations of ninth-century miniatures.

1. Psalm 15,3. The anonymous saints in C (f. 11<sup>v</sup>) become the three warrior

saints, Theodore, George and Demetrius, in L (f. 13<sup>v</sup>) and B (f. 23).

2. Psalm 67,36. The anonymous martyrs in C (f. 65<sup>v</sup>) are replaced by the vision of Saint Procopius in B (f. 112) and L (f. 85<sup>v</sup>). Saint Procopius, seated on a prancing horse and haloed, raises his left hand towards a bejewelled cross which hangs from a segment (Figure 12). The iconography is identical in B and L. The account of his vision, which led to his conversion, was introduced into the second state of his *Life*.<sup>9</sup> It was cited at the second council of Nicaea.<sup>10</sup> The Psalm verse was used in the office of Procopius.<sup>11</sup>

In one other case the anonymous just who illustrate Psalm 36,39 in P (f. 46<sup>v</sup>) are replaced by named just of the Old Testament : Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and Job (B f. 65 ; L f. 44<sup>v</sup>).

9. My interpretation of the miniature is based on the fact that Saint Paul quotes this Psalm verse, *Romans* 3,9-19, adding : « The Law speaks for those under the Law, so that every mouth is closed ».

10. A. PAPADOURILOU-KERAMEUS, *Ἀνάκτετα ἵποκομητική στρατηγίας*, V, Petrograd 1898, p. 5-6 (*BHG* 1577).

11. Mansi 13, 80.

12. *Typicon*, I, p. 332-333 (8 July), synaxis in his martyrium. The only other representations of the vision of Procopius seem to be those in Cappadocia : Göreme n° 3, n° 10, n° 11 & n° 32, Nicole THIERRY, *Vision d'Eustache, vision de Procope, Nouvelles données sur l'iconographie funéraire byzantine* (printing).

The anonymous just are treated in the same way. For example Psalm 101, whose title is « The prayer of the poor man », is appropriately illustrated with the poor man at prayer (C f. 100 ; P c f. 141<sup>v</sup> ; L f. 133<sup>v</sup> ; B f. 170). In C he is grieving ; in P c he kneels with his hands outstretched ; in L and B a hand is added, emerging from a segment. Psalm 10,1-2 is illustrated with a miniature of the just man persecuted by the impious (C f. 10 ; L f. 10<sup>v</sup> ; B f. 19). The miniature in C interprets the Psalm verse literally, while L and B introduce a clipeate image of Christ.

New scenes of the anonymous just were introduced. Psalm 5,10 (L f. 4<sup>v</sup> ; B f. 10<sup>v</sup>) is now illustrated with a miniature of the just man stopping the mouths of his calumniators and addressing his prayer to a bust image of Christ.<sup>12</sup> For Psalm 118,1 the blameless are introduced (B f. 202<sup>v</sup>), facing an icon of Christ (Figure 6).

The saints who already figured in the ninth-century Psalters were all maintained. With one exception, there were only minor modifications in their rendering in the eleventh-century versions.

3. Psalm 4,4. Symeon the stylite (?). B.f. 9 ; L.f. 3. There is no legend, which suggests that the one apparently in C (f. 3') was already hardly legible when this miniature was copied in the model. That the stylite was assumed to be one of the Symeons may be inferred from the fact that two others were introduced with their names into L (58, 59).

4. Psalm 32,19. The Seven Sleepers. B.f. 54<sup>r</sup> ; L.f. 36<sup>v</sup>. Both B and L introduce the sleepers' staffs and haversacks, placed outside the cave, a detail which is already present in the *Menologium of Basil II*, p. 133<sup>13</sup>. More significantly, they also introduce a bust figure of Christ extending his hand, from which fall rays of light (Figures 15, 16).

5. Psalm 43,23. George. B.f. 77 ; L.f. 55.

6. Psalm 48,2. John Chrysostom. B.f. 82<sup>v</sup> ; L.f. 60. Here the portrait in C (f. 47) is replaced in both B and L by a scene of John Chrysostom preaching to the nations. This change may be explained by the fact that the Psalm verse in question, 'Hear this, all the nations', was used as the *stichos* for the two principal feasts of John Chrysostom, November 13th and January 27th<sup>14</sup>.

7. Psalm 59,6. Constantine. B.f. 100 ; L.f. 75. In both B and L the presentation is slightly modified in the same way : the figure which Constantine's horse is trampling in C f. 58' has been eliminated, while Constantine wears conventional imperial dress. In B, Constantine's standard has been made more like the Cross, with two bars on the lower of which is placed the crown of thorns (Figure 11)<sup>15</sup>.

8. Psalm 96,11. Eustace. B.f. 160<sup>r</sup> ; L.f. 130<sup>v</sup>. In the versions of both B and L, the prancing horse more closely resembles that of Procopius (2), while the representation of Saint Peter in prison has been eliminated (Figure 13).

9. Psalm 123,6. Panteleimon. B.f. 218<sup>v</sup> ; L.f. 169. This folio is missing from C. In Pc, f. 182, the Psalm verse is illustrated with two parallel scenes, one of Daniel and the other of Panteleimon. In both B and L the two scenes have been combined into one.

Even these minor changes witness to the general trend in renewal in the eleventh-century : the importance attributed to prayer themes (4), and reference to liturgical texts (2, 6).

10. Psalm 25,3,4,9. Nicephorus. B (f. 43) is close to C. In L (f. 27), the iconography is modified considerably, in order to give prominence to Theodore Studite<sup>16</sup>. B undoubtedly faithfully follows the model, even to including

the falling blood, a detail probably omitted from L because it had become uninterpretable.

11. Psalm 51,9. Nicephorus trampling Jánis. B (f. 39') is again close to C. The scene is omitted in L.

### ii. Saints at prayer

Although their iconography is banally similar, the twenty miniatures of saints at prayer, common to B and L but not in C, are iconographically important, because they define so clearly the new orientation of the Psalter. In thirteen cases, there is no detail which might define the occasion of their prayer. There is consequently no reason to suppose that the presence of each saint requires a specific explanation. They must have been chosen, more or less at random, to exemplify the just man.

12. Psalm 16,7 : 'Show the marvels of your mercy'. Athanasius. B.f. 25 ; L.f. 15. He extends his hand towards an icon of Christ<sup>17</sup>.

13. Psalm 54,2 : 'Listen, Lord, to my prayer'. Macarius. B.f. 91 ; L.f. 67<sup>v</sup>. In B he extends his hand towards a segment, from which rays of light emerge ; in L Christ extends a hand towards him from a clipeate icon<sup>18</sup>.

14. Psalm 54,17 : 'I cried to God and the Lord listened to me'. Sabas. B.f. 92<sup>v</sup> ; L.f. 68<sup>v</sup>. In B he extends his hands towards a segment from which emerge a hand and rays of light. In L Christ extends his hand from a segment<sup>19</sup>.

15. Psalm 60,2 : 'Oh God, listen to my petition'. Arsenius. B.f. 100<sup>v</sup> ; L.f. 75<sup>v</sup>. In B and L he extends his hands towards a segment from which a hand emerges ; L omits the descending rays of light<sup>20</sup>.

16. Psalm 63,2 : 'Hear my prayer, Oh Lord'. Theodosius. He extends his hands towards a hand emerging from a segment. L adds a demon attacking him with a spear<sup>21</sup>.

17. Psalm 69,2 : 'Draw close, Oh God, to my help'. Theodore Studite. B.f. 116 ; L.f. 88<sup>v</sup>. In B he extends his hands towards Christ represented in bust form. In L Christ is placed inside a clipeate icon (Figure 2)<sup>22</sup>.

18. Psalm 70,14 : 'I will hope continually and praise you more and more'. Gregory of Nyssa. B.f. 118 ; L.f. 90. In B he extends his hands towards a rectangular icon of Christ. In L the icon is clipeate in form (Figure 5)<sup>23</sup>.

17. *Typicon*, I, p. 200 (18 January), synaxis in the Great Church. Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 133).

18. *Typicon*, I, p. 202 (19 January), No shrine at Constantinople and no Metaphrastic *Life*. *Maries, art. cit. (note 4)*, p. 161, followed by DER NERSESSIAN, p. 89, explains the presence of Macarius by a pun on his name. The work *makarios* occurs in 19 Psalms, but not in the two illustrated with a portrait of this saint !

19. *Typicon*, I, p. 122 (5 December), synaxis in his martyrium. Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 1609).

20. No reference to a synaxis in the *Typicon* (8 May). Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 168), also a *Laudatio* by THEODORE STUDITE (*BHG* 169), with a reference to his assiduity in prayer, *PG* 99, 880.

21. *Typicon*, I, p. 194 (11 January), synaxis in church of Saint Peter. Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 1778).

22. *Typicon*, I, p. 98 (11 November). No Metaphrastic *Life*.

23. *Typicon*, I, p. 192 (10 January), synaxis in the Great Church. No Metaphrastic *Life*.

13. *Il Menologio di Basilio II*, edited C. STORNACOLO & P. FRANCHI DE' CAVALIERI, Vatican Milan 1907.

14. *Typicon*, I, p. 100, 212-214.

15. In the eleventh century, representations of the Cross of the Hetoiomasia with the crown of thorns are found. This may have been the model for Constantine's standard in B. TH. VON BOGYAY, Hetoiomasia, *Reallexikon zur byzantinischen Kunst*, II, 1197.

16. DER NERSESSIAN, p. 24, 73.

19. Psalm 74:3 : 'We will give thanks to you, Oh God'. Ephraim. B f. 125<sup>v</sup>; L f. 97. In B he extends his hands towards a segment. In L Christ is placed in a clipeate icon<sup>24</sup>.

20. Psalm 76:2 : 'I cried' to the Lord'. Macarius. B f. 128; L f. 98. In B he extends his hands towards a segment. In L Christ is placed in a clipeate icon<sup>25</sup>.

21. Psalm 79:20 (?) : 'Turn towards me, Lord of hosts'. Amphilius. B f. 140<sup>v</sup>; L f. 109. In B he raises his hands towards a segment. In L Christ is placed in a clipeate icon, and the saint is accompanied by two smaller figures<sup>26</sup>.

22. Psalm 88:2 : 'I will declare your truth for all generations'. Stephen Neos. B f. 151; L f. 117. In B he extends a hand towards a segment. In L Christ is frontal portrait of the saint, holding an icon<sup>27</sup>.

23. Psalm 118:93 : 'I will never forget your decrees'. Clement and Agathangelus. B f. 209; L f. 163. The two saints are facing a segment in both manuscripts<sup>28</sup>.

24. Psalm 118:132 : 'Look upon me and have mercy on me'. Alexius. B f. 212; L f. 165. In B he extends his hands in prayer; L adds a segment<sup>29</sup>.

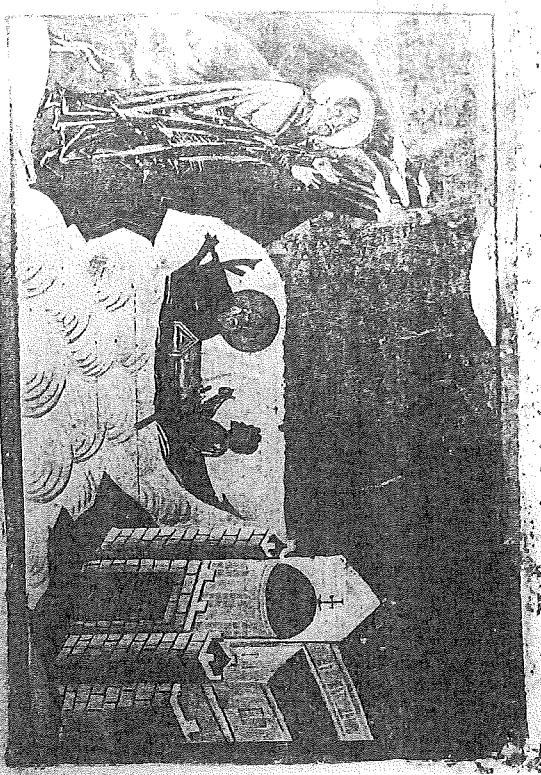
As the painter of L tends to amend and modify, where there are slight differences it is likely that B is closer to the model. Miniatures in which the saint turns towards a segment from which a hand and rays of light descend are much commoner in B.

There are two further prayer scenes of the same kind in B which, since they are not in L, may not have already been present in the model. On the other hand they conform to the iconography of the miniatures listed above.

25. Psalm 71:18 : 'Blessed is the Lord God of Israel'. Nicolas. B f. 121. He extends his hands towards a segment<sup>30</sup>.

26. Psalm 119:2 : 'Deliver my soul, Oh Lord, from unjust lips'. Gregory of Agrigentum. B f. 215<sup>v</sup>. He raises his hands towards a segment (Figure 4). There is a possible reference to the calumny of which Gregory was the victim<sup>31</sup>. This receives more developed illustration in L, f. 29<sup>v</sup>, in illustration to Psalm 26,12 (63)<sup>32</sup>.

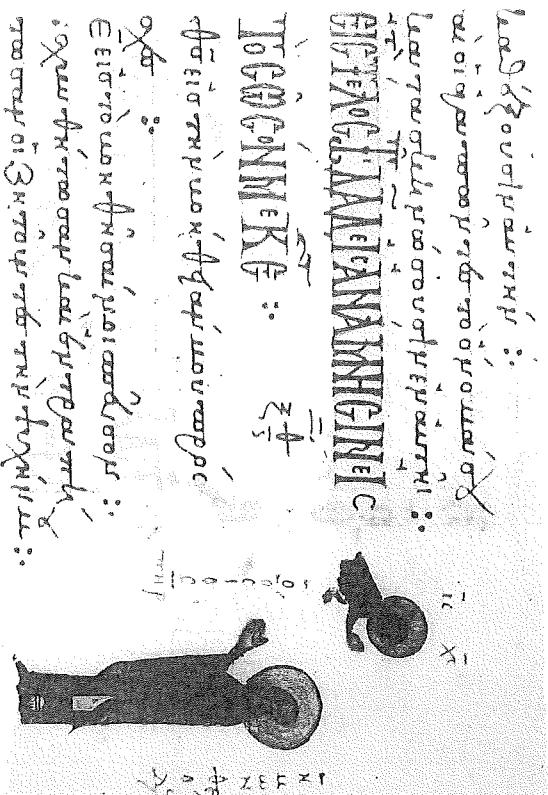
In seven cases the prayer miniature common to B and L is differently conceived or more developed.

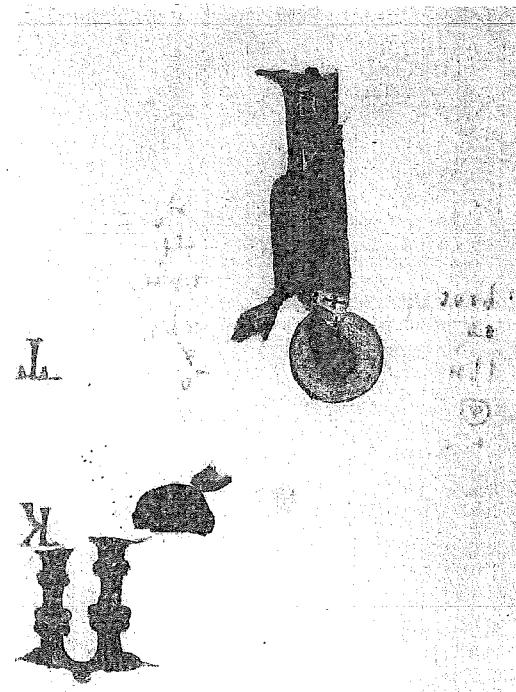


1. Theodore Studite, Menologium of Basil II, p. 175.

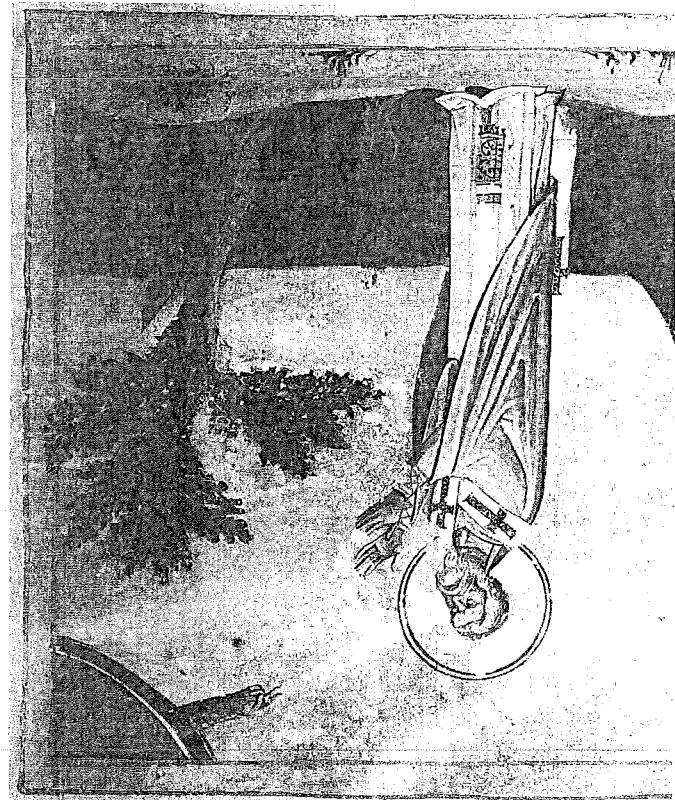
24. *Typicon*, I, p. 214 (28 January), synaxis in the church of Saint Aquilina. Metaphrastic Life (BHG 584).
25. See note 18.
26. No reference to a synaxis in the *Typicon* (23 November). Metaphrastic Life (BHG 72).
27. *Typicon*, I, p. 115 (28 November), synaxis in their martyrium. Metaphrastic Life (BHG 167).
28. *Typicon*, I, p. 208 (23 January), synaxis in their martyrium. Metaphrastic Life (BHG 353).
29. *Typicon*, I, p. 248 (17 March). Tomb in Saint Peter's, Rome. No Metaphrastic Life but many others (BHG 51-56).
30. *Typicon*, I, p. 124 (6 December), synaxis in the Great Church. Metaphrastic Life (BHG 1349).
31. *Typicon*, I, p. 112 (24 November), synaxis with other bishops of Agrigentum. No shrine at Constantinople. Metaphrastic Life (BHG 708).
32. See below.

2. Theodore Studite, Barberini Psalter, f. 116.

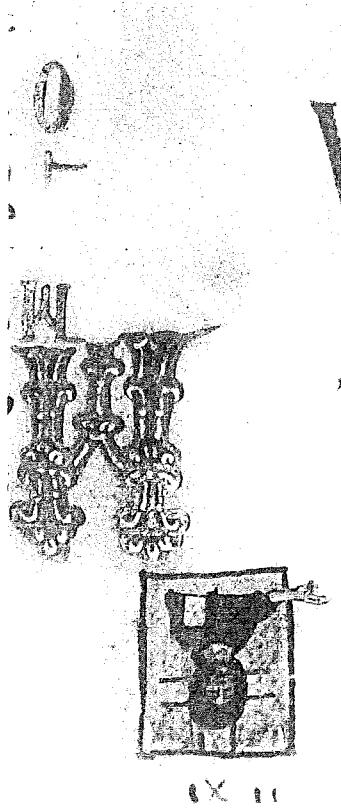




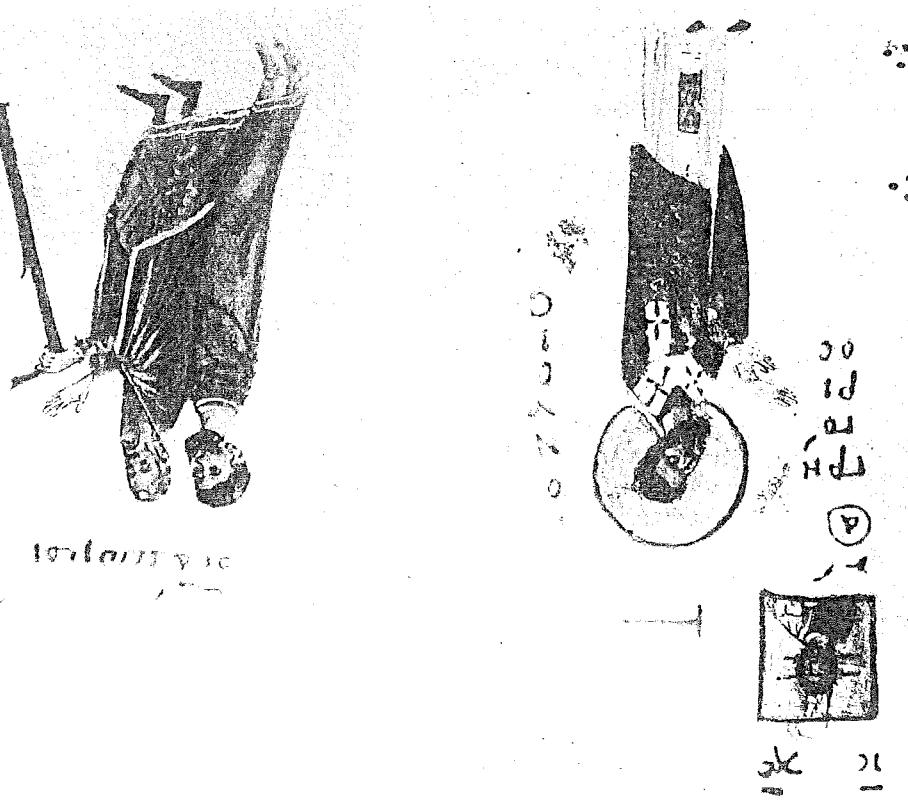
4. Gregory of Agripennum, Bardebreini Psalter, f. 215.



3. Gregory of Agripennum, Menologium of Basil II, p. 203.



6. The Blameless, Bardebreini Psalter, f. 202.



5. Gregory of Nyssa, Bardebreini Psalter, f. 118.



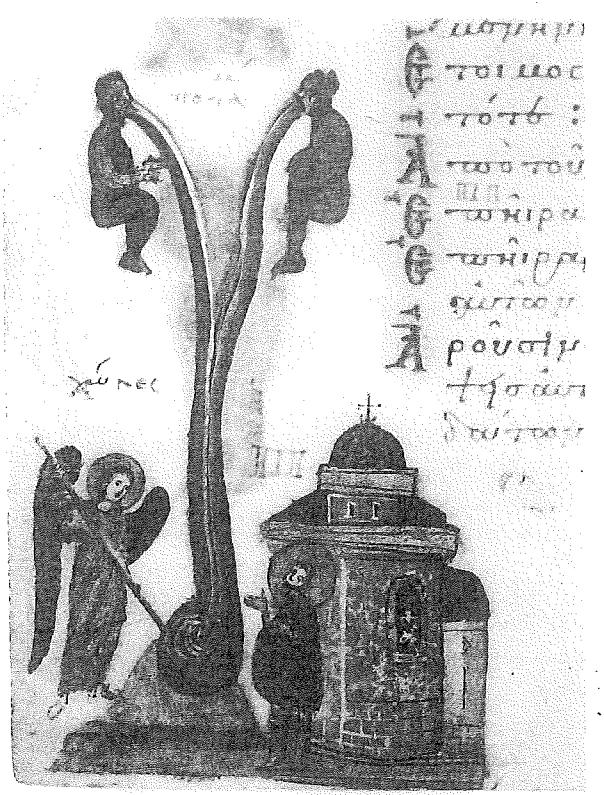
7. Antony,  
Barberini Psalter, f. 193.



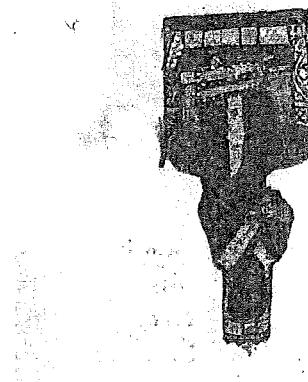
8. Theodora,  
Barberini Psalter, f. 201.



9. Gregory the Wonderworker,  
Barberini Psalter, f. 105<sup>v</sup>.



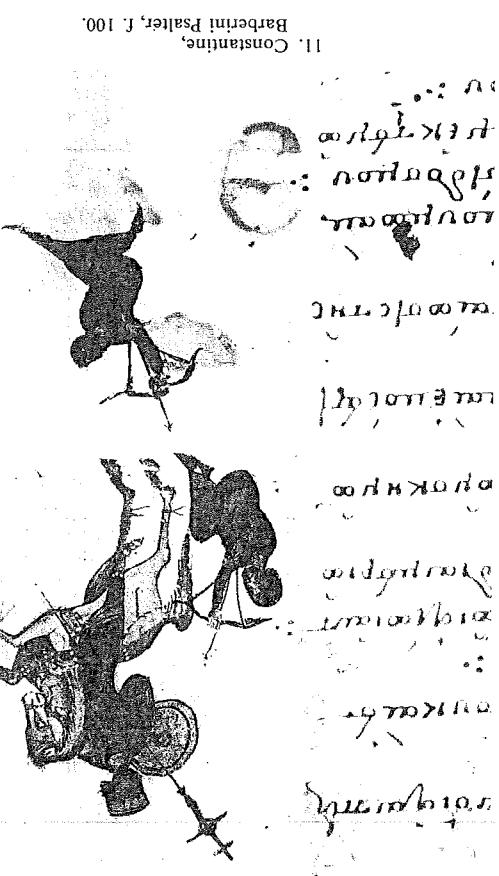
10. The Miracle of Chones,  
Barberini Psalter, f. 160<sup>v</sup>.



13. Bustace, Barbedermi Psalter, f. 166.

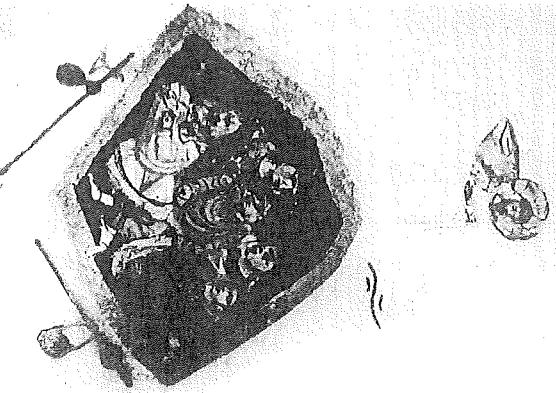
14. The Kingdom of Christians, Barbedermi Psalter, f. 225.

15. *Uphold*  
16. *Uffe*  
17. *Hartföre*  
18. *Yppen*  
19. *Quippe*  
20. *Godepe*  
21. *Ottfau*  
22. *Wurfe*  
23. *K*  
24. *Thorsa*  
25. *Wigga*  
26. *Uffat*  
27. *Godeat*  
28. *Witold*  
29. *Wiccupre*  
30. *Wigga*  
31. *Wigga*  
32. *Wigga*





15. The Seven Sleepers,  
Menologium of Basil II, p. 133.



16. The Seven Sleepers,  
Barberini Psalter, f. 54v.

27. Psalm 5,4 : 'In the morning you will hear my voice' Basil. B f. 9<sup>v</sup> ; L f. 3<sup>v</sup>. Basil stands before a building, facing a lectern on which a book is placed. There is no evident personal reference to Basil, but, since he holds a taper in his left hand, he is probably reciting the Orthros<sup>33</sup>.

28. Psalm 64,5 : 'Blessed is he whom you have chosen... Your temple is holy'. Gregory the Wonderworker. B f. 105<sup>v</sup> ; L f. 79<sup>v</sup>. He stands before a building, a censer in his left hand while his right hand is raised towards a segment (Figure 9). Mariès suggested a play on the word *σπουαρός* which occurs in the Psalm verse<sup>34</sup>. There may also be an allusion to an incident which Gregory of Nyssa recounts in his *Life*: Gregory the Wonderworker once entered a temple and purged it of demons<sup>35</sup>.

29. Psalm 70,1 : 'Oh God, I have hoped in you' James the Persian. B f. 117<sup>v</sup> ; L f. 89<sup>v</sup>. The saint is represented frontally in exotic costume as an *orans*. There is no evident connection between him and the Psalm verse. On the other hand the account of his Passion is full of quotations from the Psalms. He was put to death by being cut to pieces. As each limb was amputated, he recited a Psalm verse, but never the one which is illustrated here<sup>36</sup>. Consequently it is clear that in choosing saints to illustrate Psalm verses, the artist responsible for the model did not systematically seek out a connection between the Psalm and the saint.

30. Psalm 78,12 : 'Repay our neighbours seven times... their reproach'. Spyridon. B f. 138<sup>v</sup> ; L f. 107<sup>v</sup>. The saint extends his left hand towards an icon of Christ. He points with his right hand to a group of Arian bishops below. The incident of Spyridon's dispute with the Arians is recounted in the Metaphrastic *Life*, but there is no evident connection between it and the Psalm verse<sup>37</sup>.

31. Psalm 108,23 : 'Let those that rise up against me be ashamed'. Antony. B f. 193<sup>v</sup> ; L f. 151. The saint stands before his cell, extending his hands towards a segment. Behind the cell stands a large demon holding a staff ; before Antony, two smaller demons are fleeing. References to Antony's combat with demons occur in his *Life* and office, but there is no evident connection with the Psalm verse (Figure 7)<sup>38</sup>.

32. Psalm 117,11 : 'They completely surrounded me'. Theodore. B f. 201<sup>v</sup> ; L f. 157. The iconography is similar to that in the miniature of Antony. The saint stands before her cell raising her hands towards a segment. Large demons stand before her and behind the cell : two smaller ones stand below. This time

33. *Typicon*, I, p. 170 (1 January), synaxis in the Great Church. No Metaphrastic *Life*.  
34. MARIÈS, *art. cit.* (note 4), p. 161.  
35. *Typicon*, I, p. 106 (17 November), synaxis in the Great Church. The incident is recounted in his Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 715), PG 46, 916.

36. *Typicon*, I, p. 114 (27 November), synaxis in his martyrium. Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 772b). A. DEVOS, *Le dossier hagiographique de S. Jacques l'Intercessor*, *An. Boll.* 71, 1953, p. 172-173, 189-191, 204-205 ; 72, 1954, p. 244-245.

37. *Typicon*, I, p. 128 (12 December), synaxis in the church of Saint Peter. Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 1648), P. VAN DEN VEN, *La légende de S. Spyridon évêque de Trimiphone*, Louvain 1953, p. 125\*141\* ; PG 116, 429-436.

38. *Typicon*, I, p. 200 (17 January), synaxis in the Great Church. Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 140), PG 26, 845-852.

a connection can be established, for, according to her Metaphrastic *Life*, Theodora recited this Psalm verse in order to ward off demons (Figure 8)<sup>39</sup>.

33. Psalm 139.2 : 'Rescue me, Oh Lord, from the evil man.' Hermolaus, B.f. 232 ; L.f. 178'. The saint raises his left hand towards a segment. He points with his right hand towards the evil man below. L represents the evil man armed with a shield and club. There is no evident connection between the Psalm verse and the saint, but it is recounted in his *Life* that he was denounced to the emperor Maximian<sup>40</sup>.

### iii. Other representations of saints

These miniatures described above make up the bulk of illustrations of Psalm verses with a named « latter-day » saint common to B and L and hence already present in the model. Other iconographical forms than prayer scenes, common to B and L, are rare for saints. They are only five in number : a group portrait ; two scenes of martyrdom ; one miracle ; one cycle.

34. Psalm 32.1 : 'Rejoice in the Lord, you just'. A group of named saints. B.f. 53 ; L.f. 35'. In B four saints have been chosen to exemplify the just : John Chrysostom, Gregory of Nazianzus, Cosmas and, probably, Damian (The legend in the margin to the right of him is very rubbed). For Cosmas and Damian, L substitutes Basil, so making up a group of the Three Hierarchs.

35. Psalm 88.51 : 'Remember, Oh Lord, the reproach... which I have borne in my bosom'. Theodore Graptius, B.f. 155 ; L.f. 120'. Theodore is prostrate on a couch ; a figure leans towards him, tattooing verses on his head. There is no explicit connection between the incident and the Psalm verse, but no doubt Mariés was right in suggesting that the tattooed verses were the reproach which Theodore "bore in his bosom"<sup>41</sup>.

36. Psalm 92.3 : 'The rivers have lifted up their voices'. The Miracle of Chones. B.f. 160' ; L.f. 125. Archippus stands before his cell. An angel stops with a staff the flood of water descending from two personifications of rivers. Here a connection can be established, because the Psalm verse is quoted both in the account by Archippus of the miracle and in the office of the archangel Michael (Figure 10)<sup>42</sup>.

37. Psalm 93.20 : 'Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with you ?' The Martyrdom of Ignatius. B.f. 162' ; L.f. 127. Ignatius, his hands raised in prayer, is in the arena being devoured by lions. The judge sits above at the *kathisma*. In B he is named : Trajan, while in L he is simply called the eparch.

<sup>39</sup> *Typicon*, I, p. 24 (11 September), commemoration. Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 1730), PG 115, 681. MARIES, *art. cit.* (note 4), p. 161.

<sup>40</sup> *Typicon*, I, p. 350 (26 July), commemoration. No Metaphrastic *Life*. His denunciation to Maximian is recounted in *Syn CP*, 843.

<sup>41</sup> *Typicon*, I, p. 163 (27 December), commemoration in the Great Church. Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 1746). MARIES, *art. cit.* (note 4), p. 160. CH. WALTER, Saints of Second Iconoclasm in the Madrid Scylitzes, *REB* 39, 1981, p. 311-313.

<sup>42</sup> *Typicon*, I, p. 17 (6 September), synaxis of Michael in Anaphous. Metaphrastic account (*BHG* 1284), edited M. BONNER, *An. Boll.* 8, 1889, p. 314. MARIES, *art. cit.* (note 4), p. 162. CH. WALTER, The London September Metaphrast Additional 11870, *Zograf* 12, 1981, p. 19.

The judgment seat is no doubt the throne of iniquity, but there is no explicit connection with the martyrdom of Ignatius<sup>43</sup>.

38. Psalm 65.12 : 'We went through fire and water'. The Forty Martyrs of Sebaste, B.f. 107<sup>ev</sup> ; L.f. 81<sup>ev</sup>. The cycle is represented virtually identically in both manuscripts. All the scenes have been identified by Sirarpie Der Nersessian<sup>44</sup>. The application of this Psalm verse to the Forty Martyrs dates back to Basil's eulogy, which was quoted by John Damascene in his *Florilegium*<sup>45</sup>. The account of the recovery of their reliquies by Peter of Sebaste is already in the earliest *Passion*. One incident in the cycle — the exposure of the martyrs on the icy lake — is framed. This suggests that it was copied from an icon. The iconography of the exposure of the martyrs on the icy lake is ancient and attested in pre-iconoclast art<sup>46</sup>. Unfortunately the corresponding folio is missing from C. It is possible that this scene had already been represented on it in illustration to this Psalm verse. However, the full cycle is not attested earlier than the eleventh century<sup>47</sup>. Why a full cycle of the Forty Martyrs — and no other cycle for saints — should have been chosen to illustrate the model is an intriguing question<sup>48</sup>.

This « collation » of the two eleventh-century illuminated psalters shows clearly that the new « redaction » represented by their lost common model is to be situated in the movement well attested for the period towards a more assiduous cult of saints in the Church's worship. The Metaphrastic *Lives* were already available, arranged according to the Church's calendar, as was the selection of *Homilies* of Gregory Nazianzenus. The standard text of the *Menaias* was being prepared<sup>49</sup>. Moreover, in monumental painting, portraits of saints were being grouped in echelons, the bishops in the apse and other saints, according to their station in life, along the walls of the nave. Their iconography was also being standardized<sup>50</sup>. In the Chludov Psalter, their iconography is less formal : they may or may not have a halo and, in the accompanying legend,

<sup>43</sup> *Typicon*, I, p. 140 (20 December), synaxis in the Great Church. Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 815).

<sup>44</sup> DER. NERSESSIAN, p. 36, 92-93.

<sup>45</sup> BASIL, *In sanctos quadruplicia martyres* (*BHG* 1205), PG 31, 421. JOHN DAMASCENE, *Orationes de imaginibus tres* (*BHG* 1391-e-g), PG 94, 1361.

<sup>46</sup> O. DEMUS, Two Palaeocanonical Mosaic Icons in the Dumbarton Oaks Collection, *DOP* 14, 1960, p. 101-102 ; H. MAGUIRE, *Art and Eloquence in Byzantium*, Princeton 1981, p. 36-41.

<sup>47</sup> Compare the slightly different version in Saint Sophia, Ohrid, Gordana BABIĆ, *Les chapelles annexes des églises byzantines*, Paris 1969, p. 117-119.

<sup>48</sup> *Typicon*, I, p. 244 (9 March), synaxis in their martyrium. The Psalm verse is used in their office. Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 1284). See also CH. WALTER, The Iconography of the Forty Martyrs in the Marginal Psalters, *Belfast Byzantine Colloquia on the Forty Martyrs*, 1986 (painting).

<sup>49</sup> M. AURANZ, Les grandes étapes de la liturgie byzantine : Palestine-Byzance-Russie. Essai d'aperçu historique, *Liturgie de l'Église particulière et de l'Église universelle*, edited A. TRIACCA, Rome 1976, p. 62-63.

<sup>50</sup> Anna CHATZINIKOLAOU, Heilige, *Reallexikon zur byzantinischen Kunst*, II, 1034-1093.

there is not necessarily an epithet for saint<sup>51</sup>. By contrast in the Barberini and London Psalters — and hence in the model — they are invariably haloed, and an epithet for saint is invariably used in the accompanying legends.

In choosing a saint to illustrate a Psalm verse, the artist was rarely motivated by an explicit association — the use of the Psalm verse in the saint's *Life* or office — between the two. Such an explicit association can only be demonstrated in five cases (2, 6, 32, 36, 38). In four further cases an association may be implicit (26, 28, 33, 35). This is a further reason for maintaining that the painter of the model drew upon a general repertory, the same one as was used by artists of course, figure in the Byzantine calendar. The selection corresponds broadly to that which had already been made for the Metaphrastic *Lives*. Six saints represented in the model do not have a Metaphrastic *Life*: Macarius (13, 20); Theodore Studite (17); Gregory of Nyssa (18); Alexius (24); Basil (27); Hermolaus (33). However, with the exception of Macarius and Hermolaus, all these saints had wellknown *Lives* outside the Metaphrastic collection.

Another possible criterion for inclusion in the general repertory was their cult at Constantinople. Most of the saints represented in the model were entitled to a synaxis either in a shrine in the city or in the Great Church itself. There are eight exceptions : Macarius (13, 20); Arsenius (15); Amphiliocius (21); Alexius (24); Gregory of Agriegentum (26); Theodore (32); Hermolaus (33); Theodore Graptes (35). Of these saints, two were bishops, who were regularly included in the apse echelon ; three were monks. There remain the popular Alexius, « man of God », the nun Theodora, for whom the Psalm verse illustrated is quoted in her *Life*, and the more obscure Hermolaus.

#### THE CHARACTER OF THE LOST MARGINAL PSALTER

It is certain that the lost psalter was in the monastery of Saint John Studius in 1066, when the London Psalter was painted. It was also there in the last decade of the eleventh century, when it was faithfully copied to make the Barberini Psalter. Consequently the lost psalter was in all likelihood destined to remain in the Studite monastery, but only tenuous arguments can be advanced in favour of its actually having been painted there.

In general, the pictures of saints belong to the mainstream of Constantinopolitan eleventh-century art, without its being possible to link them closely with any other work. Possibly there is some connection with the *Menologium of Basil II*, but certainly not a direct relationship of dependence. The formula of saints addressing their prayer to a hand emerging from a segment which recurs a number of times in the *Menologium*, might

be used for the same saints (Figures 1, 3). One or two scenes are closely similar in the *Menologium* and in B and L, notably the Seven Sleepers (Figures 15, 16) and the Miracle of Chorões<sup>52</sup>. The scene of the tattooing of Theodore Graptes may be an adaptation of the blinding of an iconophile martyr in the *Menologium*<sup>53</sup>.

A more fruitful line of enquiry might be to examine the cycle of the Forty Martyrs (38). It has been suggested that manuscripts with a developed cycle of a saint was like a biographical icon, destined for a shrine in which the saint in question was particularly venerated. There were at least eight shrines dedicated to the Forty Martyrs at Constantinople<sup>54</sup>, but if the lost psalter remained in the Studite monastery, it was hardly destined for one of them. On the other hand, it seems that Theodore Studite had a special devotion to the Forty Martyrs. He recommended forty as the ideal number for a religious community, like the Forty Martyrs<sup>55</sup>. Further, in the *Parva catechesis*, when exhorting his monks to imitate the sufferings of the Lord, he holds up as example the perseverance of the Forty Martyrs<sup>56</sup>. This tradition of a special devotion to them may have still been alive when the lost psalter was illuminated.

A further connection with the Studite monastery might be implicit in two miniatures concerning Constantinople itself, although the sentiments which they express were not the monopoly of the Studite monks. David, it has been noted, does not figure in the miniatures common to L and B as the paragon of the Byzantine emperor. With one exception, when he is teaching<sup>57</sup>, he figures as the just man *par excellence* of the Old Testament, and he is represented at prayer.

However, in the miniature illustrating Psalm 50,20 : 'Do good, Oh Lord, to Sion' (L f. 65 ; B f. 88), which results from a misunderstanding of the Chudov miniature (f. 51), there does seem to be a direct assimilation of Sion to Constantinople. A personification of Sion, imperially dressed, stands before the city. In B, but not in L, there is a legend accompanying the miniature : Η ἀγία τρόπιος. Another miniature is more remarkable. It illustrates Psalm 133,3 : 'May the Lord... bless you out of Sion' (L f. 173<sup>v</sup> ;

52. *Menologio*, op. cit. (note 13), p. 17, 133.

53. *Ibidem*, p. 211. Ch. WALTER, *Le souvenir du II<sup>e</sup> concile de Nicée dans l'iconographie byzantine, Nicée II 787-1987*, edited F. BOESPLUG & N. LOSSKY, Paris 1987, p. 170, 174 ; fig. 10, 11.

54. R. JANIN, *Les églises et les monastères [de Constantinople]*, Paris 1969, p. 482-486.

55. THÉODORE STUDITE, *Epistola II 59 Monialibus*, PG 99, 1273.

56. IDEM, *Parva catechesis*, edited E. AUVRAY, Paris 1981 (BHG 1208b), p. 217-220.

57. Illustrating Psalm 17,26, L f. 17, B f. 29.

B f. 225). In B, a female personification, imperially dressed, is seated on a throne, accompanied by the legend : ή βασιλίς(ε)ια τ(ων) Χριστοναγόν(υ) (Figure 14). In L, curiously, the personification is male, although the legend is the same.

Both the miniature and the legend are unusual. *Basileia* was rarely personified. Once, however, the name is attributed in a legend to a female figure, draped *all'anica*, who crowns David in the Bristol Psalter, London Additional 40731, f. 33, illustrating Psalm 20,<sup>48</sup>. Yet she does not have much in common with the personification of the kingdom of the Christians. The formula was not in common use, the normal one in patristic writings being the kingdom of heaven<sup>52</sup>. However, the significance is clear. Epiphanius had explained how Christ, who inherited the throne of David, transferred regal and high-priestly status to the archpriests of the Church<sup>53</sup>. An eleventh-century analogy may be noted in an anonymous treatise on the prerogatives of metropolitan bishops ; it dates from about 1050. According to this treatise, the see of Rome had lost its privilege of primary and its universal jurisdiction. These now belonged to Constantinople, because the *basileia* had been transferred there<sup>54</sup>.

This text would be about contemporary with the illumination of this lost psalter, if it is to be associated with the rare dated manuscripts, earlier than 1066, in which saints are represented : the Metaphrastic volumes *Paris, graec. 580 + 1499 (1055-1056)* and *Mosqu. graec. 9 (1063)*<sup>55</sup> ; the *Homilies of Gregory of Nazianzus, Vaticana. graec. 463 (1062)*<sup>56</sup>.

#### NAMED « LATTER-DAY » SAINTS IN THE LONDON PSALTER

When Theodore set out to illuminate his psalter, he had before him a model with a fully articulated programme. He followed this programme in its general lines, maintaining, with some exceptions, the Old and New Testament scenes, presenting the just man and his deeds, who was frequently exemplified by David or the « latter-day » saints. However, he gave the

programme, as Sirarpe Der Nersessian has shown, an original politico-mystical slant.<sup>57</sup> Three new miniatures of David were introduced, two of his imperial uncion (f. 19, f. 97), and one of him trampling his enemies (f. 18). Moses and Aaron lead the Israelites (f. 99<sup>v</sup>, f. 155). The investiture of the hegumen is represented (f. 192) ; an angel brings him his *rhabdos* directly from Christ, while Saints John the Baptist and Theodore Studite stand either side of him in prayer. According to Der Nersessian, these new miniatures establish a parallel between ecclesiastical and imperial investiture, exalt David as prefiguring the Christian *basileus* and exemplify the « symphony » of powers. Theodore also introduced a new miniature assimilating Constantinople to Sion (f. 57<sup>v</sup>), and gave greater prominence to the monastery's founder, Theodore Studite. In the lost psalter, he had figured only once at prayer (17). In the London Psalter, he was represented alongside Nicephorus in the modified iconoclast miniature (f. 27<sup>v</sup>), as well as in the investiture scene mentioned above.

So far as « latter-day » saints are concerned, Theodore also modified his model's programme quantitatively. He introduced nine new simple representations of saints at prayer<sup>58</sup>. He developed sometimes the setting of the prayer miniature in his new additions<sup>59</sup>. He represented more frequently the evil, from which the saint prayed for protection<sup>60</sup>. Sometimes — and this was an innovation — he represented the actual event which was the occasion of the saint's prayer<sup>61</sup>. Besides these miniatures, he introduced new portraits<sup>62</sup>, new scenes<sup>63</sup>, five of martyrdom, and two new cycles<sup>64</sup>.

All the new « latter-day » saints belong to the Byzantine liturgical calendar. Theodore, therefore, drew upon the same repertory as the illuminator of the lost psalter. However, although it does not seem that his choice of a specific saint to illustrate a specific Psalm verse was invariably

64. DER NERSESSIAN, p. 107.  
65. 39. Psalm 21,2, Chariton (f. 22) ; 40. Psalm 30,2, Abercius (f. 32<sup>v</sup>) ; 41. Psalm 30,19, Artemius f. 33<sup>v</sup>) ; 42. Psalm 31,1, Barlaam (f. 34<sup>v</sup>) ; 43. Psalm 45,2, Cyrus & John (f. 57<sup>v</sup>) ; 44. Psalm 61,2, Patricius (f. 78) ; 45. Psalm 108,1, Epiphanius (f. 149) ; 46. Psalm 118,5<sup>v</sup>, Euthymius (f. 161) ; 47. Psalm 140,58, Joannicius (f. 179<sup>v</sup>) ; 66. 48. Psalm 83,3-5, Blasius (f. 112) ; 49. Psalm 110,5, Onuphrius (f. 152<sup>v</sup>) ; 50. Psalm 118,1, Holy Five (f. 159) ; 51. Psalm 118,3-5, Xena (f. 160).  
67. 52. Psalm 34,5-6, Auxentius (f. 38<sup>v</sup>) ; 53. Psalm 72,18, Mocius (f. 94) ; 54. Psalm 73,19, Auxentius (f. 96<sup>v</sup>).  
68. 55. Psalm 73,7, Anthimus (f. 95<sup>v</sup>) ; 56. Psalm 82,3-4, Monks in Sinai & Raithou (f. 111) ; 57. Psalm 93,1, Demetrios & Nestor (f. 125<sup>v</sup>).  
69. 58. Psalm 17,2, Alypius the stylite (f. 16) ; 59. Psalm 24,13, Daniel the stylite (f. 26<sup>v</sup>) ; 60. Psalm 118,144, Thecla (f. 165<sup>v</sup>).  
70. 61. Psalm 21,25, John the Almoner (f. 23<sup>v</sup>) ; 62. Psalm 33,30, Stephen (f. 38<sup>v</sup>) ; 63. Psalm 34,15, Theodore Stratilates (f. 39<sup>v</sup>) ; 64. Psalm 34,22-23, Eleutherius (f. 40<sup>v</sup>) ; 65. Psalm 54,8, Mary the Egyptian & Zosimus (f. 68) ; 66. Psalm 118,100, Euphemia (f. 163<sup>v</sup>) ; 67. Psalm 119,1-2, Catherine of Alexandria (f. 167).

71. 68. Psalm 26,12, Gregory of Aigrigentum (f. 29<sup>v</sup>) ; 69. Psalm 39,3, Gregory the Illuminator (f. 49).  
B. f. 225). In B, a female personification, imperially dressed, is seated on a throne, accompanied by the legend : ή βασιλίς(ε)ια τ(ων) Χριστοναγόν(υ) (Figure 14). In L, curiously, the personification is male, although the legend is the same.

Both the miniature and the legend are unusual. *Basileia* was rarely personified. Once, however, the name is attributed in a legend to a female figure, draped *all'anica*, who crowns David in the Bristol Psalter, London Additional 40731, f. 33, illustrating Psalm 20,<sup>48</sup>. Yet she does not have much in common with the personification of the kingdom of the Christians. The formula was not in common use, the normal one in patristic writings being the kingdom of heaven<sup>52</sup>. However, the significance is clear. Epiphanius had explained how Christ, who inherited the throne of David, transferred regal and high-priestly status to the archpriests of the Church<sup>53</sup>. An eleventh-century analogy may be noted in an anonymous treatise on the prerogatives of metropolitan bishops ; it dates from about 1050. According to this treatise, the see of Rome had lost its privilege of primary and its universal jurisdiction. These now belonged to Constantinople, because the *basileia* had been transferred there<sup>54</sup>.

This text would be about contemporary with the illumination of this lost psalter, if it is to be associated with the rare dated manuscripts, earlier than 1066, in which saints are represented : the Metaphrastic volumes *Paris, graec. 580 + 1499 (1055-1056)* and *Mosqu. graec. 9 (1063)*<sup>55</sup> ; the *Homilies of Gregory of Nazianzus, Vaticana. graec. 463 (1062)*<sup>56</sup>.

When Theodore set out to illuminate his psalter, he had before him a model with a fully articulated programme. He followed this programme in its general lines, maintaining, with some exceptions, the Old and New Testament scenes, presenting the just man and his deeds, who was frequently exemplified by David or the « latter-day » saints. However, he gave the

68. Ch. WALTER, Raising on a Shield in Byzantine Iconography, REB 33, 1975, p. 153, reprinted in *Studies in Byzantine Iconography*, London 1977.

59. *A Patristic Greek Lexicon*, edited G. LAMPE, Oxford 1961, *sub verbo : basileia*.

60. EPIPHANIUS, *Adversus haereses*, I.ii, PG 41, 391-397.

61. ANONYME, Sur les prérogatives des métropolites ; edited J. DARROUZÉS, *Documents inédits d'écclésiologie byzantine*, Paris 1966, p. 146.

62. Nancy P. SEVENCEO, Illustrated Editions of the Metaphrastion Menologium, *JOB* 32/4, 1982, p. 187-188. Nancy Sevenceo has identified other volumes of these two collections, which would presumably be of about the same date.

63. G. GALAVARIS, *The Illustrations of the Liturgical Homilies of Gregory Nazianzenus*, Princeton 1969, p. 250-252.

motivated, there are indications that he was more frequently inspired than his predecessor by the kind of literature which would be available to a Studite monk : *Lives of saints and their office in the Menaias*, which, at that time, was being systematized. For two of the newly introduced « latter-day » saints, the Psalm verse which they illustrate was used in their office substituted the Holy Five; variously dressed and moving towards the right, their arms outstretched in prayer (f. 158). Orestes, in his account of the death of Auxentius, one of the Holy Five, tells how he chanted this Psalm verse on the way to martyrdom<sup>72</sup>.

65. Psalm 54,8 : 'I have fled far off and lodged in the desert'. Mary the Egyptian and Zosimus (f. 68). The Psalm verse is quoted in the *Life of Mary the Egyptian*<sup>73</sup>.

The following examples of a choice motivated by association must be judged on their merits.

48. Psalm 83,3-5 : 'My soul longs for the courts of the Lord... The turtle dove (has found) a nest for herself... even your altars, Oh Lord'. Blasius extends his right hand towards a clipeate icon of Christ. With his left hand, he points to a bird nesting in a tree and a church (f. 112). In B f. 144<sup>74</sup>, the Psalm verse is illustrated literally by a miniature of a resting bird. Theodore may have been inspired to develop the miniature by references in the office of Blasius to a phoenix in the courts of the Lord and a tree in the house of the Lord<sup>75</sup>.

49. Psalm 110,5 : 'He has given food to those who fear him'. Onuphrius, naked, stands beside a river ; before him is a palm tree (f. 152<sup>76</sup>). There are references in his office to his nourishment in the desert with bread from heaven and to the tree of life<sup>77</sup>.

51. Psalm 118,35 : 'Guide me in the paths of your commandments'. Xena (Eusebia) with two other figures, all dressed as nuns, move towards the right, their hands outstretched in prayer (f. 160). The miniature is the counterpart for women saints to that of the Holy Five. In the office of Xena, there is a reference to her respect for the Lord's commandments<sup>78</sup>.

52. Psalm 34,5-6 : 'Let them be as dust before the wind and an angel of the Lord afflicting them'. Auxentius raises his right hand towards a clipeate icon

of Christ, and, with his left hand, points towards an angel spearing fallen enemies (f. 38<sup>79</sup>). This miniature replaces the one in B f. 57<sup>80</sup> of Christ directing an angel to spear a group of men.

54. Psalm 73,19 : 'Do not deliver to the wild beasts a soul who gives praise to you'. Auxentius, again, raises his right hand towards a clipeate icon of Christ, while pointing with his left hand towards two demons (f. 96<sup>81</sup>).

Michael Psellus (1018-ca 1078) wrote a *Life of Auxentius*, in which he made much of the saint's struggles with demons and of the help which he received from angels. He said that angels accompany the saints in their struggles, and that if one sang a Psalm of David demons were like corpses<sup>82</sup>.

66. Psalm 21,25 : 'He has not despised... the supplications of the poor'. John the Almoner gives alms (f. 23<sup>83</sup>). He was the obvious saint to exemplify the just man's duty of charity towards the poor.

63. Psalm 34,15 : 'Scourges were brought against me'. Theodore Stratilates is described in his *Passion*<sup>84</sup>.

66. Psalm 118,100 : 'I understood more than the ancients'. Euphemia stands in prayer between two lions (f. 163<sup>85</sup>). Theodore may have been inspired by the prodigy attributed to her. According to the earlier version of the prodigy, the orthodox and heterodox bishops at the council of Chalcedon went to the tomb of Saint Euphemia. Each party presented its *tomas*, whereupon Euphemia seized the orthodox *tomas*, placed it to her lips and returned it to the bishops<sup>86</sup>.

67. Psalm 119,1-2 : 'Deliver my soul, Oh Lord, from unjust lips'. Catherine of Alexandria disputes with rhetors before the emperor. This miniature replaces Gregory of Agrigentum at prayer in B f. 215<sup>87</sup> (26). Rhetors, it seems, were ill-reputed. In the *Souda* they are said to have forked tongues like dragons<sup>88</sup>.

68. Psalm 26,12 : 'Unjust witnesses have risen up against me'. The calumny of Gregory of Agrigentum (f. 29<sup>89</sup>). If Theodore placed Gregory of Agrigentum here, it may have been because the calumny was based on false testimonies<sup>90</sup>.

69. Psalm 39,3 : 'He brought me up out of a pit of misery'. The rescue of Gregory the Illuminator from the pit in which he had been imprisoned (f. 48<sup>91</sup>). Theodore's legend accompanying the miniature establishes the connection between this event in Gregory's *Life* and the Psalm verse<sup>92</sup>.

## CONCLUSION

The principal aim of his article has been to reconstruct in outline the programme of the lost model for the London and Barberini Psalters and to define the place of the « latter-day » saints in this programme. Although,

77. P.-P. JOANNIN, *Démonologie populaire-démonologie critique au XI<sup>e</sup> siècle. La vie inédite de S. Auxence par M. Pielo*, Wiesbaden 1971 (*BHG* 203), p. 118, 120.

78. L'éloge de saint Théodore le Stratilate par Euthyme Protosecrets (*BHG* 1753b), edited F. HAUKIN, *An. Bull.* 99, 1981, p. 231.

79. Ch. WALTER, *L'iconographie des conciles dans la tradition byzantine*, Paris 1970, p. 248-249.

80. *Suidae Lexicon*, edited A. ADLER, II, Leipzig 1931, p. 139.

81. DER NERESSIAN, p. 96-97.

82. *Ibidem*, p. 96.

72. Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 646), PG 116, 488. Compare *Menaias*, 2, p. 485, Ode 7. Psalm 118 in L is illustrated with seven miniatures of « latter day » saints as well as Saint Paul. According to the argumentum of « Athanasius » with regard to this Psalm, it describes the saints, their struggles, torments, trials and assaults from demons, as well as the help which comes from above and their rewards. *La chaîne palestinienne sur le Psautre 118*, edited Marguerite HARI, I, Paris 1972, p. 184-185 = PG 27, 480.

73. Metaphrastic *Life* (*BHG* 1042), PG 87<sup>3</sup>, 3716. Compare *Menaias*, 4, p. 224.

74. *Menaias*, 3, p. 563, *Echos* 2 ; p. 565, *Echos* 4.

75. *Menaias*, 5, p. 274, *Echos* 4 ; p. 275, Ode 1, *Echos* 2 ; p. 278, Ode 5.

76. *Menaias*, 3, p. 352, Ode 6.

in accordance with normal Byzantine practice, the painter of the model recopied many miniatures, notably the Biblical ones, already established in the Chludov Psalter, he also innovated by introducing a considerable number of new scenes of a moralizing nature. By so doing he reinterpreted the Psalter as a book of edification and of prayer. He introduced a new iconographical formula, according to which prayer was addressed to Christ or an icon. In some cases he modified prayer scenes in the Chludov Psalter by adding an icon or a hand emerging from a segment.

To judge by the number of prayer scenes introduced into the model, assiduity in prayer was the primary duty of the just man. The « latter-day » saints, like David, exemplify the just man, sometimes replacing the anonymous just of the Chludov Psalter. For his choice of saints, the illustrator of the lost psalter drew on the established calendar of the Byzantine Church, but he did not systematically select saints for whom a connection with a specific Psalm verse was already made in their *Life* or office. Thus, for Macarius (13, 20) and James the Persian (29), he ignored obvious connections.

The Barberini Psalter seems to be a close copy of this lost Psalter. The London Psalter also depends on it in its main lines. Theodore, its illustrator, even reinforces its moralizing programme by introducing more saints at prayer and underlining the importance of prayer as a source of protection against evil.

The Barberini and London Psalters were illuminated in the Studite monastery. It is likely that the lost model was also illustrated there, although allusions in it to a possible Studite « ideology » are discreet. In the lost psalter, Constantinople had already been assimilated to Sion, and, by implication, is presented as the kingdom of Christians, although David is regularly presented as the paragon of the just man. Theodore, however, introduced new miniatures, implying that David was also the paragon of the Byzantine emperor, anointed and victorious. In other new, or adapted, miniatures, he laid more stress on the cult of the monastery's founder Theodore Studite. Also, in his investiture scene, he implied that the authority of the hegumen came directly from Christ, so that he enjoyed a measure of autonomy relative to the emperor, in spite of the fact that his authority also derived directly from Christ.

## The Aristocratic Psalters and Ode Illustration in Byzantium

A century ago, the Finnish scholar J. J. Tikkannen identified a family of illuminated Byzantine Psalters, which he called “aristocratic”.<sup>1</sup> More recently, Sirarpie Der Nersessian described the characteristics of this family as follows: they comprise scenes from the Life of David and his portrait, which precede Psalm 1; a miniature of David's penance illustrates Psalm 50; a series of scenes illustrates the apocryphal Psalm 151, which briefly recounts David's Life; there is a frontispiece for the Psalms of Asaph before Psalm 77, as well as for each of the Odes.<sup>2</sup> Tikkannen knew only seven illuminated Psalters of this family. In the course of this century, many others have been discovered. In fact A. Cutler has assembled fifty-one examples (counting separately folios removed at some time from a Psalter and now held in other libraries).<sup>3</sup> He has also taken note of seven other Psalters, which in some way are related to the “aristocratic” family. He has described all these manuscripts, and reproduced their figurative miniatures as well as a number of non-figurative headpieces or headbands. He has also established their bibliography up to 1982.

Cutler, like other art historians, accepts that the term “aristocratic” is not exact, and like them also he has failed to find a better one. He maintains Der Nersessian's description as corresponding to “an ideal Psalter to which, as it were, all extant examples aspire.” However, he is not, it seems, implying that the description could be applied to a lost “archetype.” The scholar who sets out to establish pre-iconoclast exemplars would be attempting “to resolve insoluble questions with unverifiable answers.” He plans to publish a general study of the aristocratic Psalters in a subsequent volume. His first volume assembles the relevant data for such a study; it also “makes available to scholars material which has long been withheld from them.”<sup>4</sup>

I am certainly not the only scholar to be grateful to Cutler for his generosity and to wish to take advantage of this material which he has now made available. In this present article I am more particularly concerned with the illustration of the Odes. Whatever the differences between the aristocratic Psalters, the marginal ones and those which are less easily classified, they all have one feature in common: they tend to include illustrations to many, if not all, of the Odes. It is true that for the aristocratic Psalters, the illustrations are limited to the Odes.

<sup>1</sup> J. J. TIKKANEN, *Die Psalterillustration im Mittelalter*, Helsingfors 1895–1900, reprinted Soest 1975, 112–134.

<sup>2</sup> Sirarpie DER NERSESSIAN, *A Psalter and New Testament Manuscript at Dumbarton Oaks*, Dumbarton Oaks Papers 19 (1965) 166–167.

<sup>3</sup> A. CUTLER, *The Aristocratic Psalters in Byzantium*, Paris 1984. I presented this volume briefly in the Revue des études byzantines 43 (1985) 304–305. Cutler's studies of illuminated Psalters are listed in the bibliography. See particularly his paper *The Aristocratic Psalter: The State of Research*, in: XV<sup>e</sup> congrès international d'études byzantines, Rapports et Co-rapports, III. Art et archéologie, 231–257.

<sup>4</sup> CUTLER, *Aristocratic Psalters*, 7–9.

tic family this is an ideal towards which it aspires. Fifteen of the Psalters which Cutler has published carry no illustration to the Odes, although of these ten carry headbands. A further eleven Psalters have an illustration only for the first Ode of Moses. Of the three earliest — and closely related — aristocratic Psalters (Paris, graec. 139, ca 975; Paris, suppl. graec. 610, ca 1150; Washington Dumbarton Oaks cod. 3, ca 1084), only the third has a full complement of Ode illustrations. Another closely related group — the "Family 2400" dating from the twelfth century and containing eleven members — has numerous Ode illustrations. They also occur in five other from the twelfth century, four from the thirteenth century and one from the fourteenth century, whose affinities are less evident. Incidentally one may wonder why Cutler did not include the eleventh-century Psalter Leningrad graec. 214 among those which are in some way related to the aristocratic family.

The study of Ode illustration, curiously neglected by Byzantinists, is greatly facilitated by Cutler's publication.<sup>5</sup> It may now be undertaken, if all its breadth, as a common element of all kinds of illuminated Psalters. Several questions come at once to mind: Was the choice of Ode illustrations determined by the overall conventions of Byzantine bookmaking? Were there common principles specific to Ode illustration as such? To what extent was Ode illustration influenced by the programme of the kind of Psalter in which it appears? Were there cross-influences in Ode illustration between the aristocratic and marginal families? However, it is not my intention, in this brief article, to attempt to answer all or any of these questions. I prefer rather to offer the reader three notes: on the significance of the Odes for the Byzantine illuminator; on prayer theme: in the early marginal and aristocratic Psalters; on the possible source for miniatures in which the subject rather than the author of the Ode is portrayed.

### 1. The Significance of the Odes for the Byzantine Illuminator

The word *Ode* (Ὥδη), which in classical Greek means song, recurs frequently in the Septuagint, some thirty times in the title of a Psalm. It was also applied to the first and second Odes of Moses (Exodus 15,1—19 Deuteronomy 32,1—43) quite independently of their later use in the worship of the Christian Church. One cannot know whether Saint Paul was referring to one of these texts when he wrote of "spiritual odes" (Ephesians 5,19; Colossians 14,3). However, there is an explicit reference to the first Ode of Moses in Apocalypse 15,3, while, in the late second century, Clement of Alexandria referred to the second Ode of Moses.<sup>6</sup> In the fifth century, the so-called "Nine Odes", together with those of Manasseh, Hezekiah and Symeon, had been grouped together after the Psalms in the Codex Alexandrinus.<sup>7</sup>

Sacred songs are numerous in the books of the Old Testament. Some were selected for Christian worship; others rejected, but the date and exact criteria for the choice are not known. This choice was certain,

eclectic, although certain themes recur: divine intervention to rescue victims of persecution; typological reference to the Messiah; answer to personal prayer. Thus, the first Ode of Moses, celebrating the delivery of the Israelites from the Egyptians, was early used in the Paschal vigil, which Schneider thought to have been the place of origin of the use of Odes in Church offices.<sup>8</sup> The Ode of Jonah (Jonah 2,3—10) was at once a personal prayer for delivery and a sign of the death and resurrection of Christ (Matthew 12,40). The Ode of the Three Youths in the Furnace (Daniel 3,26—88) expresses confidence in delivery.<sup>9</sup>

Three other Odes are personal acts of thanksgiving for answer to prayer: Hannah, who was barren but conceived Samuel, also prefigured the Virgin Mary (1 Samuel 2,1—10); Hezekiah, who was dying but whose life was prolonged (Isaiah 38,10—20, cf II Kings 20,1—11); Manasseh, who having abandoned the cult of the God of Israel for that of idols, repented and was forgiven (cf II Paralipomena 33).<sup>10</sup>

The remaining Odes are more heterogeneous. The second Ode of Moses extols the fidelity of the God of Israel in spite of the rebelliousness of the Chosen People, recalling certain Psalms with the same theme, notably 77, 104 and 105. The Ode of Isaiah (Isaiah 26,9—20) may have recommended itself during times of persecution, with its reference (verse 10) to the putting down of the ungodly man. The Ode of Habakkuk (Habakkuk 3,2—19) was interpreted as a prophecy of the coming of the Messiah. Finally the three New Testament Odes, of the Theotokos (Luke 1,46—55), of Zachariah (Luke 1,68—79), of Symeon (Luke 2,29—32) were presumably also chosen for their Messianic content.

It will be possible to form a more precise notion of the Byzantine interpretation of the Odes when their Catena have been published in a scholarly edition.<sup>11</sup> Meanwhile something may be learned from the titles given to the Odes in illuminated manuscripts, although, unfortunately, in Cutler's edition of the aristocratic Psalters, as in those of other illuminated Psalters, these titles are by no means consistently reproduced or transcribed. In the ninth-century Chludov Psalter, of ten titles reproduced, only three designate the poem specifically as an ode: Moses I, Isaiah, the Theotokos. For Hannah, Jonah, Hezekiah, Manasseh and Symeon, προσευχή (prayer) was preferred, while Zachariah's Ode is called a prophecy. These titles, so far as can be judged, were maintained fairly consistently, although Hannah, Habakkuk and Isaiah's poems may be designated as an ode or a prayer, while Zachariah's poem is also called thanksgiving. In some manuscripts, notably in the Dumbarton Oaks Psalter, the title to each Ode is a dodecasyllable: "Moses speaks, Pharaoh totally drowning" [Moses I]; "Writing of the Law, again an Ode of Moses" [Moses II]; "The barren woman strangely giving birth honours God" [Hannah]; "Habakkuk demonstrating the abasement of the Logos" [Habakkuk]; "The prediction of Isaiah, fulfilment of prayer" [Isaiah]; "From the monster Jonah cried out, saying..." [Jonah]. For the Three Youths, there is no title but three subtitles: "The praise of the Three Youths quenches the

<sup>5</sup> H. SCHNEIDER, *Die biblischen Oden in christlichen Altertum*, Biblica 30 (1949) 28—55, especially 37, 41.

<sup>6</sup> For this apocryphal Ode, see particularly *Les constitutions apostoliques*, 1, edited M. MITZGER, Paris 1985, 211—223; H.-P. RÜGER, *Apokryphen des Alten Testaments*, Theologische Realenzyklopädie 3, 304, 313.

<sup>7</sup> For the status questions of editions of Catena for the Odes, see M. GEERARD, *Clavis patrum graecorum IV*, Turnhout 1980, 212—213.

<sup>8</sup> J. MEARN, *The Canticles of the Christian Church*, Cambridge 1914, 9.

flames"; "The praising of the virtuous was the delight of the youths"; "Created nature exalting the Lord". The rest of the titles are as follows: "The Virgin Mother hymns the Son and God" [Theotokos]; "Prayer of Zachariah, the father of the Prophets" [Zachariah]; "She (?) beholds Hezekiah praising me" [Hezekiah]; "The redeemed Manasseh magnifies God" [Manasseh].

I do not know whether these dodecasyllables are attested in nonillustrated Psalters earlier than Paris suppl. graeec. 610.<sup>11</sup> They do, however, resemble other poems about the Odes, for example two attributed in the manuscripts to Elias of Jerusalem or Andrew of Crete published by Sophronius Eustratiades.<sup>12</sup> They suggest that, while the two Odes of Moses were considered significant for their historical context and the Ode of Habakkuk for its Messianic content, the others were valued rather as acts of prayer, praise and thanksgiving.

## 2. Prayer Themes in the Early Marginal and Aristocratic Psalters

As has been noted, five of the Odes in the Chludov Psalter are called a prayer in their title.<sup>13</sup> Jonah, Hezekiah and Manasseh are indeed represented at prayer. On the other hand, for Hannah the artist had chosen a frontal portrait, holding the infant Samuel, and for Symeon the "festival scene" of the Presentation of the child Jesus in the temple. He has also represented Isaiah frontally in illustration to his "prophecy". This relative lack of interest in prayer themes is evident in the illustration of the Psalms in this Psalter. However, the Chludov Psalter is remarkable for the number of miniatures which interpret Psalm verses typologically.<sup>14</sup> Yet only one Ode, that of Habakkuk, is illustrated typologically. Moreover, apart from the Ode of Isaiah, in which the ungodly man is represented being dragged away by an angel, each Ode has only one illustration, an "author portrait" or a scene referring to its theme. These may be combined, since Jonah prays inside the whale and Hezekiah prays on his sickbed. It seems that the Odes, unlike the Psalms, were treated as individual compositions by different authors.

The two eleventh-century marginal Psalters, London and Barberini, maintain, sometimes with slight modifications, the subjects used in Chludov to illustrate many of the Odes.<sup>15</sup> Thus Hannah holds the infant Samuel, although in London she is now turned towards an edifice surmounted by a cross. Zachariah holds the infant John, with again the introduction into London of an edifice representing the temple. For the Ode of Symeon, the scene of the Presentation is also maintained in both Psalters (figure 1). Hezekiah and Manasseh are represented at prayer in Barberini, although they are missing from London.

There are, however, certain changes and more significant modifications. For the first Ode of Moses, the Egyptians falling into the Red Sea have been added to the Israelites crossing on dry land (figure 2). Both eleventh-century Psalters also add miniatures of Moses at prayer (figure 3).

<sup>11</sup> Ch. ASFRUC, *Un psautier byzantin à frontispice: le suppl. gr. 610, Cahiers archéologiques 3 (1958) 106–113, refers to "le traditionnel vers de 12 syllabes," without further development.*

<sup>12</sup> S. EUSTATIADES, *Епсюлoжът, Channenvières-sur-Marne 1932*, 238–239.

<sup>13</sup> Maria SÖEPKINA, *Миниатюры Хлудовской псалтирь*, Moscow 1977.

<sup>14</sup> Ch. WALTER, *Christological Themes in the Byzantine Marginal Psalters from the Ninth to the Eleventh Century*, Rev. des ét. byz. 44 (1986) 269–287.

<sup>15</sup> DER NERSESSIAN, op. cit. (note 5); J. ANDERSON — P. CANART — Ch. WALTER, *The Barberini Psalter*, Stuttgart (printing).



Figure 1. The Presentation, Barberini Psalter, fol. 27<sup>v</sup>.



Figure 2. The Drowning Egyptians, Barberini Psalter, fol. 249v.

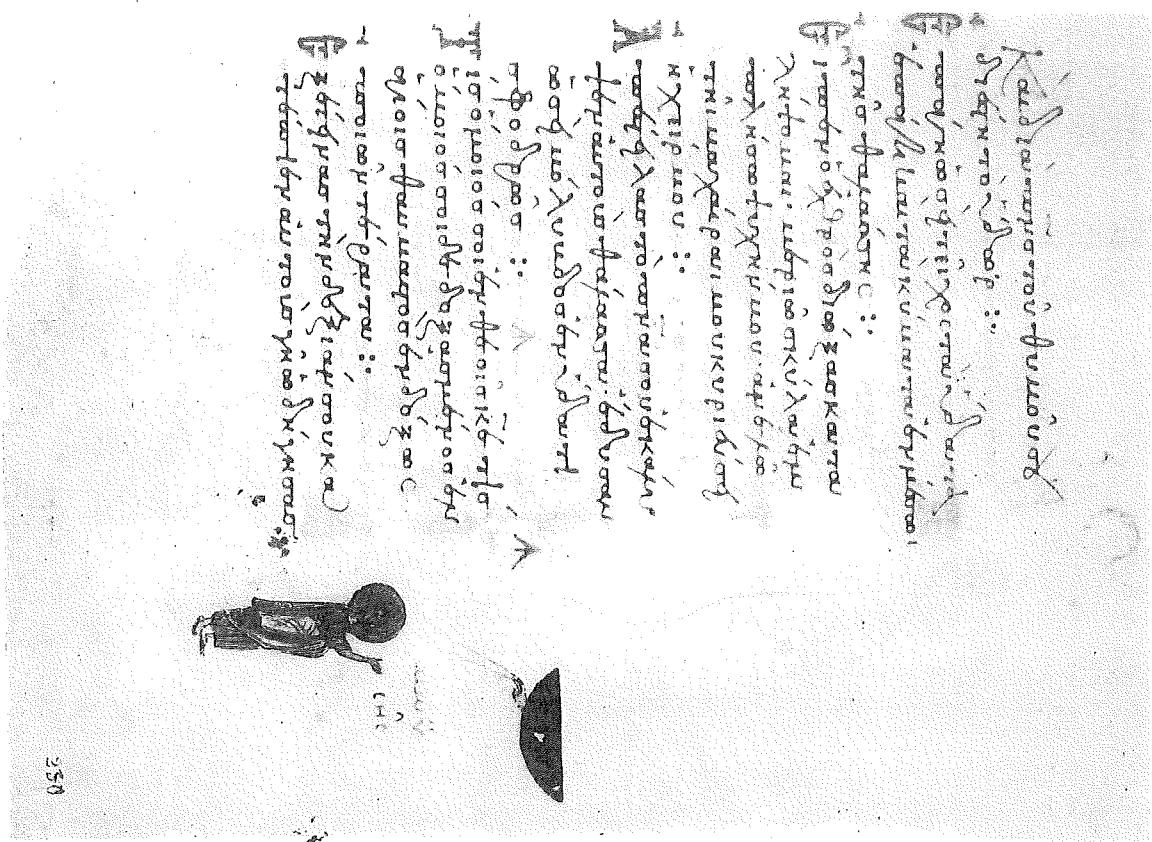


Figure 3. Moses at Prayer, Barberini Psalter, fol. 250.

The second Ode of Moses receives extensive illustration along the lines of that of the Psalms which it resembles. In London, a second miniature has been added to the Ode of Habakkuk, in which the prophet addresses prayer to an icon of Christ while extending a hand towards an angel spearing fallen figures designated as lawless in the accompanying legend. This miniature comments verse 13: "You brought death on the heads of the lawless."

For the Ode of Isaiah the frontal "author portrait" has been modified in both eleventh-century Psalters; Isaiah is now represented at prayer. In Barberini, the ungodly man still resembles that in Chludov, but in London he is named Julian the Apostle. Further, he has been integrated into the miniature of Isaiah as the object of his prayer, a characteristic procedure of the painter of London. In this same Psalter a second miniature has been added to the Ode. Isaiah prays to a clipeate icon of Christ, while before him stands a youth holding a torch, a personification of Dawn. In both eleventh-century Psalters, a miniature of Jonah at prayer has been introduced, while in Barberini Jonah is also represented being spewed by the whale and in London a full Jonah cycle has been added. The increased importance attached to the Psalter as a book of prayer and edification distinguishes the eleventh-century illuminated examples from the ninth-century ones.<sup>16</sup> Their overall programme has been restructured in accordance with this idea. However it should also be asked whether, in modifying the illustrations to the Odes, the eleventh-century artists were not influenced by a model of the aristocratic family. The Bristol Psalter provides evidence that an artist might seek inspiration in Psalters belonging to both families.<sup>17</sup> While many of its miniatures resemble those in the Pantocrator Psalter, others, not found in the marginal Psalters, occur in the aristocratic Psalters. Thus the painter of the Bristol Psalter introduces personifications into his miniatures: Basileia into the coronation of David (Psalm 20,4); Metanoia into the penitence of David (Psalm 50); Dynamis and Alazoneia (arrogance) into the duel between David and Goliath (Psalm 143); Night and Day into the scene of the blessed man meditating the Law (Psalm 1,1-2) and again into the illustration of the Ode of Isaiah.

One modification in the programme of the eleventh-century marginal Psalters which may be noted in passing, is the introduction of a frontispiece to Psalm 77, the first of the Psalms of Asaph. In the Chludov and Pantocrator Psalters, only the title is indicated, with, in the Pantocrator Psalter, a miniature in the margin of Asaph blowing a horn. In the Bristol Psalter, Psalm 77 is preceded by a framed frontispiece of Christ teaching. In Barberini and London, the Psalms of Asaph are preceded by an elaborate headpiece and illustrated by a miniature. In Barberini, Christ giving the Law is acclaimed by two groups of figures with outstretched hands. In London, Asaph is seated, like Christ in Bristol; he holds an open book upon which the word νόος [Law] is inscribed, while Christ Emmanuel is represented above in a clipeate image. Although the iconography does not resemble that of frontispieces to the Psalms of Asaph in Psalters of the aristocratic family, in which the theme of Moses receiving or giving the

Figure 4. Jonah cycle, Vatican græc. 1613, p. 59.



<sup>16</sup> Ch. WALTER, 'Latter-day' Saints in the Model for the London and Barberini Psalters, *Rev. des ét. byz.* 46 (1988) 213-215.

<sup>17</sup> Suzy DUFRENNE, *L'illustration des psalters grecs du Moyen Age*, I, Paris 1966, 49-51.

Law is preferred, it could nevertheless have been an aristocratic Psalter which inspired the painters of the eleventh-century manuscripts to give greater prominence to this section of the Psalter.

In the London Psalter,<sup>18</sup> Moses receiving the Law illustrates the second Ode of Moses as sometimes in the aristocratic Psalters. For the first Ode of Moses, the addition in London and Barberini of the Egyptian chariots falling into the Red Sea to the Israelites crossing on dry land might have been inspired by the prominence given to the drowning of Pharaoh in the aristocratic Psalters. Thus there is some reason to suppose that the illustrators of the two eleventh-century marginal Psalters had some familiarity with the aristocratic family.

In the miniatures illustrating Odes in the three earliest aristocratic Psalters, considerable prominence is given to the theme of prayer. In the Dumbarton Oaks Psalter, sometimes the authors of the Ode are represented at prayer in the scene which illustrates it. This is the case for Isaiah, the Three Youths, Hezekiah and Manasseh. However in others the praying figure is doubled with the scene within the same frame. This is the case for Hannah, Habakkuk and Jonah. The same device was used in the miniatures of Hannah and Habakkuk in Paris, suppl. graec. 610, where they are iconographically very close to the Dumbarton Oaks Psalter. It had already been used in Paris graec. 139 for Jonah and Hezekiah, while, in this Psalter, Hannah is represented only at prayer without a scene.

To raise the question whether the practice of doubling a scene with a praying figure had occurred in earlier lost aristocratic Psalters is no doubt to risk providing an insoluble problem with an unverifiable answer. However, it is more than plausible to suppose with Weitzmann that the four scenes grouped together in the ninth-century Homilies of Gregory of Nazianzus, Paris graec. 510, fol. 435<sup>b</sup>, figuring Habakkuk bringing food to Daniel in the lions' den, the Three Youths in the furnace, Hezekiah on his sickbed and Manasses beside a brazen bull, were copied from illustrations to Odes in an aristocratic Psalter, even if they have not survived together in any extant example.<sup>19</sup>

These four scenes are not accompanied by a portrait of the author of the Ode at prayer. However, in another ninth-century manuscript, the Sacra Parallela, Paris graec. 923, fol. 252<sup>a</sup>, Hezekiah is represented on his sickbed, doubled with a portrait of him placed lower in the margin, in which he is represented at prayer. There has been some confusion, since the title of the passage illustrated refers it to the Book of Kings, although, in fact, the parallel passage, the one used for the Ode, taken from Isaiah, has been written out.<sup>20</sup> It is therefore possible that both text and miniatures were copied from an illuminated Psalter rather than from a Book of Isaiah.

The next step would be to combine the scene and praying figure in the same framed miniature. This practice occurs in the Menologium of Basil II. This manuscript, Vatican graec. 1613, was no doubt painted later than the Paris Psalter.<sup>20</sup> However, it bears witness to the custom in tenth-

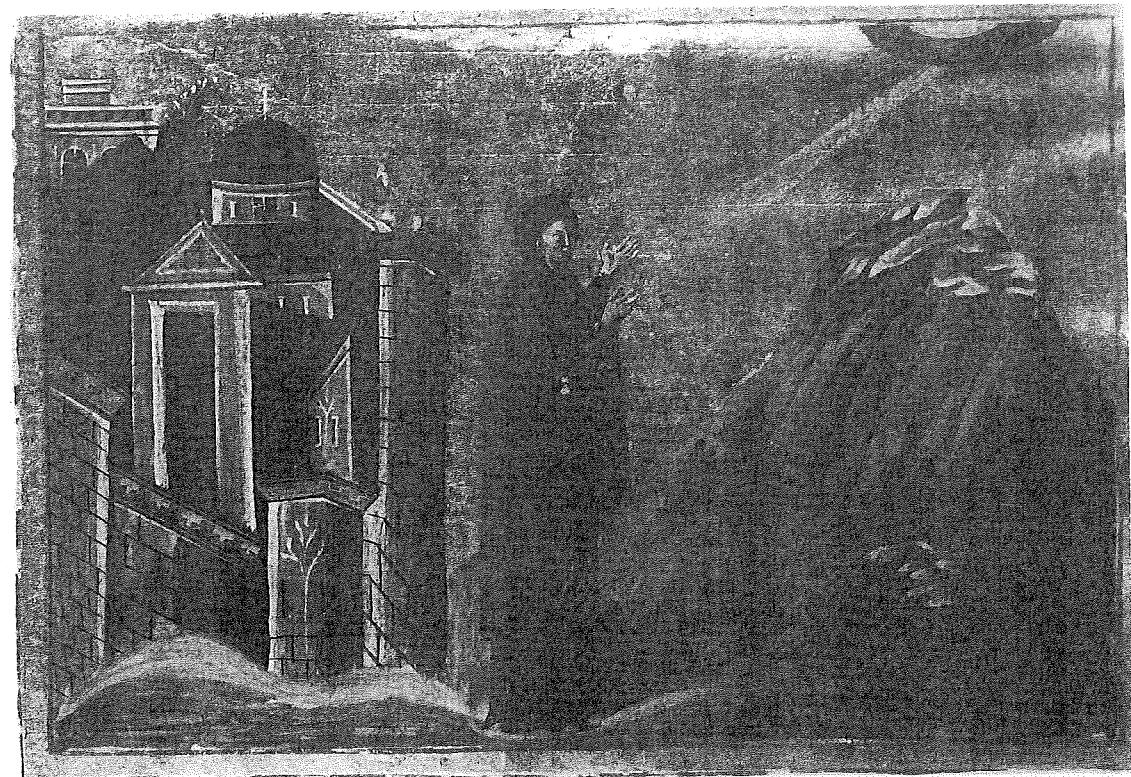


Figure 5. Matrona at Prayer, Vatican graec. 1613, p. 169.

<sup>18</sup> K. WEITZMANN, *Illustrations in Roll and Codex*, Princeton 1947, 149.

<sup>19</sup> K. WEITZMANN, *The Miniatures of the Sacra Parallela, Parisinus graecus* 923, Princeton 1979, 148–150, fig. 357.

<sup>20</sup> Il Menologio di Basilio II, edited by C. STORNALO and P. FRANCHI de' CARAFFI, Vatican/Milan 1907; Sirapiro DER NERSESIAN, Мокчанский менологий, инк. Византия. Южные славяне и Древняя Русь. Западная Европа. Сборник старей в честь В. Н. Лазарева, Moscow 1973, 94–111.

century Constantinople of placing a single framed miniature at the head of a text; within this frame, one or more subjects could be represented. Some subjects, Jonah and Habakkuk for example, are common to the Vatican Menologium and to the aristocratic Psalters. However, their iconography does not correspond closely. Jonah (p. 59) is represented twice in the miniature, once asleep in his arbour and once being spewed by the whale [figure 4]. Habakkuk (p. 219) is represented frontally against an architectural background. The common point of contact would be rather the formulae used than the person represented. Thus Matrona at prayer (p. 169) before a domed church is represented according to the same formula as Hannah at prayer before the temple in Paris graec. 139 [figure 5]. Among the examples of a saint at prayer represented beside a scene in the Vatican Menologium may be mentioned Philip the Deacon (p. 107), Cornelius (p. 125) and Theodore Studite (p. 175) [figure 6].

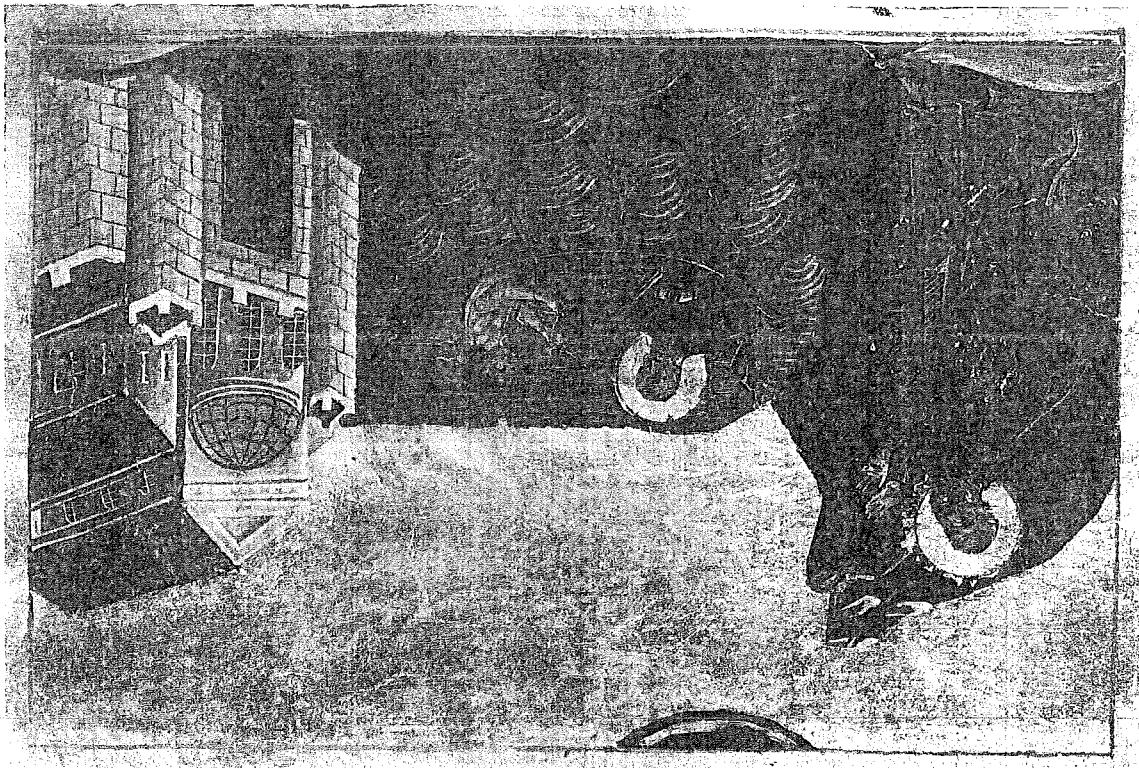
This examination of prayer scenes in illustration to Odes in the earliest aristocratic Psalters and their antecedents may help to understand the evolution of Ode illustration in the marginal Psalters from the ninth to the eleventh century. The painters of London and Barberini took over the practice of doubling a scene with a figure at prayer from the aristocratic Psalters, but did not follow the practice of combining both in a single miniature.

It is also possible that, in the Dumbarton Oaks Psalter, the opposite occurred. That is to say that its artist was influenced by a Psalter of the marginal type. Besides the framed frontispieces to the Odes, the Dumbarton Oaks Psalter carries eleven historiated initial letters. Such letters are somewhat rare in Psalter illustration. Within the aristocratic family, almost the only other Psalter with historiated initial letters is the thirteenth-century Spencer cod. graec. 1 in the New York Public Library. Here three authors of Odes — Hannah, Habakkuk and Isaiah — are represented holding the infant Christ in their hands. This suggests that the artist wished to underline the prophetic character of these Odes. Closer to the historiated initials in the Dumbarton Oaks Psalter are those in Sinai graec. 61, dated about 1274, which Cutler related to the aristocratic without actually including this Psalter among its members. Here Moses, Habakkuk and Isaiah are represented in the initial letter of their Ode, their arms extended in prayer while light falls toward them from a segment. Closer still, and since Lazarev dates it about 1080, almost contemporary with the Dumbarton Oaks Psalter, is Leningrad graec. 214.<sup>21</sup> In this Psalter, apart from the frontispiece to the Ode of Jonah, fol. 313, all the figurative illuminations are initial letters. In two cases — Hannah and Isaiah, fol. 306<sup>v</sup> and fol. 311<sup>v</sup> — Christ is represented within the letter, blessing the author of the Ode.

The formula used in the Dumbarton Oaks Psalter is to place the author in the initial letter with his arms outstretched in prayer, facing a bust portrait of Christ in the right hand margin. It may be noted that, in the case of Hannah, the formula is slightly different, since Christ is enthroned. Christ is not represented as the person to whom prayer is addressed in Byzantine miniatures earlier than those represented in the eleventh-century marginal Psalters. The iconographical formula may have been

<sup>21</sup> V. N. LAZAREV, *Древгреческая лицевая пластика XI в.*, Виз. врем. 3 (1950) 211—217. Excellent reproductions in V. N. LAZAREV, *История византийской живописи*, new edition, Moscow 1986, fig. 221—229.

Figure 6. Theodore Studite. Wallcan graec. 1613, p. 175.



invented specifically to emphasize the fact that these Psalters were conceived to be primarily books of prayer and edification. It was taken up by the illuminator of the Dumbarton Oaks Psalter, but, here again, it is necessary to distinguish between the content and disposition of the miniatures. Historiated initials were not used in this way in the eleventh-century marginal Psalters.

### 3. The Sources for the Subjects of Ode Illustration

Cutler's publication of the aristocratic Psalters makes it clear that, so far as the illustration of the Odes is concerned, the family connections are less close than in the marginal Psalters. For the latter, it is possible to trace their iconographical development fairly straightforwardly from the ninth-century examples down to the fourteenth-century Klev Psalter. However, the connection between the three earliest aristocratic Psalters, which have particularly concerned us in this article, and the later ones are much less easy to trace. Indeed it may be asked whether it is correct to treat the aristocratic Psalters as a single recension, in spite of the fact that they aspire to a common ideal.

The three earliest aristocratic Psalters, together with the later copies of the Paris *graeac.* 139, might be better considered as a "subrecension". Another "subrecension" would be constituted by the Psalters of the so-called Family 2400. This group is marked by its distinct preference for author portraits and by the banality of its rare scenes.

Yet the illuminators of Odes in general did not exercise much initiative in their choice of a subject. Only the painter of Vatican *graeac.* 1927, who grouped in one miniature subjects suggested by different verses of the Ode, displayed outstanding originality.<sup>22</sup> The general lack of originality of choice is not, however, surprising. The themes of many of the Odes belong to the mainstream of Christian spirituality. They have their counterpart in early Christian art, the subjects appearing in various media: the Israelites crossing the Red Sea, the drowning of the Egyptians, Moses receiving the Law, the Three Youths in the Furnace and the Jonah cycle. Only variations in the detail of the iconography can be used for establishing connections. The New Testament scenes — the Annunciation, Visitation, Presentation in the Temple and Zacharias — present similar difficulties, although for these it should be possible in some cases to suggest connections with Gospel Books or Lectionaries painted by the same group of artists. This fascinating but arduous task cannot be tackled here. I prefer to limit myself to a consideration of some of the more original subjects used to Ode illustration.

Possibly the finest illustrates Isaiah's Ode. This begins: "Ἐκ νυκτὸς δοῦλοι τε ῥεῖσθαι πρὸς ὄθεός, ὁ Θεός, words which may be translated as: Out of night my spirit rises at dawn towards you, Oh God. The connotation of rising for morning prayer was well-established in Christian tradition, as is apparent in a poem by Andrew of Crete (ca 660—740), paraphrasing this first verse of the Ode.<sup>23</sup> It therefore seems likely that the iconographical type of Isaiah at prayer between personifications of Night and Dawn was elaborated specifically to illustrate the Ode. It had a certain success, being used in the Bristol Psalter as well as the three earliest

<sup>22</sup> E. T. De WALD, *The Illustrations in the Manuscripts of the Septuagint III: Psalms and Odes I, vaticanicus graeacus 1927*, Princeton 1941; Suzy DUFRENNE, *Les illustrations du Psautier d'Utrecht*, Paris 1978, 38, etc.

<sup>23</sup> Andrew of Crete, *Magnus canon*, PG 97, 1353.

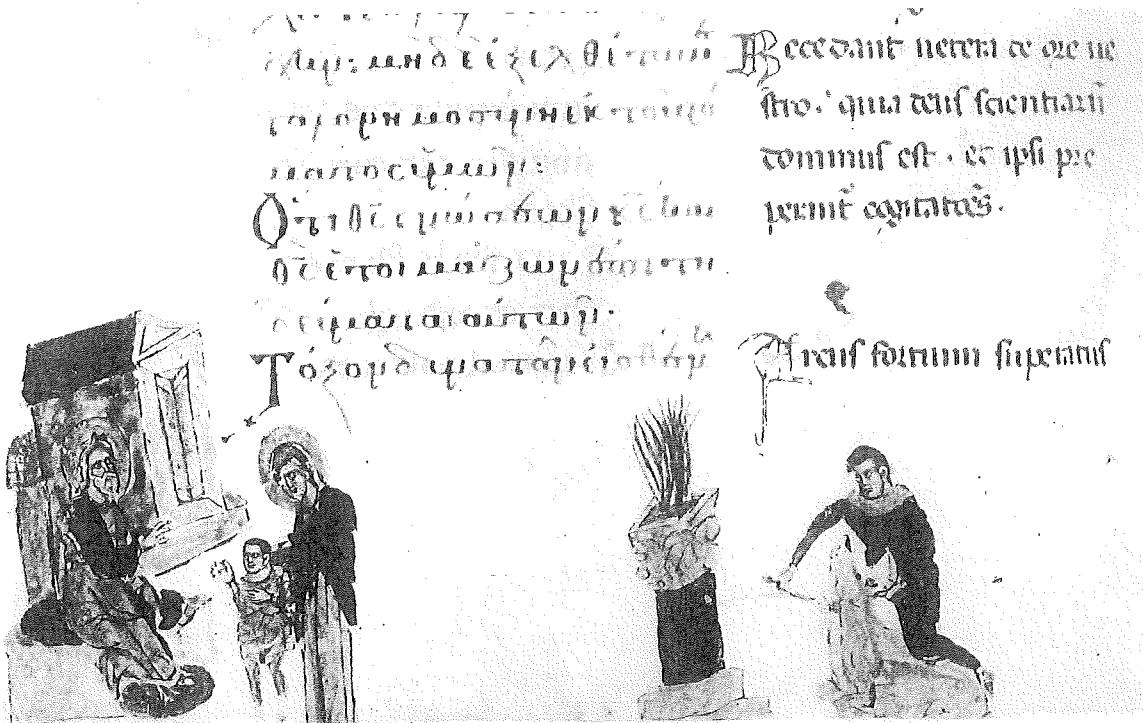


Figure 7. Hannah Presents Samuel to Eli; Sacrifice of a Calf, Hamilton Psalter, fol. 250<sup>v</sup>.

aristocratic Psalters. Outside Ode illustration, the only example known to me is that in a Book of Isaiah with Catenae, Vatican grae. 755, fol. 107, a manuscript dated by R. Devreesse to the eleventh century [figure 8].<sup>24</sup> The early marginal Psalters do not have a scene for the Ode of Isaiah. In the London Psalter, fol. 199<sup>v</sup>, the theme is adapted by omitting the personification of Night. This is followed in the Kiev Psalter, fol. 218<sup>v</sup>, where the personification of Morning leads Isaiah towards a temple.<sup>25</sup> The only comparable miniature in the later aristocratic Psalters is in Other later aristocratic Psalters, when they include a scene for the Ode of Isaiah, have Isaiah and the seraph, as in Athens National Library 7, fol. 243<sup>v</sup>, or Vatopedi 760, fol. 280<sup>v</sup>, where the Vision of Isaiah is included. The artist's intention must have been to underline the prophetic nature of the Ode, but the scene would have been borrowed from Isaiah 6,7, which is, in fact, inscribed on the Vatopedi miniature.

The scene of Habakkuk being carried by an angel, which has survived in the Dumbarton Oaks Psalter, fol. 76, and Paris suppl. grae. 610, fol. 252<sup>v</sup>, has been excerpted from the early Christian model, in which Daniel in the lions' den is also normally the dominant element. That the full scene may have originally been used to illustrate the Ode is made likely because it appears in the miniature in Paris grae. 510, fol. 43<sup>v</sup>, to which allusion has already been made. It then disappears from Psalter illustration, except for the Serbian Psalter, fol. 201, where the full scene is used to illustrate the Ode of the Three Youths.<sup>26</sup> The marginal Psalters introduce a scene of Habakkuk prophesying the coming of Christ. The later aristocratic Psalters invariably use an author portrait. However, the curious twisted position often attributed to Habakkuk requires some explanation. I would suggest that it has been borrowed from the representations of Habakkuk's vision which illustrate the Homily of Gregory of Nazianzus for Easter Sunday. Here Habakkuk is turned towards Gregory of Nazianzus back at the vision.<sup>27</sup>

When Hannah is not represented at prayer, she is accompanied by the infant Samuel, both in the aristocratic and in the marginal Psalters. However, two variants merit a special mention. One is in the aristocratic Psalter, Athens National Library 7, fol. 237<sup>v</sup>. Here the artist has represented Hannah facing the infant Samuel. Both hold up their hands towards the hand of God blessing them from a segment. The scene is not strictly relevant to the Ode. However, in the Book of Kings, Vatican grae. 333, fol. 5, there is a curiously similar scene, in which Hannah and another figure face each other with their hands raised.<sup>28</sup> The Ode of Hannah is

<sup>24</sup> R. DEVREESSE, *Codices vaticani graei II*, Vatican 1950, 271—272.

<sup>25</sup> G. VZDORNOV, *Ikonostasiane o Krasovom ucaitriu*, Moscow 1973, 143.

<sup>26</sup> J. STRZYGOWSKI, *Die Miniaturen des serbischen Psalters*, Vienna 1906, 72—73, fig. 117; SUZY DUFRENNE and R. STICHEL, *Der serbische Psalter, Inhalt und Ikonographie der Bilder*, Wiesbaden 1978, 255—256.

<sup>27</sup> Ch. WALTER, *The Iconography of Habakkuk*, Rev. des ét. byz. 46 (1989) 251—260; see also my communication H. εκανονεπίκη του προφήτη Αβραάμιου στο αγιοτοποτικό Φαιρέτσι της Επικράτειας Βιβλιοθήκης των Αστρών, κωδ. 15, Ορθόδοξο Βυζαντινό και Μεσοβυζαντινό Αρχαιολογικό Μουσείο Τείχης, Athens 1988, 97—98.

<sup>28</sup> J. LASSUS, *L'illustration byzantine du Livre des Rois*, Paris 1973, 31—32.



Figure 8. Isaiah between Night and Dawn, Vatican grae. 755, fol. 107.  
Credit lines:  
Figure 7: Centre d'étude Gabriel Millet

not illustrated in this manuscript. Lassus' has related the miniature to I Samuel 1,14 (in the Septuagint not the Hebrew version), in which it is told how Eli's servant, believing Hannah to be drunk, wished to turn her away. It seems that the painter of the Athens manuscript, misunderstanding this or a similar miniature, used it as a model for Hannah and Samuel at prayer.

In the Hamilton Psalter, fol. 250<sup>v</sup>, two scenes illustrate Hannah's Ode. In the first Hannah is presenting the child Samuel to Eli; in the second a calf is being sacrificed (figure 7). Neither is strictly relevant to the Ode. However, again both incidents are recounted, I Samuel 1:24–26 (Septuagint version). Again they are also illustrated in the Vatican Book of Kings.

COLLECTION

The Odes were added to the Psalter as an appendix and used in Byzantine worship many centuries before the earliest surviving illuminated Psalter was produced. However, the Odes were not strictly assimilated to the Psalms. The latter had been taken over en bloc from Israelite worship. By contrast, each Ode was an individual composition. Consequently the author, the author's status and the occasion of the composition of the Ode were in each case a matter of concern both for the commentator and for the artist.

valued particularly as narratives of signal events in the history of salvation. These are the ones which most frequently receive a subject picture. Their subjects, with similar iconography, recur not only in illuminated manuscripts of the Pentateuch or the Gospels but also in other genres of early Christian and Byzantine art. Consequently the immediate model used by artists is difficult to establish.

As for the other *Odes*, it seems that the commentators and artists treat-

ed most of them as individual prayers. Thus, in their titles, they are usually called prayers, while the author, from the tenth century, was regularly represented at prayer. The practice of representing the author at prayer was general in the earliest aristocratic Psalters, from which it may have been taken over in the eleventh-century marginal psalters. On the other hand, the addition in the Dumbarton Oaks Psalter of historiated initials of authors of Odes addressing their prayer to Christ is likely to have been inspired by the example of the London and Barberini Psalters.

those related to Paris gr. 439 and those which are members of the Family 2400. Ten aristocratic Psalters dating from the twelfth to fourteenth centuries do not enter into either of these "subrecensions". They also have individual features which distinguish them from each other as well as from the rest. The task of establishing their relationship to manuscripts of other genres painted by the same group of artists will be greatly facilitated by Cutler's publication.

INDEX OF MANUSCRIPTS

- Athens, National Library  
15 (Psalter); XII:151

Athos, Iviron  
5 (Gospels); VII:15 n39

Athos, Lavra  
51D [427] (Metaphrast); VIII:174

Athos, Pantocrator  
61 (Psalter); VIII:168; IX, X, *passim*; XII:47

Athos, Vatopedi  
602 (Octateuch); III:273

Baltimore, Walters Art Gallery  
W533 (*Paxapostolos*); III:246–265

Berlin, Staatliche Museen Kupferstichkabinett  
A8, A9 (Hamilton Psalter); III:257; XII:52

Cambridge, University Library  
Mn 5.31 (Alexander Lacus); VIIb 162–163

Florence, Biblioteca Laurenziana  
Plut. vi. 23 (Gospels); VII:5

Rabbula Gospels; IV:187

Leningrad (Sankt Peterburg), Academy of  
Sciences  
Liturgical Roll; IV:194

Salykovy-Sedrin State Public Library  
grae. 214 (Psalter); XII:44, 49

1252 F. vi (Kiev Psalter); XII:51

London, British Library  
Add. 19352 (London or Theodore Psalter);  
IV:185, 191, 194, 199; VIIb 115;

VIII:174–175; XI, *passim*; XII:48, 49

Add. 40735 (Bristol Psalter); IV:191; IX,  
*passim*; XII:47, 50

Madrid, Biblioteca nacional  
Vit. 153 (Codex Toledoanus); VIIa 162–163;  
VIIb 111

Vit. 26–27 (Scytlites); IV:282; VI:5–7;

VIII:110, 116; VIII:174

Moscow, State Historical Museum  
grae. 9 (Metaphrast); XI:224

grae. 175 (Metaphrast); III:265, 269, 272

grae. 376 (Metaphrast); XII:216

129 D (Chidvor Psalter); III:256–260;

IV:191; VII:115; VIII:168; IX, X, XI,  
*passim*; XII:45, 46

New York, Public Library  
Spencer grae. 1 (Psalter); XII:49

Paris, Bibliothèque nationale  
Coislin, 79 (John Chrysostom); VI:4  
grae. 139 (Paris Psalter); XII:44, 48, 50  
grae. 510 ((Gregory of Nazianus));  
X:192–192; VIIa 174–175; VIII:179;

X:215–216; 220; XII:48

grae. 580 + 1499 (Metaphrast); XI:224  
grae. 923 (*Sacra parallela*); VIIb 128; XII:48  
grae. 1128 (Barlaam & Joasaph);  
suppl. grae. 610 (Psalter); XII:44, 46, 48, 51

Princeton, University Library  
Garrett 16 (John Climacus); IV:189

Rossano, Curia Arcivescovile  
Gospels; I:275; IX:282

Sinai, Monastery of St Catherine  
61 (Psalter); XII:49

339 (Gregory of Nazianus); I:287  
364 (John Chrysostom); IV:195–196  
418 (John Climacus); IV:190  
423 (John Climacus); IV:189

Smyna, Evangelical School (*olim*)  
Physiologus; IX:227

Strasbourg, Grand séminaire  
Codex Gutta-Sintram; VIIb 122

Utrecht, Rijksuniversiteit  
32 (Utrecht Psalter); IV:191; VIIb 115,  
118–119

Vatican, Biblioteca Apostolica  
Barb. grae. 372 (Barberini Psalter); III:257;  
IV:191, 196–197, 199; VIII:174; IX, XI,  
*passim*  
Barb. lat. 2738 (Panvinius); VIIa *passim*

Barb. lat. 4423 (Sketchbook); VIIa 169

grae. 333 (Book of Kings); VI:5; XII:51–52

grae. 394 (John Climacus); IV:189

grae. 463 (Gregory of Nazianus); XI:224

grae. 666 (Zigabenus); III:256, 265

grae. 746 (Octateuch); III:273; IV:281–282

grae. 752 (Psalter); VI:5

grae. 755 (Isaiah); XII:51

grae. 1156 (Lectionary); III:256

Vatican, Biblioteca Apostolica – *cont.*  
grae. 1613 (Menologium of Basil II): I.283;  
III.263; 264, 265, 269, 270–271, 272;  
VIII.170, 174, 179, 180; X.215; XI.216,  
222–223; XII.148–49  
grae. 1679 (Metaphrast). III.264  
grae. 1851 (Epithanaium); VI.5  
grae. 1927 (Psalter); IX.284; XII.30  
*lat.* 5729 (Farta Bible); VII.b.131  
*slav.* 2 (Manasses); IV.199

INDEX<sup>s</sup>

Venice, Biblioteca Marciana  
grae. 17 (Psalter of Basil II); IV.193–195;  
VII.b.115  
Vienna, Nationalbibliothek  
*hist. grae.* 6 (Metaphrast); III.265  
Mekhitarist Fathers  
242; VI.15 n39  
Washington, Dumbarton Oaks  
3 (Psalter); XII.44, 49, 51  
Wesel, 2 (Manasses); IV.199

Abraham:  
and Lazarus: IX.285–286  
and Old Testament Lust: XI.215  
*Adventus*: VII.b.126–127  
Agobardus of Lyon: VII.a.157  
Alexander III, pope: VII.b.125  
Andrew of Crete: III.262; XII.46, 50  
Angels: IV.190–200  
Arbanassi, Bulgaria: VIII.180–181  
Ares: IX.272, 287  
Arilje, Serbia: II.17; III.274; VII.178  
Arles, Saint-Trophime: VII.b.15  
Arnulf of Liège: VII.b.110–111, 119  
Asinou, Cyprus: III.260, 265  
Athens, Oimorphi Ekklesia: III.266  
Autun, cathedral: VII.b.116  
basileia: IV.189, 198, 200; VI.6, 10  
Besançon, diptych: IV.187  
Bezalel: X.214, 220  
bozzé: I.283  
Brescia, diptych: VI.3  
Cappadocia:  
Cemil, S. Basil: III.266  
Kızıl Çukur (Çavuşin): VI.15 n37  
Caracalla: V.271  
Cedrenus, George: IV.188  
Charlemagne: VII.a.159, 175–176; VII.b.133–134  
Chones, Miracle of: XI.220  
Christ:  
Adoration of Magi: IX.286  
Baptism: IX.279, 283  
Bread of life: IX.281–282, 285  
Cana Wedding: VI.5  
Communion of Apostles: IX.278  
Cross: IX.277, 280, 283, 286  
Crucifixion: III.256–260; X.216–217  
Emmanuel: VIII.181  
Flight to Egypt: VII.b.132  
Fountain of Life: IX.281  
Gedeon's Fleece (typological): IX.282–283  
Holy Face: VIII.170; X.216  
*image clipeata*: VII.168, 170, 182; X.206,  
208, 212, 214–217, 221  
Mission of the Apostles: VII.a.174  
*Pronobus*: V.277, 278  
Resurrection of Lazarus: IX.275, 283  
Rock (typological): IX.270

Second Passion: VIII.118; X.216–217, 218,  
220  
*Traditio legis*: VII.a.174  
Unicorn (typological): IX.276  
Washing disciples' Feet: IX.279

Codinus (pseudo-); IV.189; VII.b.127  
Colchester, Stele of Longinus: VII.b.112–114  
Commodus: V.273–274  
*Concordia*: V.273–275, 277  
Constantine I: I.1275; IV.187, 188; VII.a.156,  
171–172  
Donation of: VII.a.169–170; VII.b.124–128  
see also *sub* Saint  
Constantine VII:  
*De administrando imperio*: IV.191  
*De cerimonib[us]*: VI.17 n70; VII.b.114  
Constantinople: XI.223–224, 225  
Column of Theodosius: VII.b.114, 116,  
119–120  
Kainourion: I.287  
Kariye Cami: I.287; III.261, 267  
New Church: I.287  
Porphyrius bases: IV.187  
St Sophia: II.13–14; III.256, 265; VII.b.120;  
VIII.170  
Councils, picture of: VIII.176–182  
Daniel, prophet: IX.276; XI.216  
Daphni: I.266  
Davet Gareza, Georgia, Stele of St Eustace:  
X.210  
David:  
and Michael: V.280; VI.4–5  
praying: XI.213–214  
prophet: X.214  
unction: XI.225, 228  
Dečani, Kosovo: III.269, 272; VIII.179  
Diadem: IV.185–190  
Dionysius the Areopagite: I.273  
see also *sub* Saint  
Dionysius of Pourna: I.282; III.264–265, 273  
Dobrun, Bosnia: III.179

Elias of Jerusalem: XII.46  
Epiphanius of Cyprus: XI.224  
Eulalius: I.283

Faras, Nubia: II.14

Gelasius, pope: II.9; VII.a.170

- Gelati, Georgia: VIII 178  
 George of Cyprus: X 218  
 Germanus I, patriarch: IX 276  
 Gračanica, Kosovo: IV 183–200  
 Gregory of Nazianzus: VII 8; VIIa 155  
 Grinaviti: VIIa 155, 160, 174  
 Habakkuk, prophet: XII 45, 47, 48, 49, 51  
 Hannah, mother of Samuel: XII 45, 48, 49,  
     51–52  
 Herzekiah, Old Testament king: IV 185, 191  
*Historia ecclesiastica*: IX 281, 282  
 Hosios Loukas: III 204  
 Hymen: VI 4  
 Iconoclasm: IX 280; X 211, 212, 215, 216  
 Innocent III, pope: VIIb 121  
 Isaiah, prophet: XII 45, 47, 50–51  
 Igum: V 276, 277  
 Joachim & Anna: VII 5  
 John Alexander II, Bulgarian Tsar: IV 185, 199  
 John Chrysostom: III 271; VII 8; IX 279  
     see also sub Saint  
 John Damascene: III 263; VIII 168, 182;  
     IX 282; X 211, 218, 219, 221  
 John of Euuboia: IX 275  
 John Grammaticus, patriarch: VIII 168;  
     X 213–215, 218, 219  
 John of Jerusalem: VIII 168; X 216, 217, 218  
 John of Salisbury: VIIb 111  
 John of Scyrophorus: III 255, 262  
 Jonah, prophet: XII 45, 47, 48, 50  
 Joseph & Anna: V 278  
 Justinian II, coins of: X 215, 216  
 Kastoria:  
     St Athanasius *tou Mouskou*: III 266  
     St Nicolas *tou Kastriou*: III 266  
     kephalophoros: III 268–274  
 Kingdom of Christians, personification: XI 224  
 Krina, Chios: III 274  
 Kurbinovo, Macedonia: III 261, 265  
 Lagoudera, Cyprus: III 261, 268  
 Last Judgment: I 266; IV 185  
 Lazarus, icon-painter: I 283  
 Leo III, pope: II 13–14; VII 157–168, 175–176  
 Lepcis Magna, Tripolitana: V 271–283;  
     VIIb 127  
 Lesnovo, Macedonia: III 266; IV 199  
 Ljuboten, Macedonia: VII 15 n39  
 London, British Museum:  
     gilded glass: VII 2  
     Projecta casket: VII 2  
 Lotharius III, emperor: VIIa 166–169; VIIb 123  
 Madrid, Plaque of Theodosius: VIIa 175;  
     VIIb 120
- Markov Manastir, Macedonia: III 266; IV 190  
 Matej, Macedonia: VIII 180  
 Maurice, emperor: V 277, 278; VIIa 155  
 Meteora Monastery of the Transfiguration:  
     IV 190  
 Michael VIII, emperor, & Maria: VII 4  
 Michael the Synkellos: III 259, 263, 270  
 Milutin, king, & Simona: IV *pasim*; VII 1, 12  
 Mistra, Metropolis: IV 190; VIII 179, 180  
 Mordeai: VIIb 131  
 Moscow, Krenulin, reliquary: VII 3  
 Moses: X 214–215; XI 225; XII 45, 46, 47–48  
 Hosios Loukas: III 204  
 Hymen: VI 4  
 Iconoclasm: IX 280; X 211, 212, 215, 216  
 Innocent III, pope: VIIb 121  
 Isaiah, prophet: XII 45, 47, 50–51  
 Igum: V 276, 277  
 Joachim & Anna: VII 5  
 John Alexander II, Bulgarian Tsar: IV 185, 199  
 John Chrysostom: III 271; VII 8; IX 279  
     see also sub Saint  
 John Damascene: III 263; VIII 168, 182;  
     IX 282; X 211, 218, 219, 221  
 John of Euuboia: IX 275  
 John Grammaticus, patriarch: VIII 168;  
     X 213–215, 218, 219  
 John of Jerusalem: VIII 168; X 216, 217, 218  
 John of Salisbury: VIIb 111  
 John of Scyrophorus: III 255, 262  
 Jonah, prophet: XII 45, 47, 48, 50  
 Joseph & Anna: V 278  
 Justinian II, coins of: X 215, 216  
 Kastoria:  
     St Athanasius *tou Mouskou*: III 266  
     St Nicolas *tou Kastriou*: III 266  
     kephalophoros: III 268–274  
 Kingdom of Christians, personification: XI 224  
 Krina, Chios: III 274  
 Kurbinovo, Macedonia: III 261, 265  
 Lagoudera, Cyprus: III 261, 268  
 Last Judgment: I 266; IV 185  
 Lazarus, icon-painter: I 283  
 Leo III, pope: II 13–14; VII 157–168, 175–176  
 Lepcis Magna, Tripolitana: V 271–283;  
     VIIb 127  
 Lesnovo, Macedonia: III 266; IV 199  
 Ljuboten, Macedonia: VII 15 n39  
 London, British Museum:  
     gilded glass: VII 2  
     Projecta casket: VII 2  
 Lotharius III, emperor: VIIa 166–169; VIIb 123  
 Madrid, Plaque of Theodosius: VIIa 175;  
     VIIb 120

- Rome—cont.  
     St John Lateran, Audience Hall of pope  
         Calixtus II: VIIa 162–166;  
         Theodore Studite: VIII 170, 176; XI 216.  
     St John Paul II: VIIa 123; Chapel of St. Nicolas:  
         VIIb 109–123; *Trichinai*: II 13;  
         VIIa 157–160, 170–176  
     St Maria Maggiore: V 278  
         St Paul: II 12  
         St Peter: II 12; VIIb 135  
         St Silvester: VIIb 124–125  
         St Zeno: X 215  
     St Sophia: VII 125  
         Ottó II, king, & Theophanes: VII 3  
         Saints:  
             Ambrose: II 8–9  
             Apollinaris: II 11–12  
             Aurelius: III 272; XI 226–227  
             Catherine of Alexandria: XI 227  
             Constantine, Translation of relics: VIIb 109  
             Demetrius: IV 190  
             Dionysius the Areopagite: III *pasim*; IX 275  
             Ephemita: XI 227  
             Eusebius: X 209–210, 211, 212, 216; XI 216  
             Forts Murts: XI 221, 223  
             George: III 214; X 208, 212; XI 215  
             Gregory of Agripennum: XII 218, 222, 225,  
             227  
             Gregory the Illuminator: XI 225  
             Hierotheus of Athens: III 260–268  
             Holy Five: XI 226  
             Ignatius of Antioch: XI 220–222  
             James Adelphitoes of Jerusalem:  
                 III 260–268  
             James the Persian: XI 219, 228  
             Jeanne: VII 176  
             John the Baptist: III 271; IX 283  
             John Chrysostom: X 208–209, 212; XI 216  
             Macarius: XII 217, 218, 228  
             Mary the Egyptian: XI 225  
             Nicephorus: VIII 168, 170; X 206, 212–214,  
             218–221; XI 216–217, 225  
             Nicetas: VIII 170  
             Onuphrius: XI 226  
             Panteleimon: X 210, 211, 212; XI 216  
             Paul: X 216  
             Procopius: XI 215  
             Seven Sleepers: X 208, 212; XI 216  
             Spiridon: XII 219  
             Stephen Nees: VIII 170, 172, 180, 182;  
             XI 218  
             Symeon Syliite: X 207–208, 211–212, 216;  
             XI 216  
             Taraus: VIII 167, 170  
             Theodora, empress: VIII 170  
             Theodora, nun: XI 219–220  
             St Chrysogonus: II 8  
             St Clement: VIIb 109
- Theodore Grapto: VIII 170, 172, 174, 176;  
     XI 220  
 St John Lateran, Audience Hall of pope  
     Calixtus II: VIIa 162–166;  
     Theodore Studite: VIII 170, 176; XI 216.  
 Meteora Monastery of the Transfiguration:  
     IV 190  
 Michael VIII, emperor, & Maria: VII 4  
 Michael the Synkellos: III 259, 263, 270  
 Milutin, king, & Simona: IV *pasim*; VII 1, 12  
 Mistra, Metropolis: IV 190; VIII 179, 180  
 Mordeai: VIIb 131  
 Moscow, Krenulin, reliquary: VII 3  
 Moses: X 214–215; XI 225; XII 45, 46, 47–48  
 Hosios Loukas: III 204  
 Hymen: VI 4  
 Naples, Museo nazionale, fresco: VIIb 111–112  
 Nicæa, Second Council of: VII *pasim*  
 Neredisy, Russia: III 264  
 Nicetas of Thessaloniki: VII 8  
 Nicola I, pope: VII 9  
 Nihi of Sinai: I 287  
 Ohrid, St Sophia: II 15–16; III 261; VIII 180  
 Otto II, king, & Theophanes: VII 3  
 Palermo, Martorana: III 266  
 Panseilini, Manuel: I 282  
 Pantelon, painter: I 233  
 Panvinius: VIIa 157, 159, 160, 163–165, 167,  
     170  
 Paris:  
     Cabinet des médailles, cameo: IV 186  
     Musée du Louvre, Barberini ivory: IV 186;  
         Boscoreal cup: IV 186  
         Patmos: VIII 179  
         Petrine Claims: II 13  
         Photius: XII 273  
         Musée de Cluny, ivory: VII 13  
         Musée du Louvre, Barberini ivory: IV 186;  
         St Athanasius *tou Mouskou*: III 266  
         St Nicolas *tou Kastriou*: III 266  
         kephalophoros: III 268–274  
 Plato: I 272  
 Plotinus: I 270–276  
 prayer: X 214–216; XII 213–215; XIII 46–50  
 Prikop, Macedonia, St Nicolas: III 267  
 Prizren, Kosovo, Bogorodica Ljeviška:  
     II 16–17; VIII 179  
 Psellus, Michael: XI 227  
 Ravenna: II 7–11  
     St Vitale: II 10; IV 187; VIIb 120  
 Romanus, emperor, & Eudoxia: VI 2, 3, 11  
 Rome:  
     Arch of Constantine: I 276  
     Basilica Emilia: II 12  
     Caracobs of Priscilla: I 275  
     Columns of Marcus Aurelius & Trajan: I 270  
     Museo Kircheriano, gilded glass: VII 3  
     Palazzo Venezia, ivory: VII 4  
     St Chrysogonus: II 8  
     St Clement: VIIb 109

